JOHN WESLEY'S NEW TESTAMENT

ANNIVERSARY EDITION

JOHN WESLEY'S

NEW TESTAMENT

Anniversary Edition

The Church is of God and will be preserved to the end of time for the promotion of His worship and the due administration of His Word and ordinances, the maintenance of Christian fellowship and discipline, the edification of believers, and the conversion of the world. All of every age and station stand in need of the means of grace which it alone supplies.

This certifies that

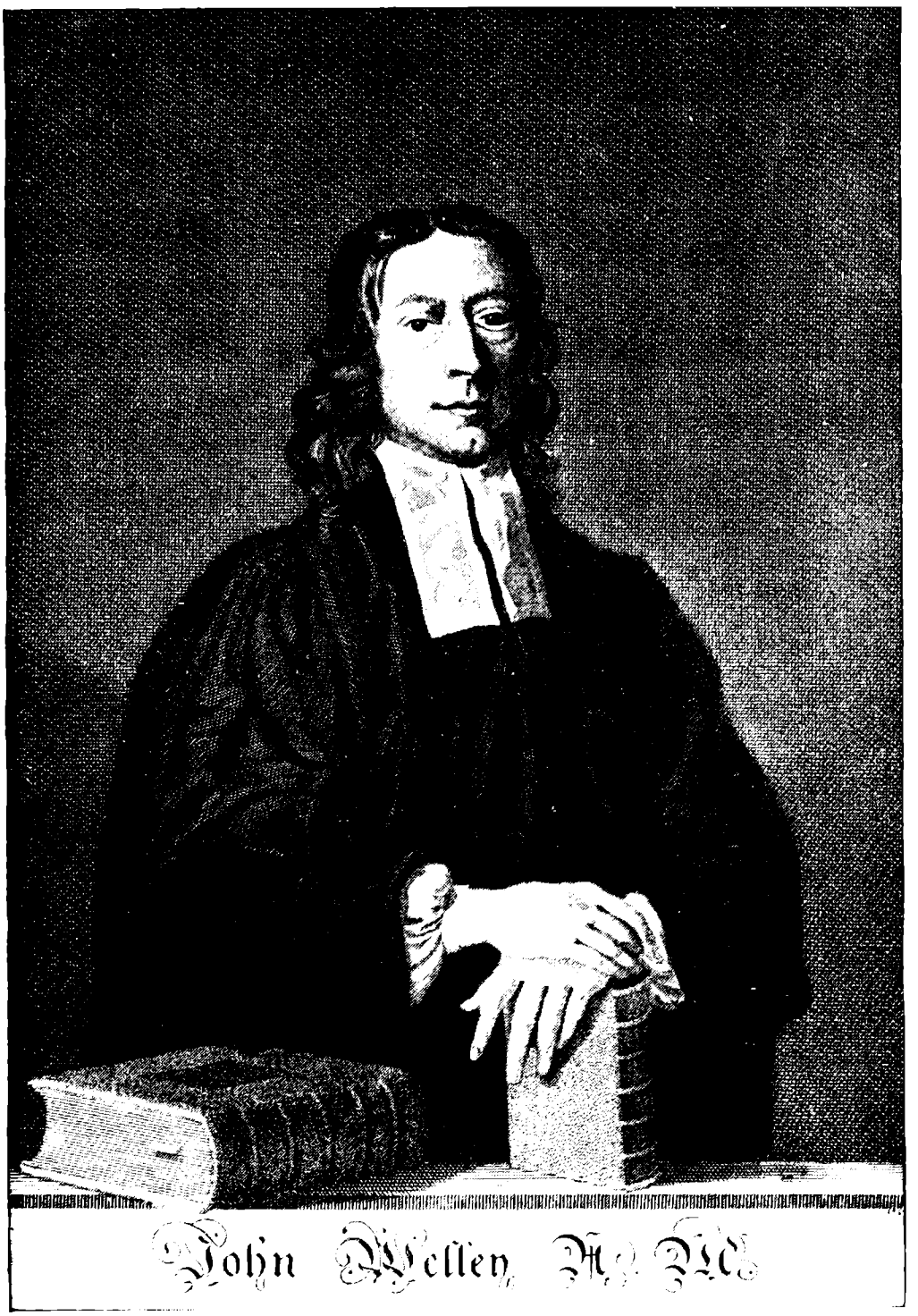
was received into full membership in the

_____ Church

of _____

on the ____ day of _____ 19__.

Pastor

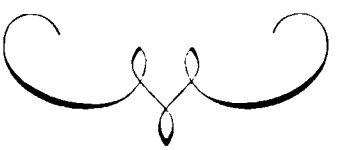


Courtesy Harvard Divinity School

From an engraving which appeared in the First Edition of the *John Wesley Testament*, printed in 1755. This engraving was made from a painting by John Williams.

JOHN WESLEY'S NEW TESTAMENT

Compared with the Authorized Version



ANNIVERSARY EDITION

With an introduction by
FRED PIERCE CORSON, Litt.D., LL.D.
A Bishop of the Methodist Church

THE JOHN C. WINSTON COMPANY
Philadelphia · Toronto

Copyright, 1953, by
THE JOHN C. WINSTON COMPANY

Copyright, 1938, by J. C. W.

Copyright in Great Britain and in the British Dominions and Possessions

Copyright in the Republic of the Philippines

Made in the United States of America

To

The Bishop's Crusaders

Youth around the world who have answered his call for life commitment to Christ and His Church

PREFACE

WITH the publication of a new edition of Wesley's translation of the New Testament a question may be raised as to its appropriateness. Currently needed in 1755, the year of its first appearance, was it not a book of the year rather than a book for the ages?

The answer to this question can be found only in a consideration of the translation in the light of its abiding values.

First let us appraise the literary merit of the work. The Wesley translation was not a hurried and superficial attempt to paraphrase an earlier English edition of the New Testament. It was a scholarly work, the result of a quarter of a century of study in the original Greek manuscripts, which lifted up both words and sentence structure for a better construction. Most of the changes Wesley made have been accepted by scholars who came after him.

Wesley's New Testament has value, also, because of the purpose for which it was produced. Converted men needed a sure doctrinal foundation for the realization and expression of their new life in Christ. Wesley made a study of an understandable New Testament the key to the knowledge of sound doctrine. Scholarly accuracy, literary excellence and precision in word selection have made the Wesley New Testament valuable to the "common and unlettered man" for this purpose.

A rediscovery of the significance of history adds to the current value of the literary works of the great men of the past. Humbled by tragic circumstances, this generation is beginning to realize that the past has wise words to speak to the present seeking direction for building the future. The revival of the classics is incomplete unless it includes the religious masterpieces, among which the Wesley Bible has won its place.

Furthermore, the new interest in a spiritual understanding of life, which is one of the really hopeful signs of this century,

will be saved from ineffectual vagaries only when, with the clarity of Wesley, this interest is channeled into action through the pages of "the Book which tells the way."

Sentiment also calls for a new edition of the Wesley Testament in recognition of the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of his birth, which occurred on June 17, 1703, and in anticipation of the first publication of his New Testament in 1755. The power of the Founder comes again to the people of a world-wide Church who make his New Testament as much a part of their life as it was of his.

FRED PIERCE CORSON

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania
1952

"THE ONE BOOK OF WESLEY"

"Homo Unius Libri"

THERE is clear evidence that John Wesley's translation of the New Testament was the result of an ambition which he carried in his heart for many years. His desire to produce a new and understandable translation of the New Testament grew out of the need for such an edition on the part of "serious persons who had not had the advantages of learning in understanding the New Testament." Although at least seven widely accepted versions of the New Testament had been prepared since the Reformation, new investigations had revealed many inaccuracies in these translations and none of them fitted the changing language of the English people. Wesley's generation was one of transition in forms of speech. Chaucerian English was passing and modern English was emerging. The English New Testament which had to be "read and inwardly digested" by the converts of the Wesley Revival, if the results of the movement were to be conserved, was filled with speech forms and sentence construction which had dropped out of what was then modern English.

John Wesley was quick to see the significance of this for vital religion in the lives of the common people. He knew that there must be a book of Scriptures translated "chiefly for plain, unlettered men who understand only their mother tongue and yet reverence and love the word of God and have a desire to save their souls."

Yet the busy years of preaching and organization for Wesley slipped by and the needed translation did not appear. Wesley explained this apparent reversal of his accustomed promptness in meeting a practical situation for his people by stating that it was his feeling of inadequacy and inability which kept him from undertaking the work. He said that he was "continually deterred from attempting anything of this kind by a deep

sense of my own inability; of my want not only of learning for such a work, but much more of experience and wisdom." So from the real beginning of his work with Aldersgate in 1738 until 1755 nothing in a tangible way was done by Wesley to meet the need of a New Testament in the vernacular of the people.

However, God has His ways of getting His needed work accomplished and often what appears to man as a handicap, or a tragedy, turns out to be a providential experience through which God moves. Such certainly is a factual result of the serious illness which struck down Wesley in 1755. The exact nature of this illness is not known to us. It may have been a lung condition which brought with it great debility of body but no depression of spirit. Wesley could not travel or preach. He thought "his day was far spent and the shadows of the evening come on apace." Wesley believed he was going to die. Nevertheless he would not waste a moment in doing nothing while waiting for the end. In his accustomed methodical manner he conducted a self-examination. "In my present state what can I do," he asked. "I cannot travel, I cannot preach—but blessed be God, I can still read and write and think and I will do what little I can in this way because I can do nothing else." "O that it may be to His Glory!" The result was the translation of the New Testament for the ordinary reader.

Wesley's New Testament was not a paraphrasing of either the King James Version (1611) or any of the earlier versions. It was a fresh and independent translation based on his superior knowledge of Greek and his etymological studies which included a firsthand acquaintance with the conversational English of the market place as well as of the drawing room and the scholar's cloister.

In preparation for his work he "examined minutely every word of the New Testament in the original Greek." As a result, he produced a translation which contained twelve thousand deviations in words, sentence structure and chapter divisions from the earlier translations.

His purpose in the translation must be clearly kept in mind

if we are to appreciate his accomplishment and understand its permanent significance. It was not primarily scholarship which motivated his effort, although as indicated he was faithful to the findings of scholarship. Wesley wanted a New Testament that the people could understand. He knew that the changed life produced by conversion could be preserved and extended only when established in a knowledge of Scriptural truth. Wesley followed Luther and the Reformation and broke from the current position of the Church of England, which at the time did not consider Bible study a daily necessity for laymen.

He was concerned in giving his people not only an emotional experience but also an enduring theology. Here again with Wesley, as with Luther, the Scriptures were final and sufficient. He looked on the Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments as "a most solid and precious system of divine truth." Of them he said, "Every part is worthy of God; and all together are one entire body wherein is no defect, no excess." To him the Scriptures were "the fountain of heavenly wisdom, which they who are able to taste prefer to all writings of men, however wise or learned or holy." Wesley held Luther's position regarding the Scriptures as the authority on Christian theology. He believed as did Luther that "Divinity is nothing but a grammar of the language of the Holy Spirit"; which language in the Holy Scriptures "is exact in the highest degree."

Wesley was widely criticized, as might have been expected, for the changes made in his translation. The traditionalists, who believed that because something was old it was true, objected. Secular newspapers like *The London Gazetteer* belittled its scholarship. But Wesley had a reply for both. To the traditionalists who objected to the changes he had made in the translation he answered, that "my conscience acquits me of having designedly misrepresented any single passage of Scripture or of having written one line with a purpose of inflaming the hearts of Christians against each other. . . . God forbid that I should make the words of the most gentle and benevolent Jesus a vehicle to convey such poison."

To the secular criticisms voiced by such newspapers as *The London Gazetteer* who sneered at Wesley's scholarship by saying, "Some people run as they read," Wesley very cleverly admitted the partial truth in the statement. "Yes," he said, "there is some truth in this. On foot, on horseback, in the chaise, I have done most of my reading. But the one exception is the Scriptures. These I read and meditate on day and night. It was not in running that I wrote twice over The Notes on the New Testament." His New Testament translation was the work of twenty-five years of study begun in 1729.

With a fidelity for the truth, Wesley strove for accuracy, conciseness and clarity. The validation of his scholarship is attested by the fact that in the revision of the New Testament in 1870 at least three-quarters of his twelve thousand changes were accepted and incorporated in the new text. But more effective than this is the fact that through his translations thousands made the Scriptures their own and found in them new and abundant life.

Wesley was always the man of reasoned purpose. He was objective in his thinking. He came to his conclusions on the basis of what the current and the future situation called for. Principles he would not surrender, but methods were meant to establish the principles and could be changed as effectiveness demanded. His pragmatic approach to life accounted not only for his church organization but also for his tremendous literary activity. Back of his New Testament translation were these practical considerations and this pragmatic point of view.

In a memorable passage John Wesley reveals the deeper reasons which made his translation of the New Testament in language which the people could comprehend inevitable. *"I am,"* said Wesley, *"a creature* of a day, passing through life as an arrow through the air. *I am a spirit* come from God and returning to God. Just hovering over the great gulf till, a few moments hence *I am no more seen.* I drop into unchangeable eternity. *I want to know* one thing, the way to heaven; how to land safe on that happy shore. God Himself hath condescended to teach the way. He hath written it down in a book. *O give*

me that Book! At any price give me the Book of God. Let me be *homo unius libri* [a man of one Book]. Here [with the Book] I am far from the busy ways of men. *I sit down alone.* Only God is here. In His Presence *I open and read* the Book; for this end, *to find the way to Heaven. Is there a doubt* concerning the meaning of what I read? Does anything appear dark and intricate? *I lift up my heart* to the Father of Lights. Lord, Thou hast said, 'If any man be willing to do Thy will he shall know.' *I am willing* to do. Let me know Thy will. *I then search* after parallel passages of Scripture. *I meditate thereon* with all the attention and earnestness of which my mind is capable. If any doubt still remains, *I consult* those who are experienced in the things of God and then the writings whereby being dead, they yet speak. And *what I thus learn, I must teach.*"

Not only does this statement reveal what Wesley counted most important in life, it designates the Bible as the means for securing life's chief objective and outlines a method of Bible study which is as applicable and rewarding today as it was in Wesley's day.

If modern man knew his real need and its true satisfaction, he would join with Wesley in the plea and effort to recover "the lost Book."

John Wesley has 371 publications to his credit. He began to publish in 1733 and averaged six volumes a year until his death in 1791. Included in his literary production were poetical, philological, philosophical, historical and theological works. But there was only one concerning which he expressed the request that he "might finish my work and my life together." This was his New Testament translation. It was in his thought, his *summum bonum,* his greatest work.

So it was. Men needed the Word of God in Wesley's time. They needed it in language which "studiously avoided not only all curious and critical inquiries and all use of the learned languages but all such methods of reasoning and modes of expression as people in common life are unacquainted with." So their faith became grounded in truth and their experience

found its validation in the word of God. Knowledge brought assurance and assurance joined with their faith in strengthening and directing them toward the full life in Christ.

And so it is. Men now need the Word of God, clear in meaning, understandable in phraseology. Without it the earnest wish for better things lacks direction toward fulfilment and deep religious experiences disintegrate because they are not based upon the foundation of truth.

The Wesley New Testament still brings the words of life to those who seek the Wesley experience.

THE

NEW TESTAMENT

WITH

An ANALYSIS

OF

The feveral BOOKS and CHAPTERS.

By the Rev. *J. WESLEY*, M. A.

LONDON:

Printed and ſold at the New-Chapel, City-Road; and at the Rev. J. Weſley's Preaching-Houſes in Town and Country.

1790.

4. I adviſe every one, before he reads the Scripture, to uſe this or the like prayer:

"Bleſſed Lord, who haſt cauſed all holy Scriptures to be written for our learning, grant that we may in ſuch wiſe hear them, read, mark, learn, and inwardly digeſt them, that by patience and comfort of thy holy Word, we may embrace, and ever hold faſt the bleſſed hope of everlaſting life, which thou haſt given us in our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt."

JOHN WESLEY.

THE

NOTE:

Italics indicate a deviation from the King James Version.

Two dots in a line indicate the omission of a word or words appearing in the King James Version.

The numbers at the left side of the page are the verse numbers in the King James Version. Where two verses begin on the same line the second number is omitted.

THE
GOSPEL according to ST. MATTHEW

THE Gospel, (that is, good tidings) means a book containing the good tidings of our salvation by Jesus Christ. St. Mark in his Gospel presupposes that of St. Matthew, and supplies what is omitted therein. St. Luke supplies what is omitted by both the former: St. John what is omitted by all the three.

St. Matthew particularly points out the fulfilling of the prophecies for the conviction of the Jews. St. Mark wrote a short compendium, and yet added many remarkable circumstances omitted by St. Matthew, particularly with regard to the Apostles, immediately after they were called. St. Luke treated principally of the office of Christ, and mostly in an historical manner. St. John refuted those who denied his Godhead: each choosing to treat more largely on those things, which most suited the time when, and persons to whom he wrote.

ST. MATTHEW

CHAPTER I

1 THE book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the Son
2 of David, the son of Abraham. Abraham begat Isaac,
and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat *Judah* and his
3 brethren; And *Judah* begat Pharez and Zarah of
Thamar, and Pharez begat Esrom, and Esrom begat
4 Aram; And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat
5 Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon; And Salmon begat
Boaz of *Rahab*, and *Boaz* begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed
6 begat Jesse; And Jesse begat David the king.
And David the king begat Solomon, of the wife of
7 *Uriah;* and Solomon begat *Rehoboam*, and *Rehoboam*
8 begat *Abijah*, and *Abijah* begat Asa; And Asa begat
Jehoshaphat, and *Jehoshaphat* begat *Jehoram*, and *Jeho-*
9 *ram* begat *Uzziah:* And *Uzziah* begat *Jotham*, and

10 *Jotham* begat *Ahaz*, and *Ahaz* begat *Hezekiah*, And *Hezekiah* begat *Manasseth*, and *Manasseth* begat Amon, and
11 Amon begat *Josiah*, And *Josiah* begat *Jeconiah* and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to
12 Babylon. And after they were brought to Babylon, *Jeconiah* begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat *Zerubbabel;*
13 And *Zerubbabel* begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim,
14 and Eliakim begat Azor; And Azor begat Zadock, and
15 Zadock begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud; And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan
16 begat Jacob; And Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.
17 So all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations: and from David *to* the carrying away *to* Babylon are fourteen generations, and from the carrying away *to* Babylon *to* Christ are fourteen generations.
18 Now the birth of . . Christ was on this wise: . . his mother Mary, *being* espoused to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child *by* the Holy
19 Ghost. Then Joseph, her husband, being a just man, and *yet* not willing to make her a public example, *pur-*
20 *posed* to put her away *privately*. But while he *was thinking* on these things, behold, *an* angel of the Lord appeared *to* him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take *to* thee Mary thy wife; for that which
21 is *begotten* in her is of the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus;
22 for he shall save his people from their sins. (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken
23 of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Behold, a virgin shall be with child and bring forth a Son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is, being interpreted, . .
24 God with us.) Then Joseph, being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had *commanded* him, and
25 took unto him his wife: *But* he knew her not, till she had brought forth her *Son, the first born.* And he called his name Jesus.

2 Now *after* Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, *wise men came from*
2 *the east* to Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? For we have seen his star in the
3 east, and are come *to do him homage.* When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all
4 Jerusalem with him. And *having assembled* all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he *inquired* of them,
5 Where *the* Christ *was to be* born? And they said *to* him, in Bethlehem of Judea; for thus it is written by the

6 prophet, And thou, Bethlehem, in the land of Judah,
art *in nowise* the least among the princes of Judah; for
out of thee shall come *forth* a Governor, *who* shall rule
7 my people Israel. Then Herod, *having privately* called
the wise men, inquired of them *with great exactness, at*
8 what time the star appeared: And *sending* them to
Bethlehem, . . *he* said, Go, *inquire exactly concerning*
the young child, and *if* ye *find* him, bring me word again,
9 that I *also* may come and *do him homage*. . . *And having*
heard the king, they departed; and lo, the star which
they *had seen* in the east, *moved on* before them, till it
10 came and stood over where the young child was. *And*
seeing the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.
11 And *being* come into the house, they saw the young
child, with Mary his mother; and *falling* down, *they did*
him homage. And *opening* their treasures, they presented
12 *to* him gifts, gold, . . frankincense, and myrrh. And
having been warned of God in a dream . . not *to* return
to Herod, they *retired* into their own country another
way.
13 And when they *had retired*, behold, *an* angel of the
Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and
take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt,
and *continue* there *till* I *shall tell* thee: for Herod will
14 seek the young child to destroy him. *And* he arose, and
took the young child and his mother by night, and
15 *retired* into Egypt, And *continued* there *till* the death of
Herod; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of
the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I
16 called my Son. Then Herod, *seeing* he was *deluded by*
the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and *sending* forth, . .
slew all the *male* children that were in Bethlehem, and
in all the *confines* thereof, from two years old and under;
according to the time which he had *exactly* inquired of
17 the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken
18 by *Jeremiah* the prophet, saying, In Rama was there a
voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourn-
ing, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be
19 comforted, because they are not. But when Herod was
dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream
20 to Joseph in Egypt, saying, Arise, and take the young
child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for
21 they are dead *who* sought the young child's life. And
he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and
22 came into the land of Israel. But *having* heard, Arche-
laus *reigneth over* Judea in the room of his father Herod,
he was afraid to go thither, *and* being warned of God in
23 a dream, he turned aside into the *region* of Galilee. And
he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it

might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

3 In those days *cometh* John the Baptist preaching in
the wilderness of Judea, And saying, Repent ye; for the
3 kingdom of heaven is at hand. For this is he that was
spoken of by the *Prophet Isaiah,* saying, The voice of
one crying *aloud* in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way
4 of the Lord, make his paths straight. And *this* John
had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle
about his loins; and his *food* was locusts and wild honey.
5 Then went out to him Jerusalem and all Judea, and
6 all the region round about Jordan, And were baptized
7 of him in Jordan, confessing their sins. But *seeing* many
of the Pharisees and Sadducees *coming* to his baptism,
he said *to* them, *Ye brood* of vipers, who hath *showed* you
8 to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore
9 *fruit worthy of* repentance: and *say* not *confidently* within
yourselves, We have Abraham to our Father; for I say
unto you, God is able of these stones to raise up children
10 *to* Abraham. *But the axe also already lieth at* the root of
the tree; therefore every tree *that* bringeth not forth
11 good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire. I indeed
baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that
cometh after me is mightier than I; whose shoes I am
not worthy to bear; he shall baptize you with the Holy
12 Ghost and with fire: Whose fan is in his hand, and he
will thoroughly *cleanse* his floor, and gather *the* wheat
into the garner, but . . will burn up the chaff with
unquenchable fire.
13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John,
14 to be baptized *by* him. But John forbad him, saying,
I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to
15 me? And Jesus answering said *to* him, Suffer it . . now;
for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then
16 he suffered him. And Jesus *being* baptized, went up
straightway *from* the water, and, lo, the heavens were
opened *to* him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending
17 like a dove, and *coming* upon him. And lo, a voice *out
of the heavens* saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom
I *delight.*

4 Then was Jesus led up *by* the Spirit into the wilderness
to be tempted *by* the devil. And *having* fasted forty
3 days and forty nights, he was afterward *hungry.* And . .
the tempter *coming* to him, . . said, If thou be the Son
4 of God, command that these stones be made bread. But
he *answering,* said, It is written, Man shall not live by
bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of

the mouth of God. Then the devil taketh him . . *with him* into the holy city, and setteth him on *the battlement* of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down; for it is written, He shall *charge* his angels concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said *to* him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again. the devil taketh him . . *with him to* an exceeding high mountain, and showeth him all the kingdoms of the world and the glory of them. And saith *to* him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then Jesus *saith to* him, Get thee hence, Satan; for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the devil leaveth him, and behold, angels came and *waited upon* him.

But when *he* . . heard that John was cast into prison, he *retired* into Galilee. And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt *at* Capernaum, which is *on* the sea coast, in the borders of *Zebulon* and *Naphthali:* that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by *Isaiah* the prophet, saying, The land of *Zebulon* and the land of *Naphthali*, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: The people *who walked* in darkness saw *a* great light, and to them *who* sat in the region *of the* shadow of death, light is sprung up.

From that time Jesus began to preach and to say, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. And . . walking by the Sea of Galilee, *he* saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea, for they were fishers. And he saith *to* them, *Come after me,* and I will make you fishers of men. And straightway, *leaving* their nets, *they* followed him. And going on from thence, he saw *two other* brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in *the vessel* with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them. And *leaving the vessel* and their father, *they immediately* followed him.

And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of *disease* and all manner of *malady* among the people. And his fame went *through* all Syria: and they brought *to* him all sick people, that were *held* with divers diseases and *tormenting pains;* and . . *demoniacs,* and . . *lunatics,* and . . *paralytics;* and he healed them. And there followed him great multitudes . . from Galilee, and . . Decapolis, and . . Jerusalem, and . . Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

5 And seeing the multitudes, he went up into *the* mountain; and when he was *sat down* his disciples came *to*
2 him. And he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,
3 *Happy* are the poor in spirit; for theirs is the kingdom
4 of heaven. *Happy* are they that mourn; for they shall
5 be comforted. *Happy* are the meek; for they shall
6 inherit the earth. *Happy* are they *that* . . hunger and thirst after righteousness; for they shall be *satisfied.*
7 *Happy* are the merciful; for they shall obtain mercy.
8 *Happy* are the pure in heart; for they shall see God.
9 *Happy* are the peace makers; for they shall be called
10 the children of God. *Happy* are they *who* are persecuted for righteousness' sake; for theirs is the kingdom of
11 heaven. *Happy* are ye when men shall revile . . and persecute you, and . . say all manner of evil against
12 you falsely for my sake: Rejoice and be exceeding glad; for great is your reward in heaven; for so persecuted they the prophets *who* were before you.
13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost *its* savour wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and to be trodden
14 under foot of men. Ye are the light of the world. A city that is *situated* on a *mountain* cannot be hid.
15 Neither do *they* light a candle and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick, and it giveth light *to* all that are
16 in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father *who* is in heaven.
17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the
18 prophets. I am not come to destroy but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass *away,* one jot or one tittle shall in nowise pass from the law
19 till all *things be effected.* Whosoever therefore shall break one of *the* least *of these* commandments, and . . teach men so, . . shall be . . the least in the kingdom of heaven; but whosoever shall do and teach them, he
20 shall be . . great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That *unless* your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall
21 in *nowise* enter into the kingdom of heaven. Ye have heard that it was said *to* them of old . . , Thou shalt *do no murder,* and whosoever shall *do murder,* shall *be liable*
22 to the judgment. But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother *shall be liable* to the judgment; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall *be liable to* the council; but whosoever shall say, Thou fool,
23 shall *be liable to* hell fire. Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and *shalt* there *remember,* that thy
24 brother hath aught against thee, Leave there thy gift

before the altar, and go . . ; first be reconciled to thy
25 brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with
thine adversary quickly *while* thou art in the way with
him, lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the
judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and
26 thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou
shalt *in nowise* come out thence, till thou hast paid
the last farthing.
27 Ye have heard, that it was said, Thou shalt not com-
28 mit adultery. But I say unto you, That whosoever
looketh *upon* a woman to lust after her, hath *already*
29 committed adultery with her in his heart. *But* if thy
right eye *cause thee to offend*, pluck it out, and cast it
from thee; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy
members should perish, and not that thy whole body
30 should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand *cause*
thee to offend, cut it off, and cast it from thee; for it is
profitable for thee that one of thy members should
perish, and not that thy whole body . . be cast into hell.
31 It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife,
32 let him give her a writing of *divorce*. But I say unto
you, . . Whosoever shall put away his wife, *save* for the
cause of *whoredom*, causeth her to commit adultery: and
whosoever shall marry her that is *put away*, committeth
adultery.
33 Again, ye have heard that it *was* said *to* them of old
. . , Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform
34 *thine oaths* unto the Lord. But I say unto you, Swear
not at all, neither by heaven, for it is God's throne:
35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by
36 Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. Neither
shalt thou swear by thy head; *for* thou canst not make
37 one hair white or black. But let your *conversation* be
yea, yea; nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these
is of the evil *one*.
38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an
39 eye, and a tooth for a tooth. But I say unto you, that
ye resist not *the* evil *man;* but whosoever shall smite
40 thee on *the* right cheek, turn to him the other also; And
if *a* man will sue thee . . and take away thy coat, let
41 him have thy cloak also. And whosoever shall compel
42 thee to go *with him one* mile, go with him twain. Give
to him that asketh thee, and from him that would
borrow of thee, turn not . . away.
43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt
44 love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say
unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you,
do good to them that hate you, and pray for them *that*
45 despitefully use you and persecute you: That ye may

be the children of your Father, *who* is in heaven; for
he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good,
46 and sendeth rain on the just and . . the unjust. For
if ye love them *that* love you, what reward have ye?
47 Do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute
your *friends* only, what do ye more than others; do
48 not even the *heathens* so? *Therefore ye shall be perfect,*
. . as your Father *who* is in heaven is perfect.

6 Take heed that ye *practise* not your *righteousness*
before men, to be seen of them; otherwise ye have no
2 reward *from* your Father *who* is in heaven. Therefore
when thou dost . . alms, do not sound a trumpet before
thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in
the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily
3 I say unto you, they have their reward. But when thou
dost alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right
4 hand doth: That *thy* alms may be in secret, and thy
Father who seeth in secret . . *will* reward thee openly.
5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypo-
crites . . for they love to pray standing in the syna-
gogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may
appear unto men: verily I say unto you, they have their
6 reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy
closet, and *having* shut thy door, pray to thy Father
who is in secret, and thy Father *who* seeth in secret shall
7 reward thee . . . But when ye pray, use not vain repe-
titions, as the heathens . . for they think . . they shall
8 be heard for their much speaking. Be not . . therefore
like . . them; for your Father knoweth what things
9 ye have need of, before ye ask him. *Thus therefore* pray
ye, Our Father, *who* art in heaven, hallowed be thy
10 name. Thy kingdom come; thy will be done *on* earth,
11 as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread.
12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.
13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from
evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the
glory, for ever *and ever.* Amen.
14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly
15 Father will also forgive you. But if ye forgive not men
their trespasses neither will your Father forgive your
16 trespasses. Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypo-
crites, of a sad countenance; for they disfigure their
faces, that they may appear unto men to fast: verily
17 I say unto you, they have their reward. But thou,
when thou fastest, anoint *thy* head, and wash thy face:
18 That thou appear not unto men to fast, but *to* thy
Father *who* is in secret, and thy Father *who* seeth in
secret shall reward thee . . .

19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures *on* earth, where
moth and rust *consume,* and where thieves break through
20 and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven,
where neither moth nor rust doth *consume,* and where
21 thieves do not break through nor steal. For where your
22 treasure is, there will your heart be also. *The eye is the
lamp of the body:* if therefore thine eye be single, thy
23 whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be
evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness: if there-
fore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is
24 that darkness? No man can serve two masters: for
either he will hate the one and love the other, or . . he
will *cleave* to the one and *neglect* the other. Ye cannot
25 serve God and mammon. Therefore I say unto you,
Take *not* thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or
what ye shall drink, nor . . for your body, what ye
shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the
26 body than raiment? Behold the *birds* of the air: . . they
sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns;
yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not
27 much better than they? *And* which of you, by taking
28 thought, can add *to his age the smallest measure?* And
why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies
of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do
29 they spin: And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon
30 in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. *Now*
if God so clothe the grass of the field which to-day is,
and to-morrow is cast into the *still, will* he not much more
31 clothe you, O ye of little faith! Therefore take *not*
thought, saying, What shall we eat, or what shall we
32 drink, or *what* shall *we wear?* (For after all these things
do the *heathens* seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth
33 that ye . . need . . all these things. But seek ye first
the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these
34 things shall be added *to* you. Take *not therefore* thought
for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for
. . itself: sufficient *for* the day is the evil thereof.

7 Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what
judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged, and with what
3 measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you. . . And
why beholdest thou the mote . . in thy brother's eye,
4 but *observest* not the beam . . in thine own eye? Or
how *sayest thou* to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote
from thine eye, and behold, a beam is in thine own eye?
5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine
own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast . . the
6 mote out of thy brother's eye. Give not that which
is holy *to* dogs, neither cast . . your pearls before swine,

lest they trample them under their feet, and *turning* rend you.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall
8 find; knock and it shall be opened *to* you. For every one that asketh, receiveth, and he that seeketh, findeth,
9 and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. . . What man is there of you, *who* if his son ask bread, will . .
10 give him a stone? *And* if he ask a fish, will he give
11 him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts *to* your children, how much more *will* your Father *who* is in heaven give good things to them
12 that ask him? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

13 Enter ye in *through* the strait gate: for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction,
14 and many there *are that* go in *through it:* Because strait is the gate and narrow is the way *that* leadeth *to* life, and few there *are* that find it.

15 *But* beware of false prophets, *who* come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are *ravenous* wolves.
16 *By their fruits ye shall know them.* Do men gather
17 grapes *from* thorns, or figs *from* thistles? . . So every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but *the* corrupt
18 tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth
19 good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good
20 fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 Not every one that saith *to* me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doth the
22 will of my Father *who* is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name, and in thy name have cast out devils, and
23 in thy name *have* done many wonderful works? And then will I *declare* unto them, I never knew you, depart
24 from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these *my* sayings, and doth them, I will liken him *to* a wise man, *who* built his house *on* the rock.
25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew and beat *on* that house; and it fell not; for
26 it was founded *on* the rock. *But* every one that heareth these *my* sayings, and doth them not, shall be likened
27 *to* a foolish man, *who* built his house *on* the sand. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat *on* that house; and it fell, and great was the fall
28 of it. And . . when Jesus had ended these sayings, the
29 *multitudes* were astonished at his *teaching*, For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

8 And when he was come down from the mountain,
great multitudes followed him. And behold *a leper*
2 *came* and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt,
3 thou canst make me clean. And Jesus *stretching* forth
his hand, . . touched him, saying, I will; be thou *made*
4 clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. And
Jesus saith *to* him, See thou tell no man, but go, . .
show thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses
commanded, for a testimony *to* them.
5 And when *he* was entered into Capernaum, there came
6 *to* him a centurion, beseeching him, And saying, Lord,
my servant lieth *in the house, ill* of the palsy, grievously
7 tormented. And Jesus saith *to* him, I will come and
8 heal him. The centurion answering said, Lord, I am
not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof:
but speak *in a* word only, and my servant shall be
9 healed. For I am a man under authority, having soldiers
under me: and I say *unto* this man, Go, and he goeth,
and to another, Come, and he cometh, and to my servant,
10 Do this, and he doth it. When Jesus heard it, he mar-
velled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say
unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in
11 Israel. And I say unto you, That many shall come
from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham,
12 and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But
the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into *the*
outer darkness: there shall be *the* weeping and *the*
13 gnashing of teeth. And Jesus said *to* the centurion,
Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, . . be it . .
unto thee. And his servant was healed in *that* hour.
14 And . . Jesus *coming to* Peter's house, saw his wife's
15 mother *lying* and sick of a fever. And he touched her
hand, and the fever left her; and she arose and *waited*
upon them.
16 When *it was evening* they brought *to* him many
demoniacs: and he cast out the spirits with *a* word, and
17 healed all that were *ill: Whereby was* fulfilled *what* was
spoken by *the Prophet Isaiah* saying, Himself took our
infirmities and bare our *diseases.*
18 *And* Jesus *seeing* great multitudes about him, *com-*
19 *manded to go to* the other side. And a certain scribe
came and said *to* him, Master, I will follow thee whither-
20 soever thou goest. And Jesus saith to him, The foxes
have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the
21 Son of man hath not where to lay his head. And
another of his disciples said *to* him, Lord, suffer me first
22 to go and bury my father. But Jesus said *to* him,
23 Follow me, and *leave* the dead *to* bury their dead. And
when he was *come* into *the vessel,* his disciples followed

him. And behold, there *was* a great tempest in the sea, *so that* the *vessel* was covered with the waves. But he was asleep. And his disciples *coming* to him . . awoke him, saying, Lord, save us; we perish. And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful: O ye of little faith? Then *arising, he* rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm. But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

And when he was come to the other side, into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two *demoniacs*, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no *one could* pass by that way. And behold they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was *at some distance* from them *an* herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go . . into the herd of swine. And he said *to* them, Go. And *coming* out, they went into the swine, and behold the whole herd . . *rushed* down *the precipice* into the sea, and perished in the waters. *But* they that kept them fled, and *going* into the city, . . told every thing, and what *had* befallen the *demoniacs*. And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus; and *seeing* him, they besought him *to* depart out of their coasts.

9 And *going into the vessel, he* passed over and came *to* his own city. And behold they brought to him a *paralytic*, lying on a *couch;* and Jesus seeing their faith, said *to* the *paralytic*, Son, *take courage:* thy sins *are* forgiven thee.

And behold certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth. And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, *Why* think ye evil in your hearts? For *which* is easier, to say, Thy sins *are* forgiven thee? Or to say, Arise and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the *paralytic*,) Arise, take up thy *couch*, and go *to* thy house. And he arose, and *went* to his *own* house. *And* . . the multitude *seeing* it, . . marvelled and glorified God, *who* had given such power *to* men.

And as Jesus passed *along* from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom, and . . saith *to* him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him. And . . as *he* sat at *table* in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came, and sat down with him and his disciples. And . . the Pharisees *seeing* it, . . said

to his disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans
12 and sinners? But . . Jesus *hearing it*, . . *said to* them,
They that *are* whole need not a physician, but they that
13 are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth,
I will have mercy and not sacrifice; for I am not come
to call the righteous, but sinners. . .
14 Then *come* to him the disciples of John, saying, Why
do we and the Pharisees fast often, but thy disciples
15 fast not? And Jesus said *to* them, Can the children of
the bride chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is
with them? But the days will come, when the bride-
groom shall be taken *away* from them, and then shall
16 they fast. No man putteth a piece of new cloth *on* an
old garment: for that which is put in to fill it . . taketh
17 from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither
do men put new wine into old *leathern* bottles, else the
bottles *burst*, and the wine *is spilled*, and the bottles
are destroyed: but they put new wine into new bottles,
and both are preserved.
18 While he spake these things *to* them, behold, a certain
ruler *coming*, . . worshipped him, saying, My daughter
is *just* dead: but come and lay *thine* hand *on* her, and
19 she shall live. And Jesus arose and followed him, and
20 so did his disciples. (And behold, a woman *who had
had a flux* of blood twelve years, *coming* behind him . .
21 touched the hem of his garment. For she said within
herself, If I . . but touch his garment I shall be *made*
22 whole. *And* Jesus *turning and seeing* her, . . said,
Daughter, *take courage;* thy faith hath made thee whole.
23 And the woman was made whole from that hour.) And
. . Jesus *coming* into the ruler's house, and *seeing* the
24 minstrels and the *crowd* making a noise, *Saith to* them,
Withdraw: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth: and
25 they *derided him*. But when the *crowd* were put forth,
he went in and took her by the hand; and the maid
26 arose. And the fame *of it* went abroad into all that
country.
27 And *as* Jesus *passed* thence, two blind men followed
him, crying *aloud*, and saying, Thou Son of David, have
28 mercy on us. And when he was come into the house,
the blind men came to him; and Jesus saith *to* them,
Believe ye that I am able to do this? They *say* unto
29 him, Yea, Lord. Then he touched their eyes, saying,
30 *Be it unto you according to your faith.* And their eyes
were opened; and Jesus *strictly* charged them, saying,
31 See that no man know it. But when they were *gone
out, they* spread *his fame abroad* in all that country.
32 As they were *going out*, behold they brought *a dumb*
33 *demoniac to him*. And when the devil was cast out,

the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying,
34 It was never *seen thus, even* in Israel. But the Pharisees
said, he casteth out *the* devils *by* the prince of the devils.
35 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages,
teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel
of the kingdom, and healing every *disease* and every
36 *malady*. . . But *seeing* the multitudes he was moved
with *tender* compassion *for* them, because they *were faint*
37 and . . scattered, as sheep having no shepherd. Then
saith he *to* his disciples, The harvest truly is *great*, but
38 the labourers are few. Pray ye therefore the Lord of
the harvest, that he *would thrust* forth labourers into
his harvest.

10 And *having* called *to* him his twelve disciples, he
gave them power *over* unclean spirits, to cast them
2 out, and to heal *every disease* and *every malady*. Now the
names of the twelve apostles are these; the first, Simon,
who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the
3 son of Zebedee, and John his brother; Philip and Bar-
tholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James
the son of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was
4 Thaddeus; Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot,
5 who also betrayed him. These twelve Jesus sent forth,
having commanded them, saying, Go not into the way
of the Gentiles, and into *a* city of the Samaritans enter
6 . . not: But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of
7 Israel. And as ye go, *proclaim*, saying, The kingdom of
8 heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers,
raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received,
9 freely give. Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass
10 in your purses. Nor scrip for your journey, *nor* two
coats, *nor* shoes, nor yet *a staff:* for the workman is
11 worthy of his *maintenance*. And into whatsoever city
or town ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy, and
12 there abide till ye go thence. And when ye come into
13 *a* house, salute it. And if the house be worthy, . . your
peace *shall* come upon it; but if it be not worthy, . .
14 your peace *shall* return to you. And whosoever *will*
not receive you, nor hear your words, when you *go* out
of that house or city, shake off the dust *from* your feet.
15 Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for the
land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment,
than for that city.
16 Behold I send you forth as sheep in the midst of
wolves; be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless
17 as doves. But beware of men; for they will deliver
you . . to the councils, and . . scourge you in their
18 synagogues. And ye shall be brought before governors

and kings for my sake, for a testimony *to* them and *to*
19 *the heathens.* But when they deliver you, . . take no
thought, how or what ye shall speak; for it shall be
20 given you in that *very* hour what ye shall speak. For
it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father
21 *who* speaketh in you. *But* the brother shall deliver up
the brother to death, and the father the child; and
children shall rise up against their parents, *and kill*
22 *them.* And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's
sake: but he that endureth to the end, *the same* shall
23 be saved. But when they persecute you in this city,
flee . . *to* another; for verily I say unto you, Ye shall
not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of
24 man be come. The disciple is not above his *teacher,*
25 nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for the
disciple that he be as his *teacher,* and the servant as his
lord. If they have called the Master of the house
Beelzebub, how much more . . them of his household?
26 *Therefore fear them not;* for there is nothing covered,
which shall not be *made manifest; nor* hid, that shall
27 not be known. What I tell you in *the dark,* . . speak
ye in *the* light, and what ye hear in the ear, . . *proclaim*
28 . . on the house tops. And *be not afraid of* them *who*
kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but
rather *be afraid of him* who is able to destroy both soul
29 and body in hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a
farthing? and one of them shall not fall *to* the ground
30 without your Father. *Yea, even* the hairs of your head
31 are all numbered. Fear ye not, therefore; ye are of
32 more value than many sparrows. Whosoever therefore
shall confess me before men, him will I confess . . before
33 my Father *who* is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny
me before men, him will I also deny before my Father
34 *who* is in heaven. Think not that I am come to send
peace on earth: I *am not come* to send peace, but a
35 sword. For I am come to set a man at variance *with*
his father, and the daughter *with* her mother, and the
36 daughter-in-law *with* her mother-in-law. And *the foes*
37 *of a man* shall be they of his own household. He that
loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy
of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than
38 me, is not worthy of me; And he that taketh not his
39 cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He
that findeth his life shall lose it; and he that loseth his
40 life for my sake, shall find it. He that *entertaineth* you,
entertaineth me; and he that *entertaineth* me, *entertaineth*
41 him that sent me. He that *entertaineth* a prophet in the
name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward:
and he that *entertaineth* a righteous man in the name

of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward.
42 And whosoever shall give . . drink *to* one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in nowise lose his reward.

11 And . . when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence, to teach and . . preach in their cities.
2 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of
3 Christ, he sent two of his disciples, And said *to* him, Art thou he that *is to* come, or *look* we for another?
4 *And* Jesus *answering*, said *to* them, Go and *tell* John . .
5 *the* things which ye . . hear and see. The blind receive their sight, . . the lame walk; the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear; the dead are raised . . , and the poor
6 have the Gospel preached to them: And *happy* is he
7 whosoever shall not be offended *at* me. And as they departed, Jesus *said* to the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed
8 shaken with the wind? But what went ye out . . to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they
9 that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses. But what went ye out . . to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto
10 you, and more than a prophet. For this is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy
11 face, who shall prepare thy way before thee. Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not *risen* a greater *prophet* than John the Baptist; *but* he that is least in the kingdom of heaven,
12 is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist *till* now the kingdom of heaven *is entered by force*, and *they who strive with all their might* take it by
13 *violence*. For all the prophets and the law prophesied
14 until John. And if ye *are willing to* receive *him*, *he* is
15 *Elijah*, *who* was . . to come. He that hath ears to hear,
16 let him hear. But *whereto* shall I liken this generation? It is like . . children sitting in the markets, and calling
17 *to* their fellows, And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you,
18 and ye have not lamented. For John came neither
19 eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil. The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a . . *glutton* and a wine bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners; but wisdom is justified *by* her
20 children. Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein the most of his mighty works *had been* done, because
21 they repented not. Wo *to* thee, Chorazin; wo *to* thee,

Bethsaida! for if the mighty works which *have been*
done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they
would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.
22 *Moreover* I say *to* you, It shall be more tolerable for
Tyre and Sidon *in* the day of judgment than for you.
23 And thou, Capernaum, *who hast been* exalted *to* heaven,
shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works
which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom,
24 it would have remained *to* this day. *Moreover* I say
unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of
25 Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee. At that
time Jesus *answering* said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord
of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things
from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them *to*
26 babes. Even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy
27 sight. All things are delivered *to* me *by* my Father; and
no one knoweth the Son but the Father; neither
knoweth any one the Father, save the Son, and he to
28 whomsoever the Son *is pleased to* reveal him. Come to
me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will
29 give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of
me; for I am meek and lowly in heart, and ye shall
30 find rest *to* your souls. For my yoke is easy and my
burden is light.

12 At that time Jesus went on the Sabbath through
the corn, and his disciples were *hungry* and . . *plucked*
2 *the ears of* corn, and *ate.* But . . the Pharisees *seeing*
it . . said *to* him, Behold, thy disciples do *what* is not
3 lawful to do *on* the Sabbath. But he said *to* them,
Have ye not read what David did when he was *hungry,*
4 and they that were with him? How he entered into the
house of God, and *ate* the show bread, which *it* was not
lawful for him to eat, neither for them who were with
5 him, but only for the priests? Or have ye not read in
the law . . that on the Sabbath days the priests in the
6 temple profane the Sabbath and are blameless? But I
say *to* you, That . . *a* greater than the temple *is here.*
7 *And* if ye had known what *that* meaneth, I will have
mercy and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned
8 the guiltless. For the Son of man is Lord even of the
Sabbath . . .
9 And *departing* thence, he went into their synagogue.
10 And behold there was a man *who* had *a withered hand.*
And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the
11 Sabbath . . ? that they might accuse him. And he said
to them, What man shall there be among you, that shall
have one sheep, . . *who* if he fall *in* a pit on the Sabbath
12 . . will . . not lay hold on it and lift it out? How

much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it
13 is lawful to do *good* on the Sabbath *day*. Then saith he
to the man, Stretch forth *thy* hand. And he stretched
it forth; and it was restored whole, . . as the other.
14 Then the Pharisees went out, and *took* counsel *together*
15 against him, how they might destroy him. *And* . .
Jesus *knowing* it . . withdrew . . from thence; and
great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,
16 And charged them . . not *to* make him known: That
17 it might be fulfilled which was spoken by *the Prophet*
18 *Isaiah*, saying, Behold my servant, whom I have chosen,
my beloved in whom my soul *delighteth;* I will put my
Spirit upon him, and he shall show judgment to the
19 *heathens*. He shall not strive nor *clamour*, neither shall
20 any man hear his voice in the streets. *He shall not*
break a bruised reed, and smoking flax *he shall* not quench,
21 till he send forth judgment unto victory. And in his
name shall the *heathens* trust.
22 Then was brought *to* him a *demoniac*, blind and dumb;
and he healed him, *so* that the blind and dumb both
23 spake and saw. And all the *multitude* were amazed and
said, Is not this the Son of David?
24 But the Pharisees *hearing* it . . said, This fellow
casteth not out devils but by Beelzebub the prince of the
25 devils. And Jesus *knowing* their thoughts . . said *to*
them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought
to desolation, and every city or house divided against
26 itself shall not *be established*. And if Satan cast out
Satan, he is divided against himself: how then shall his
27 kingdom *be established?* And if I by Beelzebub cast out
devils, by whom do your children cast them out? There-
28 fore they shall be your judges. But *if it be by the Spirit*
of God that I cast out devils, then the kingdom of God
29 is come *upon* you. . . How can one enter into *the* strong
one's house, and *plunder* his goods, *unless* he first bind
the strong *one?* And then *will he plunder* his house.
30 He that is not with me is against me, and he that
31 gathereth not with me, scattereth. . . Wherefore I
say *to* you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be
forgiven *to* men; but the blasphemy against the *Spirit*
32 shall not be forgiven *to* men. And whosoever speaketh
. . against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him:
but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall
not be forgiven him, neither in this world, *nor* in *that*
33 to come. Either make the tree good and *its* fruit good,
or . . make the tree corrupt and *its* fruit corrupt; for
34 the tree is known by *its* fruit. *Ye brood* of vipers, how
can ye, being evil, speak good things? For out of the
35 abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. A good

man out of the good treasure of *his* heart bringeth forth
good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure
36 bringeth forth evil things. But I say *to* you, That every
idle word *which* men shall speak, they shall give *an*
37 account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy
words thou shalt be justified, *or* by thy words thou
shalt be condemned.
38 Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered,
39 saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. *And*
he *answering* said to them, An evil and adulterous gener-
ation seeketh . . a sign, and there shall be no sign . .
40 given . . it, but the sign of the Prophet Jonah. For as
Jonah was three days and three nights in the *belly of*
the great fish, so shall the Son of man be three days and
41 three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of
Nineveh shall rise *up* in *the* judgment with this genera-
tion and shall condemn it; *for* they repented at the
preaching of Jonah; and behold a greater than Jonah
is here.
42 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment
with this generation and shall condemn it; for she came
from the uttermost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom
of Solomon; and behold a greater than Solomon is here.
43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh
through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.
44 Then he saith, I will return *to* my house whence I came
out, and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept,
45 and garnished. Then goeth he and taketh with *him*
seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they
enter in and dwell there, and the last state of that man
is worse than the first. . . So shall it be also *to* this
wicked generation.
46 While he yet talked to the *multitude*, behold his
mother and his brethren stood without, *seeking* to speak
47 *to* him. And one said *to* him, Behold, thy mother and
thy brethren stand without, *seeking* to speak *to* thee.
48 *And* he *answering*, said *to* him that told him, Who is
49 my mother, and who are my brethren? And *stretching*
forth his hand toward his disciples, *he* said, Behold my
50 mother and my brethren. For whosoever shall do the
will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my
brother, and sister, and mother.

13 The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat
by the sea side. And great multitudes were gathered
2 together *to* him, so that he went into *the vessel* and sat,
3 and the . . multitude stood on the shore. And he
spake many things *to* them in parables, saying, Behold,
4 *the* sower went forth to sow. And *while* he sowed, some

seeds fell by the *highway* side, and the *birds* came and
5 devoured them. . . *Others* fell upon stony places, where
they had not much earth; and *they sprung up immedi-*
6 *ately*, because they had not *depth* of earth. And when
the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they
7 had *not* root they withered away. And some fell among
thorns: and the thorns sprung up and choked them.
8 *And* others fell *on the* good ground, and brought forth
fruit, some a hundred fold, some sixty . . , some thirty
9 . . . *He that* hath ears to hear, let him hear. And the
disciples came and said *to* him, Why speakest thou *to*
11 them in parables? He *answering* . . said unto them,
Because *to you it is given* to know the mysteries of the
12 kingdom of heaven; but to them it is not given. For
whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and he shall
have . . abundance: but whosoever hath not, from
13 him shall be taken away even *what* he hath. Therefore
I spake to them in parables, because *seeing they* see not,
and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.
14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, *who*
saith, . . Hearing, ye *will* hear, *but in nowise* under-
stand, and seeing ye *will* see, *but in nowise* perceive.
15 For *the heart of this people* is waxed *fat*, and their ears
are dull of hearing, and their eyes *have they* closed: lest
at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear
with their ears, and . . understand with their hearts,
and should be converted, and I should heal them.
16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears,
17 for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many
prophets and righteous men have desired to see *the*
things which ye see, and have not seen them, and to
hear *the* things which ye hear, and have not heard them.
18 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. When any
one heareth the word of the kingdom, and *considereth*
it not, *the wicked one cometh*, and catcheth away *what*
was sown in his heart. This is he *who* received seed by
20 the highway side. But he who received the seed *in*
stony places, *is he that* heareth the word and *immedi-*
21 *ately receiveth it with joy.* Yet he hath not root in him-
self, *and so* endureth *but* for a while: for when tribu-
lation or persecution ariseth because of the word,
22 *straightway* he is offended. He . . that received *the*
seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word;
and the care of this world and the deceitfulness of
riches choke the word, and *it* becometh unfruitful.
23 But he that receiveth seed *on* the good ground, is he
that heareth the word and *considereth* it: *who* also
beareth fruit and bringeth forth, some *a* hundred fold,
some sixty, some thirty.

24 *He proposed to them another parable,* saying, The
kingdom of heaven is *like* a man sowing good seed in
25 his field. But while men slept, his enemy came and
26 sowed *darnel amidst* the wheat, and went away. *And*
when the blade was sprung up and brought forth fruit,
27 then appeared the *darnel* also. So the servants of the
householder came *to him, and said,* Sir, didst not thou
sow good seed in thy field? . . Whence then hath it
28 *darnel?* He said *to* them, An enemy hath done this.
The servants said *to* him, Wilt thou then, that we go
29 and gather them up? But he said, *No:* lest . . gathering
up the *darnel,* ye root up the wheat . . with them.
30 *Suffer* both *to* grow together *till* the harvest; and *at*
the time of *the* harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather
ye together first the *darnel,* and bind *it* in bundles to
burn *it,* but gather the wheat into my barn.
31 *He proposed to them another parable,* saying, The king-
dom of heaven is like . . a grain of mustard seed, which
32 a man took and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the
least of all seeds: but when it is grown *up,* it is the
greatest *of* herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds
of the air come and lodge in the branches *of it.*
33 *He spake another parable to them:* The kingdom of
heaven is *like* leaven, which a woman *taking, covered up*
in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.
34 All these things spake Jesus *to* the multitude in para-
bles, and without a parable spake he not unto them:
35 *Whereby was* fulfilled *what* was spoken by the prophet,
saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter
things *hid* from the foundation of the world.
36 Then Jesus *having* sent the multitude away, . . went
into the house: and his disciples came *to* him, saying,
Declare *to* us the parable of the *darnel* of the field.
37 He *answering* said *to* them, He that soweth the good
38 seed is the Son of man. The field is the world; the
good seed are the children of the kingdom, but the
39 *darnel* are the children of the wicked one. The enemy
that sowed them is the devil: the harvest is the end of
40 the world; . . the reapers are the angels. As therefore
the *darnel is* gathered and *burnt with* fire, so shall it be
41 *at* the end of *the* world. The Son of man shall send
forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom
all things that offend, and them that do iniquity.
42 And shall cast them into *the* furnace of fire: there shall
43 be the wailing and the gnashing of teeth. Then shall
the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of
their Father. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
44 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like . . treasure hid
in a field, . . which *a man having found* hideth, and for

joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.
45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like . . a merchant
46 . . seeking goodly pearls: Who *having found one pearl of great value,* went and sold all that he had, and bought it.
47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like . . a net . . cast into the sea, and *gathering fishes* of every kind:
48 Which when it was full, they drew to *the* shore, and *sitting* down, . . gathered the good into vessels, but
49 cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world. The angels shall come forth and sever the wicked
50 from among the just; And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the wailing and the gnash-
51 ing of teeth. Jesus saith *to* them, Have ye understood
52 all these things? They say *to* him, Yea, Lord. Then *saith* he *to* them, Therefore every scribe . . instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like . . a householder, *who* bringeth out of his treasure things new and old.
53 . . *And* when Jesus had finished these parables, he
54 departed thence. *And coming* into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, *so* that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath *HE* this wisdom and
55 these mighty works? Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary? And his brethren James
56 and Joses and Simon and *Jude?* And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath *HE* all these
57 things? And they were offended *at* him. But Jesus said *to* them, A prophet is not without honour save in
58 his own country, and in his own house. And he *wrought* not many mighty works there, because of their unbelief.

14 At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, And said *to* his servants, This is John the
2 Baptist: he is risen from the dead, and therefore *these*
3 mighty *powers exert* themselves in him. For Herod *having apprehended* John, had bound . . and put him in prison, for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife.
4 For John *had* said *to* him, It is not lawful for thee to have
5 her. And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they accounted him . . a
6 prophet. But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before *them,* and pleased
7 Herod. Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give
8 her whatever she *should* ask. And she, being before instructed *by* her mother, said, Give me here John *the*
9 Baptist's head in a charger. And the king was sorry; *yet* for the oath's sake, and them *who* sat with him *at*

10 *table*, he commanded it to be given her. And he sent
11 and beheaded John in the prison. And his head was
brought in a charger, and given to the damsel, and she
12 *carried* it to her mother. And his disciples came and
took up the body and buried it, and went and told Jesus.
13 And Jesus *hearing* it . . *withdrew* thence by ship into
a desert place apart: *but* when the people heard thereof,
they followed him *by land* out of the cities.
14 *And coming* forth he . . saw a great multitude, and
was moved with *tender* compassion *for* them, and healed
15 their sick. And *in the evening* his disciples came to him,
saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past:
send the multitude away, that *going into the villages, they*
16 may buy themselves victuals. But Jesus said *to* them,
17 They need not *go:* give ye them to eat. They *say to*
18 him, We have here but five loaves and two fishes. He
19 said, Bring them hither to me. And he commanded the
multitude to sit down on the grass; and *taking* the five
loaves and the two fishes . . looking up to heaven he
blessed and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples,
20 and the disciples to the multitude. And they . . all
ate and were *satisfied:* and they took up of the fragments
21 that remained twelve baskets full. And they that had
eaten were about five thousand . . beside women and
22 children. *And he constrained his disciples to go straight-*
way into the vessel, and . . go before him *to* the other
23 side *till* he sent the *multitude* away. And *having sent*
the *multitude* away, he went up into a mountain apart
24 to pray. And *in the evening* he was there alone. But
the *vessel* was now in the midst of the sea, tossed *by the*
25 waves; for the wind was contrary. . . In the fourth
watch of the night *he* went *to* them, walking on the
26 sea. And . . the disciples *seeing* him walking on the
sea, . . were *affrighted*, saying, It is an *apparition:* and
27 they cried out for fear. But *Jesus immediately* spake to
28 them, saying, *Take courage:* it is I: be not afraid. And
Peter *answering*, . . said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me
29 come *to* thee on the *waters*. And he said, Come. And
. . Peter *going down from the vessel*, walked on the
30 *waters*, to go to Jesus. *But seeing* the wind boisterous,
he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, . . Lord,
31 save me. And immediately Jesus *reaching* forth his
hand, . . caught him, and *saith* to him, O thou of little
32 faith, wherefore didst thou doubt? And when they
33 were come into the *vessel*, the wind ceased. Then they
that were in the *vessel* came and worshipped him, saying,
Of a truth thou art the Son of God.
34 And *having crossed* over, they came into the land of
35 Gennesaret. And when the men of that place had

knowledge of him, they sent out into *the* country round
36 about, and brought *to* him all that were diseased; And
besought him that they might . . touch *but* the hem
of his garment: and as many as touched were made
perfectly whole.

15 Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees *who* were
at Jerusalem, saying, Why do thy disciples transgress
2 the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands
3 when they eat bread. But he *answering* said, Why do
ye also transgress the commandment of God *through*
4 your tradition? For God . . *said*, Honour thy father
and mother: and he that *revileth* father or mother, let
5 him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say
to his father or mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou
6 mightest *have been* profited by me: *He shall in nowise*
honour his father or his mother. . . Thus have ye made
7 *void the command of God through* your tradition. Ye
hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying,
8 This people draweth nigh *to* me with their *lips* . . ; but
9 their heart is far from me. But in vain *do they* worship
me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.
10 And . . *calling* the multitude *unto him*, he said *to* them,
11 Hear and understand. Not that which goeth into the
mouth defileth *the* man, but *what* . . cometh out of the
12 mouth, this defileth *the* man. Then came his disciples
and said *to* him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees,
13 *hearing this saying, were offended?* . . He answered and
said, Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not
14 planted shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they *are*
blind leaders of the blind: *but* if the blind lead the
15 blind, both *will* fall into a ditch. Then answered Peter
16 and said *to* him, Declare *to* us this parable. And Jesus
17 said, Are ye also yet without understanding? Do *ye*
not yet understand, that *whatever* entereth *into* the
mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the
18 *vault?* But *the* things which proceed out of the mouth
19 come *out of* the heart, and they defile the man. For
out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adul-
20 teries, fornications, thefts, false witness, *railings*. These
are the things which defile a man; but to eat with
unwashen hands defileth not a man.
21 *And* Jesus *going thence, retired to* the coast of Tyre and
22 Sidon. And behold, a woman of Canaan, *coming* out
of *those* coasts, *cried to* him, saying, Have mercy on me,
O Lord, thou Son of David: my daughter is grievously
23 vexed with a devil. But he answered her not a word.
And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send
24 her away, for she crieth after us. But he *answering*

said, I am not sent but *to* the lost sheep of the house of
25 Israel. Then *she came* and worshipped him, saying,
26 Lord, help me. But he *answering* said, It is not *good* to take the children's bread and cast it to *the* dogs.
27 And she said, *True*, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs
28 which fall from their master's table. *And* Jesus *answering* said *to* her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee . . as thou wilt. And her daughter was *healed* from that . . hour.
29 And Jesus *passing* thence, came nigh . . the sea of Galilee; and *going* up into a mountain, *he* sat down there.
30 And great multitudes came *to* him, having with them *the* lame, blind, dumb, *disabled*, and many others; and cast them . . at *the feet of Jesus*, and he healed them:
31 *So* that the *multitudes* wondered, . . *seeing* the dumb to speak, the *disabled whole*, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.
32 Then Jesus *calling* his disciples *to* him . . said, I have *tender* compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I *am not willing to* send them away fasting, lest they
33 faint in the way. And his disciples *said to* him, Whence should we have so *many loaves* in the wilderness, as to
34 *satisfy* so great a multitude? And Jesus saith *to* them, How many loaves have you? . . They said, Seven, and
35 a few *small* fishes. And he commanded the multitude
36 to sit down on the ground. And *taking* the seven loaves and the fishes, *he* gave thanks and brake them and gave
37 to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. And they *all ate* and were *satisfied*, and they took up of the
38 *fragments that remained* seven baskets full. And they that *had eaten* were four thousand men, beside women and children.
39 And *having* sent away the multitude, . . *he* took ship *again*, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

16 Then the Pharisees . . *and* Sadducees came . . *to him* and tempting, desired him . . *to* show them a
2 sign from heaven. He answering . . said *to* them, *In the evening* ye say, It will be fair weather; for the sky
3 is red: And in the morning, It will be foul weather to-day; for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, *ye know to* discern the face of the sky; . . can ye
4 not discern the signs of the times? A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; *but* there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the Prophet Jonah. And he left them and departed.
5 And when his disciples were come on the other side,
6 they had forgotten to take bread. And Jesus said *to*

them, Take heed, and beware of the leaven of the
7 Pharisees and . . Sadducees. And they reasoned
among themselves, saying, . . We have taken no bread.
8 *Jesus knowing it* said *to* them, O ye of little faith, why
reason ye among yourselves, because ye have *taken* no
9 bread? Do ye not . . understand *nor* remember the
five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets
10 ye took up? Neither the seven loaves of the four thou-
11 sand, and how many baskets ye took up? How *do* ye
not understand, that I spake . . not to you concern-
ing bread, . . *to* beware of the leaven of the Pharisees
12 and . . Sadducees? Then *they understood that* he *did
not bid* them *beware* of the leaven of bread, but of the
doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees.
13 *And* Jesus *coming* into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi,
. . asked his disciples saying, Whom do men say that
14 . . the Son of man *is?* And they said, Some say, . .
John the Baptist; *others, Elijah;* . . others, Jeremiah or
15 one of the prophets. He saith *to* them, But whom say
16 ye that I am? And Simon Peter *answering* said, Thou
17 art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus
answering said *to* him, *Happy* art thou, Simon Barjonah,
for flesh and blood *have* not revealed *this to* thee, but
18 my Father *who* is in heaven. And I say also *to* thee,
Thou art Peter, and *on* this rock I will build my Church,
19 and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And
I will give . . thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven:
and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound
in heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth
20 shall be loosed in heaven. Then charged he his disciples
. . *to* tell no one that he was . . the Christ.
21 From that time . . *Jesus began* to show . . his dis-
ciples, . . that he must go to Jerusalem and suffer many
things *from* the elders and chief priests and scribes, and
22 be killed, and be raised again the third day. Then
Peter *taking hold of him, rebuked him,* saying, *Favour
23 thyself, Lord:* this shall *in nowise* be unto thee. But he
turning . . said *to* Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan;
thou art an offence *to* me: for thou savourest not the
24 things . . of God, but *the* things of men. Then said
Jesus *to* his disciples, If any man *be willing to* come after
me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross and
25 follow me. For whosoever will save his life, shall lose
it, and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall
26 find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain
the whole world and lose his own soul? Or what shall
27 a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of
man shall come in the glory of his Father with his
angels; and then *shall he render to* every man according

28 to his work. Verily I say *to* you, there *are* some standing here, *who* shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

17 And after six days, Jesus taketh Peter and James and John his brother, and bringeth them up into *a*
2 high mountain apart, And was transfigured before them; and his face *shone* as the sun. And his raiment *became*
3 white as the light. And behold there appeared *to* them
4 Moses and *Elijah* talking with him. Then *Peter answering,* said *to* Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here; if thou wilt, let us make here three *tents,* one for thee,
5 and one for Moses, and one for *Elijah.* While he *was* yet *speaking,* behold a bright cloud overshadowed them, and behold a voice out of the cloud *saying,* This is my
6 beloved Son, in whom I *delight:* hear ye him. And . . the disciples *hearing* it, . . fell on their face and were
7 sore afraid. And Jesus came and touched them, and
8 said, Arise, and be not afraid. *And lifting* up their eyes,
9 they saw no man, *but* Jesus only. And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, *till* the Son of man be risen
10 again from the dead. And *his* disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes, That *Elijah* must
11 come first? And Jesus *answering* said *to* them, *Elijah*
12 truly *doth come first,* and *will regulate* all things. But I say *to* you, That *Elijah* is come already, and they *acknowledged* him not, but have done *to* him whatever they listed. *So* shall also the Son of man suffer *from*
13 them. Then the disciples understood that he *spoke to* them of John the Baptist.
14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came *to* him a . . man, kneeling down to him, and say-
15 ing, Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatic, and *suffereth grievously;* for *often* he falleth into the fire,
16 and often into the water. And I brought him to thy
17 disciples, *but* they could not cure him. Then Jesus *answering* said, O *unbelieving* and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I suffer
18 you? Bring him hither to me. And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he *went* out of him, and the child was cured
19 from that . . hour. Then *the disciples coming to* Jesus
20 apart . . said, Why could not we cast him out? And Jesus said *to* them, Because of your unbelief. For verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say *to* this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove, and nothing shall
21 be impossible *to* you. Howbeit this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said *to* them,
The Son of man *is about to* be betrayed into the hands
23 of men: And they *will* kill him, and the third day he
will rise again; and they were exceedingly sorry.
24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that
received *the* tribute money came to Peter, and said, Doth
25 not your Master pay the tribute? He saith, Yes. And
when *he came* into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom do the kings
of the earth take custom or tribute? Of their own *sons*,
26 or of strangers? *He* saith *to* him, Of strangers. Jesus
27 saith *to* him, Then are the *sons* free. *Yet that we may not* offend them, go . . to the sea, and cast *a* hook, and
take . . the fish that first cometh up. And when thou
hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money.
That take, and give . . them for me and thee.

18 At *that* time came the disciples *to* Jesus, saying, Who
is greatest in the kingdom of heaven? And Jesus *calling*
2 *to him a little child*, . . set him in the midst of them, And
3 said, Verily I say *to* you, Except ye be converted, and
become as little children, ye shall *in nowise* enter into
4 the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall
humble himself as this little child, he *is the* greatest in
5 the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one
6 such little child in my name, receiveth me. But whoso
shall offend one of these little ones *that* believe in me,
it were better for him that a millstone were hanged
about his neck, and . . he were drowned in the depth
7 of the sea. Wo *to* the world because of offences: for
it must needs be that offences come; but wo to that
8 man by whom the offence cometh. Wherefore if thy
hand or thy foot *cause thee to offend*, cut them off and
cast them from thee; *it is good* for thee to enter into
life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or
9 two feet to be cast into *the* everlasting fire. And if
thine eye *cause thee to offend*, pluck it out, and cast it
from thee: it is *good* for thee to enter into life with one
eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.
10 *See* that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say
to you, that in heaven their angels . . *continually*
11 behold the face of my Father *who* is in heaven. For the
12 Son of man is come to save that which was lost. *What*
think ye? If a man have *a* hundred sheep, and one of
them *go* astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine,
and *go* into the mountains and *seek* that which *was* gone
13 astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say *to* you,
he rejoiceth more *over* that sheep, than *over* the ninety
14 and nine which went not astray. . . So it is not the will

of your Father *who* is in heaven, that one of these little
15 ones should perish. *But* if thy brother shall *sin*
against thee, go and *reprove him*, between thee and him
alone: if he *will* hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.
16 But if he will not hear, take with thee one or two more,
that *by* the mouth of two or three witnesses every word
17 may be established. And if he *will not* hear them, tell
it *to* the Church; but if he *will not* hear the Church, let
18 him be *to* thee as *the* heathen and *the* publican. Verily
I say *to* you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be
bound in heaven, and whatsoever ye shall loose on
19 earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say *to* you,
That if two of you shall agree on earth, . . touching
any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them
20 *by* my Father *who* is in heaven. For where two or
three are gathered together in my name, there am I
in the midst of them.
21 Then came Peter to him and said, Lord, how often
shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him?
22 Till seven times? Jesus saith *to* him, I say not unto thee,
23 *till* seven times, but *till* seventy times seven. Therefore
. . the kingdom of heaven *is like* a . . king, *who was*
24 *minded to settle accounts with* his servants. And when
he had begun to *settle*, one was brought *to* him *who* owed
25 him ten thousand talents. But *as* he had not to pay,
his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and
children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.
26 *Then* the servant *falling prostrate at his feet*, . . *said*,
Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.
27 *And* the lord of that servant, . . moved with *tender*
compassion, . . loosed him and forgave him the debt.
28 But *that* servant *going* out, . . found one of his fellow
servants *who* owed him *a* hundred pence, and . . *seized*
him . . by the throat, saying, Pay me *what* thou owest.
29 And his fellow servant *falling* at his feet, . . besought
him saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee
30 all. And he would not, but went and cast him into
31 prison, till he should pay the debt. *But his fellow*
servants seeing what he had done, . . *were* very sorry, and
came and *gave* their lord *an exact account of* all that was
32 done. Then his lord *calling him*, said *to* him, . . Thou
wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because
33 thou *entreatedst* me. Shouldst not thou also have had
compassion on thy fellow servant, . . as I had pity
34 on thee? And his lord *being* wroth, . . delivered him to
the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due to
35 him. So likewise *will* my heavenly Father do . . *to*
you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his
brother their trespasses.

19 *And Jesus when he* had finished these sayings, . . departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of
2 Judea beyond Jordan. And great multitudes followed
3 him, and he healed them *there. And* the Pharisees . . came *to* him, tempting him and saying, . . Is it lawful
4 for a man to put away his wife for every cause? And he *answering* said *to* them, Have ye not read, that he *who* made them, . . made them male and female *from the*
5 *beginning?* And said, For this cause *a man shall* leave father and mother and . . cleave to his wife, and they
6 twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined
7 together let not man put asunder. They say *to* him, Why *then did Moses* . . command to give a writing of
8 *divorce,* and . . put her away? He saith *to* them, . . Because of the hardness of your hearts *Moses permitted* you to put away your wives; but from the beginning
9 it was not so. And I say *to* you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except . . for *whoredom,* and . . marry another, committeth adultery, and *he that* marrieth her
10 *that* is put away, . . *committeth* adultery. His disciples say *to* him, If the case of *a* man *with* his *wife be so,*
11 it is not *expedient* to marry. But he said *to* them, All men *do not* receive this saying, *but* they to whom it is
12 given. For there are . . eunuchs, *who* were born so from their mother's womb, and there are . . eunuchs, *who* were made eunuchs *by* men: and there *are* eunuchs, *who* have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.
13 Then were brought *to* him little children, that he *might lay* his hands on them and pray: *but* his disciples
14 rebuked them. But Jesus said, Suffer *the* little children *to come to me, and forbid them not;* for of such is the
15 kingdom of heaven. And he laid his hands on them and departed thence.
16 And behold one came and said *to* him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal
17 life? And he said to him, Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one that is God: but if thou
18 wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith *to* him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder: thou shalt not commit adultery: thou shalt not steal:
19 thou shalt not bear false witness: Honour thy father and . . mother, and thou shalt love thy neighbour as
20 thyself. The young man saith *to* him, All these things have I kept from my *childhood . . :* what lack I yet?
21 Jesus *saith* to him, If thou *desirest to* be perfect, go, . . sell *what* thou hast, and give *it* to the poor, and thou

shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, . . follow me.
22 But . . the young man *hearing* that saying, . . went
away sorrowful; for he had great possessions.
23 Then said Jesus *to* his disciples, Verily I say *to* you,
. . a rich man shall *with difficulty* enter into the kingdom
24 of heaven. And again I say *to* you, It is easier for a
camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich
25 man to enter into the kingdom of God. . . His disciples
hearing it, . . were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who
26 then can be saved? But Jesus *looking upon* them, said
to them, With men this is impossible; but with God all
things are possible.
27 Then *Peter answering* said *to* him, Behold we have
forsaken all, and followed thee. What shall we have
28 therefore? . . Jesus said *to* them, Verily I say *to* you,
that ye *who* have followed me in the *renovation*, when
the Son of man shall sit *on* the throne of his glory, ye also
shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes
29 of Israel. And every one that hath forsaken *house*, or
brethren, . . or father, or mother, or wife, or children,
or *land*, for my name's sake, shall receive *a* hundred
30 fold, and . . inherit everlasting life. But many . .
first *will* be last, and the last *will* be first.

20 For the kingdom of heaven is like . . *a* householder,
who went out early in the morning to hire labourers
2 into his vineyard. And . . *having agreed* with the
labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his
3 vineyard. And *going out* about the third hour . . *he*
4 saw others standing idle in the market place, And said
to them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever
5 is right, I will give you. And they went. . . Again . .
going out about the sixth and ninth hour, *he* did likewise.
6 And *going out about the eleventh hour, he* found others
standing idle, and saith *to* them, Why stand ye here all
7 the day idle? They say *to* him, Because no man hath
hired us. He saith *to* them, Go ye also into the vineyard,
8 and whatsoever is right ye . . shall . . receive. *And*
in the evening the lord of the vineyard saith *to* the
steward, Call the labourers, and *pay* them their hire,
9 beginning from the last *to* the first. And when they
came *who* were hired about the eleventh hour, they
10 received every *one* a penny. But when the first came,
they supposed that they should have received more;
11 and they likewise received every *one* a penny. *And*
having received it, they murmured against the *house-*
12 *holder*, Saying, These last have wrought . . one hour,
and thou hast made them equal unto us, *who* have borne
13 the burden and the heat of the day. *And* he *answering*

said to one of them, Friend, I do thee no wrong. Didst
14 not thou agree with me for a penny? Take *what is*
thine, and go . . : *it is my will to give* to this last even as
15 *to* thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with
16 my own? Is thine eye evil because I am good? So the
last shall be first, and the first last: for many *are* called,
but few chosen.
17 And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve
18 disciples apart in the way, and said *to* them, Behold we
go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man *will* be betrayed
to the chief priests and . . scribes, and they *will* con-
19 demn him to death, And *will* deliver him to the Gentiles,
to mock and . . scourge and . . crucify him; and the
third day he shall rise again.
20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children
with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain
21 thing of him. And he said *to* her, What wilt thou?
She said *to* him, Grant that these my two sons may sit,
the one on thy right hand, and the other on *thy* left,
22 in thy kingdom. But Jesus *answering said,* Ye know
not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink . . the cup that
I *am about to drink, or* to be baptized with the baptism
that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are
23 able. And he saith *to* them, Ye shall *indeed drink my*
cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am bap-
tized with; but to sit on my right hand and on my left
is not mine to give, . . *save to them* for whom it is pre-
24 pared of my Father. And . . the ten *hearing* it, . .
were moved with indignation against the two brethren.
25 But Jesus *calling* them *to* him . . said, Ye know that
the princes of the Gentiles *lord it over them,* and they
26 that are great exercise authority upon them. . . It shall
not be so among you; but whosoever *desireth to* be great
27 among you, let him be your minister; And whosoever
desireth to be chief among you, let him be your servant:
28 Even as the Son of man came not to be *served,* but to
serve, and to give his life a ransom for many.
29 And as they *were going* from Jericho, a great multitude
30 followed him. And behold two blind men sitting by
the way side, *hearing that Jesus was passing by,* cried
out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of
31 David. And the multitude *charged* them *to hold their*
peace: but they cried out the more, saying, Have mercy
32 on us, O Lord, thou Son of David. And Jesus *standing*
still, . . called them, and said, What *do ye desire* that
33 I *should* do *for* you? They say *to* him, Lord, that our
34 eyes may be opened. So Jesus, *moved with tender com-*
passion, . . touched their eyes, and immediately their
eyes received sight, and they followed him.

21 And when they drew nigh *to* Jerusalem, and *came* to
Bethphage, *at* the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two
2 disciples, Saying *to* them, Go into the village over
against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied
and a colt with her; loose . . and bring them *to* me.
3 And if any man say aught *to* you, . . say, The Lord hath
need of them: and *he will send them immediately* . . .
4 This was done that it might be fulfilled which was
5 spoken by the prophet, saying, Tell ye the daughter of
Sion, Behold thy King cometh *to* thee meek and sitting
6 on an ass, *even* a colt the foal of an ass. And the dis-
7 ciples went and did as Jesus *had* commanded them, And
brought the ass and the colt, and put on them their
8 clothes and . . set him thereon: And a very great
multitude spread their garments in the way; and others
cut down branches from the trees and *strewed* them in
9 the way. And the multitudes that went before and that
followed *after* cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of
David; blessed *in the name of the Lord is he that cometh:*
10 Hosanna in the highest. And *as he came* into Jerusalem,
all the city was *in a commotion*, saying, Who is this?
11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus, the prophet *from*
Nazareth of Galilee.
12 And Jesus went into the temple . . and cast out all
. . that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew
the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them
13 that *were selling* doves; And *saith to* them, It is written,
My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye
14 have made it a den of thieves. And the blind and the lame
15 came to him in the temple, and he healed them. *But*
the chief priests and *the* scribes, *seeing* the *wonders* that
he did, and the children crying in the temple saying,
Hosanna to the Son of David, . . were sore displeased,
16 And said *to* him, Hearest thou what these say? And
Jesus saith *to* them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the
mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected
17 praise? And *leaving them he* went out of the city *to*
Bethany, and . . lodged there.
18 Now in the morning, as he *was returning to* the city,
19 he hungered. And *seeing* a fig tree in the way, he
came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaves only.
And *he saith to* it, Let no fruit grow on thee hencefor-
ward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered
20 away. And *the disciples seeing* it . . marvelled, say-
21 ing, How soon is the fig tree withered away? Jesus
answering . . said *to* them, Verily I say *to* you, if ye have
faith and doubt not, ye shall not only do this *miracle of*
the fig tree, but also if ye . . say *to* this mountain, Be
thou *lifted up*, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall

22 be done. And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in
prayer, believing, ye shall receive.
23 And when he *came into* the temple, the chief priests
and the elders of the people came *to* him as he was
teaching, and said, By what authority *dost* thou these
24 things? and who gave thee this authority? And Jesus
answering said *to* them, I *will also* ask you one thing,
which if ye tell me, I *will likewise* tell you by what
25 authority I do these things. The baptism of John,
whence was it? from heaven or *from* men? And they
reasoned *among* themselves, saying, If we . . say from
heaven, he will say, . . Why *then* did ye not believe
26 him? But if we . . say of men, we fear the *multitude;*
27 for all hold John as a prophet. And they *answering*
said *to Jesus,* We cannot tell. And he said *to* them,
Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.
28 But what think *you?* A man had two sons; and *coming*
to the first, *he* said, Son, go *to* work to-day in my vine-
29 yard. He *answering* said, I will not; but afterward
30 *repenting he* went. And *coming* to the *other he* said
likewise. And he answered, . . I go, sir: *but* went not.
31 *Which* of *the two* did the will of his father? They say *to*
him, The first. Jesus saith *to* them, Verily I say *to*
you, . . the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom
32 of God before you. For John came *to* you in *a* way of
righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publi-
cans and the harlots believed him. And ye *seeing* it,
repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.
33 Hear another parable. There was a certain house-
holder, *who* planted a vineyard, and hedged it round
about, and digged a wine press in it, and built a tower,
and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far
34 country. And when *the season* of . . fruit drew near,
he sent his servants to the husbandmen *to* receive the
35 fruits of it. And the husbandmen *taking* his servants
. . beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.
36 Again he sent other servants more than the *former;* and
37 they did *to* them *in like manner.* . . Last of all he sent
to them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.
38 But . . the husbandmen *seeing* the son, *said* among
themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him and
39 *take possession of* his inheritance. And *taking him they*
40 cast him out of the vineyard and slew him. When
therefore the lord of the vineyard cometh, what will he
41 do *to* those husbandmen? They say *to* him, He will
miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out
the vineyard *to* other husbandmen, *who will* render him
42 the fruits in their seasons. Jesus saith *to* them, *Have*
you never read in the Scriptures, The stone which the

builders rejected . . is become the head of the corner?
This is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our
43 eyes. Therefore *I say to* you, The kingdom of God shall
be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing
44 forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on
this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall
45 fall, it will grind him to powder. And . . the chief
priests and the Pharisees *hearing* his parables, . . *knew*
46 he *spoke* of them. But when they sought to *apprehend*
him, they feared the multitude, because they took him
for a prophet.

22 And Jesus *answering*, spake *to* them again *in* parables,
saying, The kingdom of heaven is like . . a . . king,
3 *who* made a marriage *feast* for his son. And sent forth
his servants to call them that were *invited*, to the
4 marriage; *but* they would not come. Again he sent
forth other servants, saying, Tell them *who* were *in-*
vited, behold I have prepared my dinner, my oxen
and . . fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come
5 *to* the marriage. But they *slighting* it, . . went . . one
6 to his farm, another to his merchandise. And the *rest*
laying hold on his servants, . . treated them *shamefully*
7 and slew them. *And* . . the king *hearing it* . . was
wroth, and . . *sending* forth his *troops*, . . destroyed
8 those murderers and burnt . . their city. Then saith
he to his servants, The *marriage feast* is *prepared*, but
9 they *who* were *invited* were not worthy. Go ye therefore
into the highways, *and invite whomsoever ye find to the*
10 *wedding banquet.* So those servants *going* out into the
ways, . . gathered *together* all *whomsoever* they found,
both bad and good. And the *feast* was *abundantly*
11 *supplied* with guests. *But* the king *coming* in to see
the guests, . . saw there a man *who* had not on a wed-
12 ding garment, And . . saith *to* him, Friend, how camest
thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And
13 he was speechless. Then said the king to *his* servants,
Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast
him into *the* outer darkness: there shall be *the* weeping
14 and *the* gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but
few . . chosen.
15 Then went the Pharisees and *consulted together* how *to*
16 *ensnare* him in his talk. And they send *to* him their
disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know
that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in
truth; neither carest thou for any man; for thou re-
17 gardest not the person of men. Tell us therefore,
what thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute *to*
18 Caesar, or not? But Jesus *knowing* their wickedness,

19 . . said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? Show me
the tribute money. And they brought *to* him a penny.
20 . . He said *to* them, Whose is this image and superscrip-
21 tion? They say *to* him, Caesar's. Then said he *to* them,
Render therefore *to* Caesar the things *that* are Caesar's,
22 and *to* God the things that are God's. . . And *hearing*
it they marvelled. And *they* left him and went *away*.
23 The same day came . . the Sadducees, *who* say . .
24 there is no resurrection, and asked him, Saying, Master,
Moses said, If a man die having no children, his brother
shall marry his wife and raise up *issue to* his brother.
25 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first
having married a wife *died*, and having no issue, left
26 his wife *to* his brother. Likewise the second also, and
27 the third, unto the seventh. Last of all the woman
28 died also. Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife
29 shall she be of the seven? For they all had her. Jesus
answering said to them, Ye . . err, not knowing the
30 Scriptures, nor the power of God. For in the resur-
rection they neither marry nor are given in marriage,
31 but are as the angels of God in heaven. But . . touching
the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that
32 which was spoken *to* you by God, saying, I am the God
of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of
33 Jacob. *He is not a* God of the dead, but of the living. And
. . the multitude *hearing it*, were astonished at his doctrine.
34 But . . the Pharisees *having* heard that he had
35 *silenced the Sadducees*, . . were gathered together. *And*
one of them, *a scribe*, asked him a question, *trying him*
36 and saying, Master, which is the great commandment
37 in the law? Jesus said *to* him, Thou shalt love the Lord
thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and
38 with all thy mind. This is the first and great com-
39 mandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou
40 shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two
commandments hang all the law and the prophets.
41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus
42 asked them, Saying, What think ye of Christ? Whose
43 son is he? They say *to* him, *David's*. He saith *to* them,
How doth David *then by the Spirit* call him Lord?
44 saying, The Lord said *to* my Lord, Sit thou on my
right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.
45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his son? And
46 no man was able to answer him a word; neither durst
any . . from that day . . *question him any more.*

23 Then spake Jesus to the multitudes and to *his*
disciples, Saying, The scribes and Pharisees sit in *the*
3 *chair of Moses:* All *things* therefore whatsoever they

bid you observe, *observe* and do: but do not ye after
4 their works; for they say and do not. For they bind
heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them
on men's shoulders, but they . . will not move them
5 with . . their finger. But all their works they do, . .
to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries,
6 and enlarge *the fringes* of their garments. And love the
uppermost *places* at feasts, and the chief seats in the
7 synagogues, And *salutations* in the markets, and to be
8 called *by* men, Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi;
for one is your *teacher*, . . and all *are your brethren.*
9 And call no man your father *on* earth; for one is your
10 Father, *who* is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters;
11 for one is your Master, even Christ. But he that is
12 greatest among you shall be your servant. . . Whoso-
ever shall exalt himself, shall be *humbled*, and he that
shall humble himself, shall be exalted.
13 But wo *to* you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for
ye shut the kingdom of heaven against men: . . ye *go*
not in, . . neither suffer *ye* them that are entering to
14 go in. Wo *to* you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for
ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long
prayers; therefore ye shall receive the greater damna-
15 tion. Wo *to* you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for
ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and
when he is *become so*, ye make him two-fold more the
16 child of hell than yourselves. Wo *to* you, ye blind
guides; *who* say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple,
it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of
17 the temple he is *bound.* Ye fools and blind: for *which*
is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the
18 gold? And whosoever shall swear by the altar, *ye say*,
it is nothing; but whosoever *shall swear* by the gift
19 that is upon it, . . is *bound.* Ye fools and blind: for
which is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth
20 the gift? *He* therefore *that sweareth* by the altar,
21 sweareth by it and by all things thereon. And *he that*
sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it and by him that
22 dwelleth therein. And he that *sweareth* by heaven,
sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth
23 thereon. Wo *to* you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites:
for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and
have *neglected* the weightier matters of the law, judg-
ment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done,
24 and not to *have neglected* the others. . . Ye blind guides,
25 *who* strain out a gnat, and swallow a camel. Wo *to* you,
scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye *cleanse* the
outside of the cup and . . *the dish;* but within they are
26 full of *rapine and intemperance.* Thou blind Pharisee,

cleanse first *the inside of the cup and of the dish*, that the
27 outside of them may be clean also. Wo *to* you, scribes
and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are like . . whited
sepulchres, which *outwardly indeed appear beautiful*, but
. . within are *full of dead men's bones* and of all uncleanness. . . So ye *likewise* outwardly appear righteous *to*
men; but within . . are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.
29 Wo *to* you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: *for* ye
build the tombs of the prophets, and *adorn* the sepulchres
30 of the righteous, And say, If we had been in the days of
our fathers, we would not have been partakers with
31 them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye *testify*
against yourselves, that ye are the *sons* of them *who*
32 killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of
33 your fathers. Ye serpents, ye *brood* of vipers, how can
34 ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I
send *to* you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and
some of them ye *will* kill and crucify, and some of them
ye *will* scourge in your synagogues, and persecute . .
35 from city to city: That upon you may come all the
righteous blood shed *on* the earth, from the blood of
Abel the righteous, *to* the blood of Zechariah *the* son of
Barachiah, whom ye slew between the temple and the
36 altar. Verily I say *to* you, all these things shall come
37 upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, . . that
killest the prophets, and stonest them *who were* sent
unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children
together even as a *bird* gathereth her *young* under her
38 wings; and ye would not! Behold your house is left
39 unto you desolate. For I say *to* you, ye shall not see
me from *this time*, till ye say Blessed is he that cometh
in the name of the Lord.

24 And Jesus *going out of the temple departed:* and his
disciples came to him . . to show him the buildings
2 of the temple. And Jesus said *to* them, *Do ye see all*
these things? Verily I say *to* you, There shall not be left
here one stone upon another, *which* shall not be thrown
3 down. And as he sat *on* the mount of Olives, *his* disciples came *to* him privately, saying, Tell us when shall
these things be? And what shall be the sign of thy
4 coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus
answering said . . Take heed that no man deceive you.
5 For many *will* come in my name, saying, I am the Christ,
6 and *will* deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars
and rumours of wars; see that ye be not troubled: for
all these things must come to pass: but the end is not
7 yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom
against kingdom: and there shall be famines and pesti-

8 lences and earthquakes in divers places: All these are
9 the beginning of sorrows. Then *will* they deliver you
up to *affliction*, and *will* kill you; and ye shall be hated
10 of all nations for my name's sake. And then *will* many
be offended, and *will* betray one another, and . . hate
11 one another. And many false prophets *will* rise and
12 *will* deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound,
the love of many *will* wax cold.
13 But he that shall endure *to* the end, the same shall
14 be saved. And this Gospel of the kingdom shall be
preached in all the world, for a *testimony to* all nations:
15 and then shall the end come. When *therefore ye* see the
abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the
prophet *standing* in the holy place, (*he that readeth*, let
16 him understand) Then let them *who are* in Judea flee
17 *to* the mountains: Let not him that is on the house top,
. . come down to take any thing out of his house:
18 Neither let him *who* is in the field return back to take
19 his clothes. *But* wo *to* them that are with child, and
20 to them that give suck in those days. *And* pray ye
that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the
21 Sabbath. . . For then shall be great tribulation, such
as was not *from* the beginning of the world to this time,
22 . . nor ever shall be. And *unless* those days *were*
shortened, no flesh would be saved; *but* for the elect's
23 sake, those days shall be shortened. Then if any . .
say *to* you, Lo here is Christ, or there; believe it not.
24 For *false Christs and false prophets will arise* and . .
show great signs and wonders, *so that they would deceive*
25 (*if possible*) *even the elect.* Behold I have told you
26 before. *Therefore if they say to* you, Behold he is in
the desert, go not forth: Behold he is in the secret
27 chambers, believe it not. For as the lightning *goeth*
from the east, and shineth even *to* the west, so shall also
28 the coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the
carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.
29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days, *the sun*
shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light;
and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of
30 the heavens shall be shaken. And then shall appear
the sign of the Son of man in heaven; and then shall
all the tribes of the earth mourn, and . . shall see the
Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power
31 and great glory. And he *will* send *forth* his angels with
a *loud-sounding trumpet*, and they shall gather together
his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven
to the other.
32 . . Learn a parable *from* the fig tree: when *its* branch
is *now* tender and *shooteth* forth leaves, ye know that

33 the summer is nigh. So likewise *when ye* see all these
34 things, know that it is *nigh*, even at the doors. Verily
I say *to* you, This generation shall not pass *away* till
35 all . . things be *done*. Heaven and earth shall pass
36 away, but my words shall not pass away. But of that
day and hour knoweth no man, . . *neither* the angels
of heaven, but my Father only.
37 But as the days of Noah . . so shall also the coming
38 of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were
before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying
and giving in marriage, *till* the day that Noah entered
39 into the ark, And knew not *till* the flood came and took
them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of
man be.
40 Then shall two *men* be in the field: . . one *is* taken
41 and *one is* left. Two women shall be grinding *in* the
mill; . . one *is* taken, and . . *one is* left.
42 Watch therefore; for ye know not what hour your
43 Lord *cometh*. But *ye* know this, that if the *householder*
had known in what watch the thief would *have* come,
he would have watched and . . not have suffered his
44 house to be broken *open*. Therefore be ye also ready:
for . . *at* an hour . . ye think not, the Son of man
45 cometh. Who then is *the* faithful and wise servant,
whom his Lord hath *appointed* ruler over his household,
46 to give them *food* in due season? *Happy* is that servant,
47 whom his Lord *coming* shall find so doing. Verily I say
to you, . . he *will appoint* him ruler over all his goods.
48 *But* . . if that evil servant . . say in his heart, My lord
49 *delays* his coming: And shall begin to smite his fellow
50 servant, and *shall* eat and drink with the drunken: The
lord of that servant shall come in a day that he *expecteth*
51 *him not*, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And
shall cut him asunder, and *allot* him his portion with
the hypocrites: there shall be *the* weeping and *the*
gnashing of teeth.

25 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be *like* . . ten
virgins *who taking* their lamps, . . went forth to meet
2 the bridegroom. *But* five of them were wise, and five
3 were foolish. They that were foolish *taking* their lamps,
4 . . took no oil with them. But the wise took oil in
5 their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom
6 *delayed*, they all slumbered and slept. *But* at midnight
there was a cry . . , Behold the bridegroom cometh:
7 *come* ye forth to meet him. Then all those virgins arose
8 and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said *to* the
wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out.
9 But the wise answered, . . Lest there be not enough

for us and you: . . go ye rather to them that sell, and
10 buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the
bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in
with him to the marriage; and the door was shut.
11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord,
12 Lord, open to us. *But* he *answering* said, Verily I say
13 *to* you, I know you not. Watch therefore; for ye know
not the day nor the hour. . .
14 For the kingdom of heaven *is* as a man travelling into
a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered
15 *to* them his goods. And *to* one he gave five talents, to
another two, and to another one; to *each* according to
16 his *own* ability, and *immediately* took his journey. Then
he *who* had received the five talents, went and traded
17 with *them*, and *gained* other five talents. And likewise
he that had received *the* two, he also gained other two.
18 But he that had received *the* one, went and digged in
19 the earth, and hid his *master's* money. After a long
time the *master* of those servants cometh and reckoneth
20 with them. And . . he that had received *the* five
talents came and brought other five talents, saying, *Sir*,
thou deliveredst *to* me five talents, behold, I have gained
21 *to* them five talents more. His *master* said *to* him, Well
done, . . good and faithful servant: thou hast been
faithful over a few things; I will *set* thee . . over many
22 things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also
that had received *the* two talents, came and said, *Sir*,
thou deliveredst *to* me two talents; behold, I have gained
23 *to them* two other talents. . . His *master* said *to* him,
Well done, good and faithful servant: thou hast been
faithful over a few things; I will *set* thee . . over many
24 things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he
that had received the one talent came and said, *Sir*,
I knew that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou
hast not sown, and gathering *whence* thou hast not
25 scattered. *And being afraid, I* went and hid thy talent
26 in the earth; lo, . . thou hast *what* is thine. His *master*
answering said to him, Thou wicked and slothful servant,
thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather
27 whence I had not *scattered.* Thou oughtest therefore
to have put my money to the *bankers*, and . . at my
coming I should have received my own with *interest.*
28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it *to* him
29 *who* hath ten talents. For to every one that hath shall
be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him
that hath not shall be taken away even *what* he hath.
30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into *the* outer
darkness: there shall be *the* weeping and *the* gnashing
of teeth.

31 When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all
the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the
32 throne of his glory. And *all the nations shall be gathered*
before him, and he will separate them one from another,
33 as a shepherd *separateth the* sheep from the goats. And
he *will* set the sheep on his right hand, *and* the goats
34 on *his* left. Then *will* the king say *to* them on his right
hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the king-
dom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.
35 For I was *hungry*, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty,
and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took
36 me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye
37 visited me: I was in prison, and ye came *to* me. Then
will the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw
we thee *hungry*, and fed thee? Or thirsty, and gave thee
38 drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in?
39 Or naked, and clothed thee? Or when saw we thee sick
40 or in prison, and came *to* thee? And the king *will* answer
and say *to* them, Verily I say *to* you, inasmuch as ye
did it *to* one of the least of these my brethren, ye *did*
41 it *to* me. Then *will* he say . . *to* them on *his* left hand,
Depart from me, ye cursed, into *the* everlasting fire,
42 *which was* prepared for the devil and his angels. For I
was *hungry*, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty,
43 and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took
me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick and in
44 prison, and ye visited me not. Then *will* they also
answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee *hungry*, or
athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison,
45 and did not minister unto thee? Then *will* he answer
them, saying, Verily I say *to* you, inasmuch as ye did
it not unto one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.
46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment;
but the righteous into life *everlasting*.

26 And . . when Jesus had finished all these *dis-*
courses, he said *to* his disciples, Ye know that after
2 two days is the . . passover, and the Son of man is
3 betrayed to be crucified. Then . . the chief priests
and the scribes, and the elders of the people, *assembled*
together at the palace of the high priest, who was called
4 Caiaphas, And consulted *together how* they might *appre-*
5 *hend* Jesus by subtilty and kill him. But they said, Not
at the feast, . . lest there be a *tumult* among the people.
6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of
7 Simon the leper, There came *to* him a woman, having an
alabaster box of very *costly* ointment, and poured it on
8 his head, as he sat at *table*. But . . his disciples *seeing*
it, . . had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this

9 waste? For this . . might have been sold for much,
10 and given to the poor. . . Jesus *knowing* it, . . said *to*
them, Why trouble ye the woman? . . She hath wrought
11 a good work *on* me. For ye have the poor always with
12 you; but me ye have not always. For in . . *pouring*
this ointment on my body, she *hath done* it for my burial.
13 Verily I say *to* you, wheresoever this Gospel shall be
preached in the whole world, *this also which she hath*
done shall be spoken for a memorial *of* her.
14 Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, *going to*
15 the chief priests, . . said, What will ye give me, and I
will deliver him *to* you? And they *bargained* with him
16 for thirty pieces of silver. And from that time he
sought opportunity to *deliver* him.
17 *On* the first day of . . unleavened bread, the disciples
came *to* Jesus, saying *to* him, Where wilt thou that we
18 prepare for thee to eat the passover? And he said,
Go into the city to such a man, and say *to* him, The
Master saith, My time is at hand: I . . keep the pass-
19 over at thy house with my disciples. And the disciples
did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready
the passover.
20 . . When the *evening* was come, he sat down with the
21 twelve. And as they *ate* he said, Verily I say *to* you,
22 . . one of you *will* betray me. And they were exceeding
sorrowful and began *each of* them to say *to* him, Lord,
23 is it I? And he *answering*, said, He that dippeth his
24 hand with me in the dish, the same *will* betray me. The
Son of man *indeed* goeth as it is written of him: but wo
to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: it
had been good for that man if he had *never* been born.
25 Then Judas *who* betrayed him *answering* said, Master,
is it I? He saith to him, Thou hast said.
26 And *after* they *had eaten*, Jesus took *the* bread, and
blessed . . and brake . . and gave it to his disciples,
27 and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the
cup, and *having given* thanks, . . gave it to them, saying,
28 Drink ye all of it. For this is my blood of the new
testament, which is shed for many, for the remission of
29 sins. . . I say *to* you, I will not drink henceforth of
this fruit of the vine *till* that day when I drink it new
with you in my Father's kingdom.
30 And when they had sung *the* hymn, they went out
31 into the mount of Olives. Then saith Jesus *to* them,
All ye *will* be offended *at* me this night, for it is written,
I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock
32 shall be scattered . . But after I am risen . . , I will go
33 before you into Galilee. Peter *answering* said *to* him,
Though all . *should* be offended *at* thee, . . *I will*

34 never be offended. Jesus said *to* him, Verily I say *to*
thee, That *in* this *very* night before . . cock *crowing*
35 thou *wilt* deny me thrice. Peter *saith to* him, *If I must*
die with thee, *yet I will in nowise* deny thee. *In like*
manner also said all the disciples.
36 Then cometh Jesus with them *to* a place called Geth-
semane and saith *to* the disciples, Sit ye here, while I
37 go and pray yonder. And *taking* with him Peter and
the two sons of Zebedee, . . *he* began to be sorrowful
38 and *in deep anguish.* Then saith he *to* them, My soul
is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death, tarry ye here,
39 and watch with me. And *going* a little farther *he* fell
on his face and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be
possible, let this cup pass from me; *yet* not as I will,
40 but as thou wilt. And he cometh *to* the disciples, and
findeth them asleep, and saith *to* Peter, What! Could
41 *not ye* watch with me one hour? Watch and pray, that
ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing,
42 but the flesh is weak. *Again going away* the second time
he prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup *cannot* pass
43 . . from me, *unless* I drink it, thy will be done. And
coming, he findeth them asleep again; for their eyes were
44 *weighed down.* And *leaving* them, *he* went away again,
45 and prayed the third time, saying the same words. Then
cometh he to his disciples, and saith *to* them, Sleep on
now and take your rest: behold the hour is *come,* and
46 the Son of man is betrayed into the *hand* of sinners. Rise;
let us be going: behold he *that betrayeth me is at hand.*
47 And while he *was yet speaking,* lo, Judas one of the
twelve came, and with him a great multitude with
swords and *clubs* from the chief priests and elders of the
48 people. Now he that betrayed him *had given* them a
signal, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, . . is he; *seize*
49 him. . . And forthwith *coming* to Jesus, *he* said, Hail,
50 Master, and kissed him. And Jesus said *to* him, Friend,
wherefore art thou come? Then came they *up* and laid
51 hands on Jesus, and took him. And behold one of them
that were with Jesus, *stretching* out his hand, . . drew
his sword, and *striking the* servant of the high priest, . .
52 *cut* off his ear. Then said Jesus *to* him, Put up again
thy sword into its place; for all they that take the sword
53 shall perish *by* the sword. Thinkest thou that I cannot
ask my Father, and he *will* presently *send* me more than
54 twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the Scrip-
tures be fulfilled, that thus it must be *done?*
55 In that . . hour *Jesus said* to the multitudes, Are ye
come out as against a *robber,* with swords and *clubs* . .
to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple
56 and ye *apprehended me not.* But all this *is* done, that

the Scriptures . . might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him and fled.
57 And they that had *apprehended* Jesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders
58 were assembled. But Peter followed him afar off *to* the high priest's palace, and *going* in, . . sat with the
59 servants to see the end. Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council sought false witness against
60 Jesus, to put him to death, But found none; yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At
61 . . last came two false witnesses, And said, This fellow said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to
62 build it in three days. And the high priest *rising up* . . said *to* him, Answerest thou nothing? What *do these*
63 witness against thee? But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest *answering* said *to* him, I adjure thee by the living God, *to* . . tell us, *if* thou *art* the Christ, the
64 Son of God? Jesus saith *to* him, Thou hast said. *Moreover* I say *to* you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming *upon*
65 the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy: what farther need have we of witnesses? Behold now ye
66 have heard his blasphemy. What think ye? They
67 *answering* said, He is *worthy* of death. Then did they spit in his face and *buffet* him, and others smote him,
68 . . Saying, Prophesy *to* us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?
69 Now Peter sat without in the *hall*. And a *maid servant* came *to* him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus
70 of Galilee. But he denied before . . all, saying, I know
71 not what thou sayest. And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said *to* them that were there, This fellow *also was* with Jesus of Nazareth.
72 And again he denied with an oath, I *know not* the man.
73 And after awhile *they that stood by came* and said to Peter, Surely thou *art also* one of them; for thy speech *dis-*
74 *covereth* thee. Then began he to curse and to swear, . . I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.
75 And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, *who* said *to* him, Before cock *crowing* thou *wilt* deny me thrice. And *going* out *he* wept bitterly.

27 *In the morning*, all the chief priests and elders of the people *consulted together* against Jesus, to put him to
2 death. And *having* bound him, they led him away and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.
3 Then Judas *who* had betrayed him, *seeing that* he was condemned, *repenting* himself, . . brought *back* the

thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,
4 Saying, I have sinned in . . *betraying* . . innocent
blood. And they said, What is that to us? See thou
5 to *it.* And *having thrown* down the pieces of silver in
the temple, *he withdrew,* and *going away* hanged himself.
6 And the chief priests *taking the pieces of silver,* . . said,
It is not lawful . . to put them *in* the treasury, because
7 it is the price of blood. And *having consulted together,*
they bought with them the potter's field, to bury
8 *foreigners* in. Wherefore that field was called the field
9 of blood unto this day. Then was fulfilled what was
spoken by . . the prophet, saying, And they took the
thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued,
10 whom they of the children of Israel did value, And gave
them for the potter's field, as the Lord *commanded* me.
11 And Jesus stood before the governor. And the gov-
ernor *questioned* him, saying, Art thou the king of the
12 Jews? And Jesus said *to* him, Thou sayest. *But while*
he was accused *by* the chief priests and elders, he
13 answered nothing. Then said Pilate *to* him, Hearest
thou not how many things they witness against thee?
14 And he answered him to never a word, *so* that the gover-
nor marvelled greatly.
15 Now at *every* feast the governor was wont to release
16 *to* the people a prisoner, whom they would. And they
17 had then a *notorious* prisoner, *named* Barabbas. There-
fore when they were gathered together, Pilate said *to*
them, Whom will ye that I release *to* you? Barabbas,
18 or Jesus *who* is called Christ? For he knew that for
envy they had delivered him.
19 *While he sat* on the judgment seat, his wife sent *to*
him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just
man; for I have suffered many things *to-day* in a dream
20 because of him. But the chief priests and elders per-
suaded the multitude . . *to* ask Barabbas, and destroy
21 Jesus. The governor *answering,* . . said *to* them, *Which*
of the *two* will ye that I release *to* you? They said,
22 Barabbas. Pilate *said* to them, What shall I do then
with Jesus *who* is called Christ? They . . say *to* him,
23 Let him be crucified. And the governor said, Why,
what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more
24 *vehemently,* saying, Let him be crucified. *Then* Pilate,
seeing that he could prevail nothing, but . . rather a
tumult was made *taking water* . . washed his hands
before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood
25 of this just *man:* see ye to it. Then *all the people*
answering said, His blood be on us, and on our children.
26 Then released he Barabbas *to* them, and *having* scourged
Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

27 Then the soldiers of the governor *taking* Jesus into
the common hall . . gathered *to* him the whole *troop.*
28 And *stripping* him *they* put on him a scarlet robe, And
29 *platting* a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head,
and a *cane* in his right hand; and *kneeling* before him,
30 *they* mocked him, saying, Hail, king of the Jews. And
spitting on him, *they* took the *cane* and smote him on the
31 head. And after . . they had mocked him, they
stripped him of the robe, and put his own raiment on
32 him, and led him away to crucify him. And *coming* out
they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they
compelled to bear his cross.
33 And *coming* to a place called Golgotha, that is, *the*
34 place of a skull, They gave him vinegar *mingled with*
gall to drink, and when he had tasted thereof, he would
35 not drink. And *having* crucified him *they* parted his
garments, casting lots, that it might be fulfilled which
was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments
36 among them, and *for* my vesture . . they cast lots. And
37 sitting down they *guarded* him there, And set up over
his head his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS, THE
38 KING OF THE JEWS. Then were . . two *robbers* crucified with him, one on the right hand and *one* on the left.
39 And they that *were passing* by reviled him, wagging
40 their heads and saying, Thou that destroyest the temple,
and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be
the Son of God, come down from the cross.
41 *In like manner the chief priests also with the scribes and*
42 *elders mocking him,* said, He saved others: *Cannot he*
save himself? If he be the King of Israel, let him now
43 come down from the cross, and we will believe him. He
trusted in God: let him deliver him now if he will have
44 him; for he said, I am the Son of God. *And even the*
robbers that were crucified with him, cast the same
reproach upon him.
45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all
46 the *earth,* unto the ninth hour. And about the ninth
hour, Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli,
lama sabachthani? That is . . , My God, my God,
47 why hast thou forsaken me? Some of them that stood
48 there *hearing it,* said, *He* calleth . . *Elijah.* And *immediately* one of them *running* and *taking* a sponge . .
filled it with vinegar, and putting it on a *cane,* gave him
49 to drink. The rest said, Let be: let us see whether
Elijah will come to save him.
50 Jesus *having* cried again with a loud voice, *dismissed*
his spirit.
51 And behold the veil of the temple was rent in twain
from the top to the bottom, and the earth *was shaken*

52 and the rocks *were torn asunder:* And the *tombs* were
opened, and many bodies of *holy men that* slept *were*
53 *raised,* And *coming* out of the *tombs* after his resurrec-
tion, . . went into the holy city and appeared *to* many.
54 . . *And* the centurion and they that were with him,
guarding Jesus, *seeing* the earthquake and *the* things
that were done, . . feared greatly saying, Truly this
was the Son of God.
55 And many women were there, beholding afar off, *who*
56 *had* followed Jesus from Galilee, *serving* him. Among
whom were Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of
James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.
57 *In the evening,* there came a rich man of Arimathea,
named Joseph, who also himself was *a disciple of Jesus.*
58 He *going* to Pilate, *asked* the body of Jesus: then Pilate
59 commanded the body to be delivered. And . . Joseph
taking the body . . wrapped it in . . clean linen . . ,
60 And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn
out in the rock, and *having* rolled a great stone to the
61 door of the tomb . . , departed. And *Mary Magdalene*
was there and the other Mary, sitting over against the
sepulchre.
62 Now *on the morrow, the day after the day of preparation,*
the chief priests and Pharisees *were gathered* together *to*
63 Pilate, Saying, Sir, we remember that *impostor* said while
64 he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. Com-
mand therefore that the sepulchre be *secured till* the
third day, lest his disciples *coming* . . steal him away,
and say *to* the people, He is risen from the dead; so the
65 last *imposture* shall be worse than the first. Pilate
said *to* them, Ye have a *guard;* go . . make it as *secure*
66 as *you* can. So they went and *secured the sepulchre,*
sealing the stone, and setting a *guard.*

28 *Now after* the Sabbath, as it began to dawn toward
the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and
2 the other Mary, to see the sepulchre. And behold there
had been a great earthquake, *and an* angel of the Lord
descending from heaven, *had come* and rolled *away* the
3 stone from the door and sat upon it. His countenance
4 was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow. And
for fear of him the *guards trembled,* and became as dead
5 men. But the angel *answering* said *to* the women, Fear
not ye; for I know . . ye seek Jesus *who* was crucified.
6 He is not here; *for* he is risen, as he said: come, see the
7 place where the Lord lay. And *going* quickly . . tell
his disciples that he is risen from the dead. And behold
he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him.
8 Lo, I have told you. And *departing* quickly from the

sepulchre with fear and great joy, *they ran to tell his disciples.* *And* . . behold Jesus met them *and said,*
9 *Hail.* And they *coming to him took hold of his feet* and
10 worshipped him. Then said Jesus *to* them, *Fear not.* Go, tell my brethren *to go* into Galilee, and there *shall they* see me.
11 *While* they were going, behold some of the *guard coming* into the city, . . *told* . . the chief priests all the
12 things that *had been* done. And *having met together* with the elders and *consulted,* they gave *much* money *to* the
13 soldiers, Saying, Say, . . his disciples came by night,
14 and stole him while we slept. And if *the governor hear*
15 *this* we will persuade him and secure you. So they *taking* the money . . did as they were taught, and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews *till* this day.
16 Then the eleven disciples went . . into Galilee *to* the
17 mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him they worshipped him, *though* some *had*
18 doubted. And Jesus *coming* spake *to* them, saying,
19 All power is given . . me in heaven and in earth: Go ye *and disciple* all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:
20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you *always,* even *to* the end of the world.

THE
GOSPEL according to ST. MARK

CHAPTER I

1 The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son
2 of God: As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send
my messenger before thy face, *who* shall prepare thy
3 way before thee. The voice of one crying *aloud* in the
wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his
4 paths straight. John *was baptizing* in the wilderness
and preaching the baptism of repentance, for the remis-
5 sion of sins. And there went out *to* him all the *country*
of Judea, and *all* they of Jerusalem, and were . . bap-
tized of him in the river . . Jordan, confessing their sins.
6 And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a
leathern girdle about his loins, and . . *ate* locusts and
7 wild honey, And *proclaimed*, saying, There cometh *after*
me one mightier than I, the latchet of whose shoes I am
8 not worthy to stoop down and unloose. I indeed have
baptized you with water; but he *will* baptize you with
9 the Holy Ghost. And . . in those days, . . Jesus came
from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized *by* John *at*
10 Jordan. And coming up *from* the water, *straightway* he
saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit *as* a dove
11 descending upon him. And *a voice came* from heaven,
saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I *delight.*
12 And immediately the Spirit *thrusteth* him *out* into the
13 wilderness. And he was there in the wilderness forty
days, tempted *by* Satan; and was with the wild beasts:
and the angels *served* him.
14 Now after . . John was put in prison, Jesus came into
Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdom of God, . .
15 Saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is
16 at hand: repent ye, and believe the Gospel. *And walking*
by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his
brother casting a net into the sea (for they were *fisher-*
17 *men*). And Jesus said *to* them, Come ye after me, and
18 I will make you . . fishers of men. And straightway
19 *leaving* their nets, *they followed* him. And *having gone*
thence a little farther, he saw James the son of Zebedee,
and John his brother, who *were also* in the *vessel* mending
20 their nets: And . . he called them; and *immediately*

leaving their father Zebedee in the *vessel* with the hired servants, *they* went after him.

21 And they *go* into Capernaum. And straightway on the Sabbath, he *went* into the synagogue and taught.
22 And they were astonished at his *teaching;* for he taught them as one *having* authority, and not as the scribes.
23 And there was in their synagogue a man *having* an
24 unclean spirit, and he cried out, Saying, Let us alone: what have we to do with thee, . . Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou
25 art, the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him,
26 saying, Hold thy peace and come out of him. And the unclean spirit *having* torn him, and cried with a loud
27 noise, . . came out of him. And they were all amazed, *so* that they questioned among themselves, saying, What . . is this? What new *teaching* is this? For with authority *he commandeth* even the unclean spirits, and
28 they . . obey him. And immediately his fame *went forth into* all the *country of Galilee round about.*

29 And *coming* out of the synagogue, they entered *forthwith* into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James
30 and John. *And* Simon's wife's mother lay *ill* of a fever,
31 and *immediately* they tell him of her. And he came, and *taking* her by the hand, . . lifted her up; and *straightway* the fever left her, and she *waited on* them.
32 And *in the evening,* when the sun *was* set, they brought *to* him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed
33 with devils. And *the whole* city was gathered together
34 at the door. And he healed many that were *ill* of divers diseases, and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils to *say that* they knew him.

35 And in the morning, rising . . a great while before day, he went out and departed into a *desert* place, and
36 *prayed there.* And Simon and they that were with him
37 followed after him. And *having* found him, they *say to*
38 him, All men seek . . thee. And he saith *to* them, Let us go *to* the *neighbouring* towns, that I may preach there
39 also: for therefore *am I come.* And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

40 And there came *to him a leper* beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying *to* him, If thou wilt,
41 thou canst make me clean. And Jesus, moved with *tender* compassion, *stretching out* his hand, . . touched
42 him, and saith *to* him, I will: be thou clean. And *when he had spoken,* immediately the leprosy departed from
43 him, and he was *made clean.* And *having* straitly charged
44 him, *he* forthwith sent him away, And saith *to* him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go . . , show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing *what* Moses

45 commanded for a testimony *to* them. But he *going* out
. . published it much, and . . blazed abroad the matter,
so he could no more openly enter into the city; but *he*
was without in desert places: and they came to him
from every quarter.

2 And again he entered into Capernaum after some days:
and it was *heard* that he was in the house. And . .
2 many were gathered together, *so* that there was no room
for them, no, not *even* about the door. And he *spake* the
3 word *to* them. And they came *to* him, bringing *a*
4 *paralytic*, . . borne of four. And . . *not being able* to
come nigh him for the *crowd*, they uncovered the roof
where he was, and *having* broken it up, they let down the
5 *couch* whereon the *paralytic* lay. Jesus *seeing* their faith,
. . said to the *paralytic*, Son, thy sins *are* forgiven thee.
6 But . . certain of the scribes *were* sitting there, and
7 reasoning in their hearts, Why doth this man thus speak
blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God only?
8 And Jesus *immediately knowing* in his spirit that they so
reasoned *in* themselves, . . said *to* them, Why reason
9 ye *thus* in your hearts? *Which* is easier? To say to the
paralytic, Thy sins *are* forgiven thee? Or to say, Arise,
10 and take up thy *couch*, and walk? But that ye may
know that the Son of man hath *authority* on earth to
11 forgive sins: (He saith to the *paralytic*) I say *to* thee,
12 Arise, . . take up thy *couch*, and go *to* thine house. And
immediately he arose, and *taking* up *his couch*, . . went
forth before them all; *so* that they were all amazed, and
glorified God, saying, We never saw it *thus*.
13 And he went forth again by the sea side, and all the
14 multitude *came* to him, and he taught them. And
passing by he saw Levi, the son of Alpheus, sitting at the
receipt of custom, and *saith to* him, Follow me. And he
15 arose and followed him. And . . as Jesus sat at meat
in his house, many publicans *also* and sinners sat together
with Jesus and his disciples; for there were many, and
16 they followed him. And . . the scribes and Pharisees
seeing him *eating* with publicans and sinners, . . said to
his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with
17 publicans and sinners? *And* Jesus *hearing* it saith *to*
them, They that are whole *need not a* physician but they
that are sick: I came not to call the righteous but
18 sinners. . . *Now* the disciples of John and the Pharisees
used to fast: and they come and say *to* him, Why do
the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy
19 disciples fast not? And Jesus said *to* them, Can the
children of the bride chamber fast while the bridegroom
is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom

20 with them they cannot fast. But the days will come,
when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them;
21 and then shall they fast in those days. No man . .
seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment: else the
new piece that filleth it up taketh away from the old,
22 and the rent is made worse. And no man putteth new
wine into old *leathern* bottles; else the new wine *bursteth*
the bottles, and the wine is *spilt*, and the bottles *are lost:*
but new wine must be put into new bottles.
23 And . . he went through the corn fields on the Sab-
bath day; and his disciples . . as they went . . plucked
24 the ears of corn. And the Pharisees said *to* him, Behold,
why do they on the Sabbath that which is not lawful?
25 And he said *to* them, Have ye never read what David
did, when he had need and was *hungry*, he and they that
26 were with him? How he went into the house of God in
the days of Abiathar the high priest, and *ate* the show
bread, which is not lawful *for* any *but* the priests *to eat,*
27 and gave also to them *who* were with him? And he said
to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man
28 for the Sabbath. *Moreover* the Son of man is Lord *even*
of the Sabbath.

3 And he entered *again* into the synagogue: and there
was a man there *who had* a withered hand. And they
2 watched him whether he would heal him on the Sabbath
3 . . , that they might accuse him. And he saith *to* the
man *that* had the withered hand, Stand *up in the midst.*
4 And he saith *to* them, Is it lawful to do good on the
Sabbath, or to do evil? To save life, or to kill? But
5 they held their peace. And *looking* round . . *upon* them
with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts,
he *saith to* the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he
6 stretched it *forth:* and his hand was restored. . . And
the Pharisees *going out*, . . straightway took counsel with
the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him.
7 *Then* Jesus withdrew . . with his disciples to the sea;
and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and
8 from Judea, And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and
from beyond Jordan; and they about Tyre and Sidon,
a great multitude, *having* heard what great things he
9 did, came *to* him. And he spake to his disciples, that a
vessel should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest
10 they should throng him. For he had healed many, *so*
that they *rushed in* upon him . . , as many as had
11 plagues. And *the* unclean spirits when they saw him,
fell down before him and cried, saying, Thou art the
12 Son of God. And he *strictly* charged them . . not *to*
13 make him known. And he goeth up into *the* mountain,

and calleth *to* him whom he would, and they came *to*
14 him. And he ordained twelve, that they *might* be with
15 him, and that he might send them forth to preach, And
to have power to heal *diseases* and . . cast out devils.
16 And Simon he surnamed Peter: And James the son of
Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he sur-
18 named them Boanerges, *that* is, sons of thunder), And
Andrew and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew,
and Thomas, and James the son of Alpheus, and Thad-
19 deus, and Simon the Canaanite, And Judas Iscariot, *who*
also betrayed him.
20 And they *come* into a house: and the multitude cometh
together again, so that they could not so much as eat
21 bread. And *his relations hearing* of it, *came* out to lay
22 hold on him; for they said, He is beside himself. *But*
the scribes *who had come* down from Jerusalem said, He
hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth
23 he out devils. And *calling* them *to* him, *he* said *to* them
24 in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? . . If a
kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot
25 stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that
26 house cannot stand. . . If Satan then *be risen* up and . .
divided *against himself*, he cannot stand, but hath an
27 end. *None* can enter into *the* strong one's house and
plunder his goods, *unless* he . . first bind the strong one,
28 and then he will *plunder* his house. Verily I say *to* you,
All sins shall be forgiven . . the sons of men, and
29 blasphemies wherewith soever they *shall* blaspheme, But
he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath
never forgiveness, but is *liable to* eternal damnation:
30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit. Then
31 *come* his brethren and his mother, and standing without,
32 sent *to* him, calling him. And the multitude sat about
him: and they *say to* him, Behold, thy mother and thy
33 brethren without seek for thee. And he answered them,
34 saying, Who is my mother or my brethren? And *looking*
round . . on them *who* sat about him, *he* said, Behold
35 my mother and my brethren. For whosoever shall do
the will of God, the same is my brother and sister and
mother.

4 And *again he taught* by the sea side, and a great
multitude *was gathered to* him, so that *going* into the
vessel, *he* sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by
2 the sea on the land. And he taught them many things
3 by parables, and said *to* them in his *teaching*, Hearken:
4 Behold, . . a sower *went out* to sow. And . . as he
sowed, some fell by the *highway* side, and the *birds* came
5 and devoured it. . . And some fell on stony ground,

where it had not much earth: and immediately it *sprung*
6 up, because it had no depth of earth. But when the
sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it
7 withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the
thorns grew up and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.
8 And other fell on good ground, and *yielded* fruit *springing*
up and *increasing*, and brought forth some thirty, and
9 some sixty, and some *a* hundred. And he said . . , he
that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
10 And when he was alone, they that were about him,
11 with the twelve, asked him of the parable. And he
said *to* them, *To* you it is given to know the mystery of
the kingdom of God: but *to* them that are without all . .
12 things are . . in parables; *So* that seeing they . . see,
and *do* not perceive, and hearing they . . hear, and *do*
not understand; lest at any time they should be con-
verted, and their sins should be forgiven them.
13 And he *saith to* them, Know ye not this parable? . .
14 How then will ye know all parables? The sower soweth
15 the word. And these are they by the *highway* side,
where the word is sown: but when they have heard,
Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word
16 . . sown in their hearts. And these are they likewise
who have *received the seed* on stony ground, who when
they have heard the word immediately receive it with
17 *joy: But* have not root in themselves, *but are only* for a
time, afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth
18 *because* of the word, they are *presently* offended. And
these are they *that have received it among* thorns, *who* hear
19 the word, And the cares of this world, and the deceit-
fulness of riches, and the *desire* of other things entering
20 in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. And
these are they *that have received it* on *the* good ground,
who hear the word and receive it, and bring forth fruit,
21 some thirty fold, some sixty, and some *a* hundred. And
he said *to* them, Is a candle brought to be put under a
bushel or under a bed, and not to be set on a candlestick?
22 For there is nothing hid, which shall not be *made*
manifest, neither was any thing kept secret, but that it
23 *might* come abroad. If any man hath ears to hear, let
24 him hear. And he said *to* them, Take heed what ye
hear. With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured
25 to you, and *to* you that hear, shall more be given. For
he that hath, to him shall be given; and he that hath
not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.
26 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man
27 should cast seed into the ground, And should sleep and
rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow
28 up he knoweth not how. For the earth bringeth forth

fruit of *itself*, first the blade, then the ear, after that
29 the . . corn in the ear. But when the fruit is brought
forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the
harvest is come.
30 And he said, Whereto shall we liken the kingdom of
God? Or with what comparison shall we compare it?
31 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which when it is
sown in the earth, *it* is *one of the least* seeds that *is* in the
32 earth. But when it is sown it groweth up and becometh
greater than all herbs, and *putteth forth* great branches,
so that the *birds* of the air may lodge under the shadow
33 of it. And with many such parables spake he the word
34 *to* them, as they were able to hear. . . But without a
parable spake he not *to* them: and *in private* he expounded
all things to his disciples.
35 And the same day *in the evening* he saith *to* them, Let
36 us *go* over *to* the other side. And *having* sent away the
multitude, they *take* him . . as he was in the *vessel*.
37 And there were . . with him other little *vessels*. And
there *ariseth* a great storm of wind, and the waves beat
38 into the *vessel*, so that it was now full. *But* he was
asleep on the pillow, in the stern. And they awake him
and say *to* him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?
39 And he arose and rebuked the wind, and said *to* the
sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there
40 was a great calm. And he *saith to* them, Why are ye so
41 fearful? How is it, that ye have not faith? And they
feared exceedingly, and said one to another, *Who* . . is
this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

5 And they came . . to the other side of the sea, into
country of the Gadarenes. And *as he came* out of the
2 *vessel*, there met him *immediately* out of the tombs a man
3 with an unclean spirit, Who had his dwelling *in* the
tombs, and no man could bind him, no, not with chains.
4 *For* . . he *had often been* bound with fetters and chains,
and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and
the fetters broken in pieces; *and no man could* tame him.
5 And always, night and day, he was in the *tombs* and in
the *mountains*, crying and cutting himself with stones.
6 But *seeing* Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,
7 And *crying* with a loud voice, . . said, What have I
to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God?
8 I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not. (For
he *had* said *to* him, Come out of the man, thou unclean
9 spirit.) And he asked him, What is thy name? And
he . . *saith to him*, My name is Legion; for we are many.
10 And he *earnestly* besought him, that he would not send
11 them away out of the country. Now there was there *at*

12 the mountain a great herd of swine feeding. And all the
devils besought him, saying, Send us *to* the swine, that
13 we may *go* into them. And Jesus *forthwith* gave them
leave. And the unclean spirits *going* out, . . entered
into the swine, and the herd *rushed* down *the* steep into
the sea, (they were about two thousand,) and were
14 *stifled* in the sea. And they that fed the swine fled,
and told it in the city and in the country. And they
15 went out to see what it was that was done. And they
come to Jesus, and see *the demoniac who had* had the
Legion, sitting and clothed and in his right mind: and
16 they were afraid. And they that saw it told them how
it befell *the demoniac*, and . . concerning the swine.
17 And they . . *prayed* him to depart out of their coasts.
18 And *as he went* into the *vessel*, he that had been possessed
with the *devils*, *besought* him that he might be with him.
19 *But he* suffered him not, but *said to* him, Go home to
thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord
hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.
20 And he departed and *published* in Decapolis, how great
things Jesus had done for him. And all men *marvelled*.
21 And when Jesus was passed over again *in the vessel to*
the other side, *a great multitude was* gathered *to* him, and
22 he was *near* the sea. And . . there cometh one of the
rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and *seeing* him,
23 *falleth* at his feet, And besought him greatly, saying,
My little daughter *is* at the point of death: . . come
and lay thy hands on her that she may be healed, and
24 she shall live. And *he* went with him, and *a great*
25 *multitude* followed him and thronged him. And a cer-
tain woman *who* had had *a flux* of blood twelve years,
26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and
had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered,
27 but rather *grown* worse, *Having* heard of Jesus, came in
28 the *crowd* behind, and touched his garment. For she
29 said, If I . . *but* touch his clothes, I shall be whole. And
the fountain of her blood was *straightway* dried up, and
she *perceived* in her body that she was healed of that
30 plague. And Jesus immediately knowing in himself *the*
virtue *which* had gone out of him, *turning* about in the
31 *crowd* . . said, Who touched my clothes? And his dis-
ciples said *to* him, Thou seest the multitude thronging
32 thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me? And he looked
33 round . . to see her that had done this. . . *And* the
woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done
in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all
34 the truth. And he said to her, Daughter, thy faith
hath made thee whole: go in peace, and *continue* whole
35 of thy plague. While he *was yet speaking*, they came

from the ruler of the synagogue's house, *saying*, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the Master *farther?*
36 *When* Jesus heard the word . . spoken, he saith *to* the
37 ruler of the synagogue, *Fear not;* only believe. And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter and James,
38 and John the brother of James. And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth a tumult,
39 and them that wept and wailed greatly. And *coming* in, he *saith to* them, Why make ye this *tumult* and weep?
40 The damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. But *having* put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel and them that were with him, and *goeth* in where the damsel was lying.
41 And *taking* the damsel by the hand, *he* said *to* her, Talitha cumi, which is, being interpreted, Damsel (I say
42 *to* thee) arise. And straightway the damsel arose and walked: for she was . . twelve years *old.* And they
43 were astonished with a great astonishment. And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it, and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

6 And he went out from thence, and came into his own country, and his disciples follow him. And on the
2 Sabbath . . he . . *taught* in the synagogue, and many hearing . . were astonished, saying, . . Whence hath this man these things? And what wisdom is this *that* is given . . him, *and* such mighty works *as* are wrought
3 by his hands? Is not this the carpenter? The son of Mary, *the* brother of James and Joses, and of *Jude* and Simon! . . Are not his sisters here with us? And they
4 were offended at him. *And* Jesus said *to* them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country,
5 and among his own kindred, and in his own house. And he could do no *miracle there,* save that he laid his hands
6 on a few sick . . , and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about *through* the villages teaching.
7 And he called *to* him the twelve, and . . *sent* them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean
8 spirits; And commanded them . . *to* take nothing for their journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no
9 money in their purse; But be shod with sandals, and
10 *put not* on two coats. And he said *to* them, *Wheresoever* ye enter into *a* house, there abide till ye depart from
11 that place. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, *departing* thence shake off the dust *under* your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say *to* you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in

12 the day of judgment than for that city. And they
13 went out and preached that men should repent. And
they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many
that were sick, and healed them.
14 And King Herod heard (for his name was spread
abroad) and he said, . . John the Baptist *is* risen from
the dead, and therefore *these* mighty powers *exert* them-
15 selves in him. Others *say*, *It* is *Elijah:* and others *said*,
16 It is a prophet, . . as one of the prophets. But Herod
hearing thereof, . . said, *This* is John whom I beheaded:
17 he is risen from the dead. For Herod himself had sent
. . and *apprehended* John, and bound him in prison, for
Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife, for he had
18 married her. For John had said *to* Herod, It is not
19 lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife. Therefore
Herodias *was incensed* against him, and *was desirous to*
20 have killed him; but she could not: For Herod *rever-*
enced John, knowing that he was a just and . . holy
man, and *preserved* him: and when he heard him he did
21 many things, and heard him gladly. And a convenient
day *being* come, *when* Herod on his birthday made a
feast for his lords, . . captains, and *principal men* of
22 Galilee: . . When the daughter of . . Herodias *had*
come in and danced and pleased Herod and *his guests*,
the king said *to* the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou
23 wilt, and I will give it thee. And he *swore* to her,
Whatsoever thou shalt ask me, I will give . . thee, *to*
24 the half of my kingdom. And *going out, she* said *to* her
mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of
25 John the Baptist. And *coming in quickly* with haste *to*
the king, *she* asked, saying, I will that thou give me
immediately in a charger the head of John the Baptist.
26 And the king was exceeding sorry: yet for his oath's
sake, and for *the* sake of *his guests*, he would not reject
27 her. And immediately the king sent *one of his guard*,
and commanded his head to be brought. And he went
28 and beheaded him in the prison, and brought his
head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel, and
29 the damsel gave it to her mother. And *the* disciples
hearing it, came and took up his corpse and laid it in
a tomb.
30 And the *apostles* gathered themselves together *to* Jesus,
and told him all things, both what they had done and
31 what they had taught. And he said *to* them, Come ye
yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a *little*.
For there were many coming and going, and they had no
32 leisure so much as to eat. And they departed into a
33 deserted place by *boat* privately. And *many* saw them
departing and . . knew him, and ran *on* foot thither

from all the cities and outwent them, and came together
34 *to* him. And Jesus *coming* out saw *a great multitude*, and
was moved with *tender* compassion *for* them: because
they were as sheep *having no* shepherd and he . . *taught*
35 them many things. And when the day was now far
spent, *the* disciples *coming* to him . . said, This is a
36 desert place, and *it is* now *late*, Send them away, that
they may go into the country and . . villages *round*
about, and buy themselves bread, for they have nothing
37 to eat. He *answering* said *to* them, Give ye them to eat.
And they say *to* him, Shall we go and buy two hundred
38 pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat? He saith *to*
them, How many loaves have ye? Go and see. And
39 when they knew, they *said*, Five, and two fishes. And
he commanded them to make all sit down by companies
40 *on* the green grass. And they sat down in ranks by
41 hundreds and by fifties. And *taking* the five loaves and
the two fishes, *looking* up to heaven *he* blessed, and brake
the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before
them; and *he divided the two fishes* among them all.
42 And they all *ate* and were *satisfied*. And they took up
twelve baskets full of the fragments and of the fishes.
44 And they that *had eaten* of the loaves were about five
thousand men.
45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to *go* into
the *vessel*, and . . go before *to the other side toward*
46 Bethsaida, while he sent *away the people*. And *having*
47 sent them away, he *went to the* mountain to pray, And
in the evening the *vessel* was in the midst of the sea, and
48 he alone on the land. And he saw them toiling in
rowing; (for the wind was contrary *to* them;) and about
the fourth watch of the night he cometh to them, walking
49 *on* the sea, and would have passed by them. But they
seeing him walking *on* the sea, . . supposed it *to be* an
50 *apparition*, and cried out. (For they all saw him and
were troubled.) And immediately he *spoke* with them,
and saith *to* them, *Take courage:* it is I; be not afraid.
51 And he went up *to* them into the *vessel*, and the wind
ceased: and they were . . amazed in themselves *above*
52 measure and wondered. For they considered not the
miracle of the loaves; for their heart was hardened.
53 And *having* passed over, they came *to* the land of
54 Gennesaret, and drew to . . shore. And when they
55 were come out of the *vessel* they knew him, And ran
through that whole country round about, and . . *brought*
about in beds *them* that were *ill*, where they heard he
56 was. And *wheresoever* he entered into villages, . . cities,
or country *places*, they laid the sick in the *public places*,
and besought him that they might touch if it were but

the *hem* of his garment; and as many as touched him were made whole.

7 Then *assembled* together *to* him the Pharisees and
certain of the scribes *coming* from Jerusalem. And . .
2 they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled,
3 that is . . , unwashen hands. . . *Now* the Pharisees
and all the Jews, except they wash their hands *to the*
4 *wrist*, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And
coming from the market, *unless* they wash, they eat not:
and many other things there *are* which they have received
to hold, . . the washing of cups and pots *and* brazen
5 vessels and *couches*. Then the Pharisees and the scribes
ask him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the
tradition of the elders, but eat bread with *defiled* hands?
6 He *answering* said *to* them, Well hath *Isaiah* prophesied
of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people honour-
eth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.
7 *But* in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines
8 the commandments of men. For *leaving* the command-
ment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, . . the
washing of pots and cups: and many other such like
9 things ye do. And he said to them, Full well ye *abolish*
the *commandments* of God, that ye may keep your own
10 tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy
mother, and, Whoso *revileth* father or mother, *he shall*
11 *surely die*. But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or
mother, *It* is Corban, that is . . a gift, by whatsoever
thou mightest *have been* profited by me; he shall be free.
12 And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or
13 his mother; *Abrogating* the word of God *by* your tradi-
tion which ye have delivered; *and* many such like things
14 *ye do*. And *calling together* all the *multitude* he said *to*
them, Hearken *to* me every one of you and *consider*.
15 There is nothing *entering into a man from without which*
can defile him; but the things which come out of him,
16 *these* are they that defile the man. If any man have ears
17 to hear, let him hear. And when he was *come* from the
multitude into the house his disciples asked him concerning
18 the parable. And he *saith to* them, Are *even* ye so without
understanding . . ? Do ye not perceive that whatsoever
. . *entereth into a man from without* cannot defile him,
19 Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly,
20 and goeth . . into the *vault*, purging all meats? And
he said, That which cometh out of the man, that
21 defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of
man proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications,
22 murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, las-
23 civiousness, *envy*, *evil speaking*, pride, foolishness. All

these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

24 *And* he arose and went *thence* into the borders of Tyre and Sidon. And *entering* into *a* house . . he would have *had* no man know it; but he could not be hid.
25 For a . . woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, *having* heard of him, came and fell at his feet,
26 (The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation,) and . . besought him . . *to* cast . . the devil out of
27 her daughter. But Jesus said *to* her, Let the children first be *satisfied;* for it is not *right* to take the children's
28 bread and cast it *to* the dogs. She answered and said *to* him, *True,* Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of
29 the children's crumbs. And he said *to* her, For this saying, go . . : the devil is gone out of thy daughter.
30 And *going* to her house, she found . . her daughter lying on the bed, *and the devil gone out.*
31 And *departing again* from the *borders* of Tyre and Sidon, he came *to* the Sea of Galilee, through the midst
32 of the *country* of Decapolis. And they bring *to* him one that was deaf and *dumb,* and . . beseech him to put his
33 hand upon him. And *taking* him aside from the multitude, *he* put his fingers into his ears, and *spitting,* . .
34 touched his tongue. And looking up to heaven, he *groaned* and saith *to* him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.
35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of
36 his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. And he charged them *to* tell no man; but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it.
37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear and the dumb to speak.

8 In those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, *calling to him* his disciples, *he*
2 saith *to* them, I have compassion on the multitude, because they *continue with me now* three days and have
3 nothing to eat. And if I send them away fasting to their own *home,* they will faint by the way; for divers
4 of them came from far. And his disciples answered him, . . Whence can *one* satisfy these men with bread
5 here in the wilderness? And he asked them, How
6 many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven. And he commanded the *multitude* to sit down on the ground; and *taking* the seven loaves, *having given* thanks, *he* brake and gave to his disciples to set before them; and
7 they did set them before the people. And they had a few small fishes: and *having* blessed them, *he* commanded
8 to set them also before them. So they did eat and were

satisfied; and they took up *fragments that were left,*
9 seven baskets. And they that had eaten were about
four thousand: and he sent them away.
10 And straightway *going into the vessel* with his disciples,
he came into the parts of Dalmanutha.
11 And the Pharisees came forth and *questioned* with him,
12 seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him. And
sighing deeply in his spirit, *he* said, Why doth this genera-
tion seek . . a sign? Verily I say *to* you, There shall
13 no sign be given *to* this generation. And he left them;
and *going* into the *vessel* again, *went* to the other side.
14 Now *they* had forgotten to take bread; *nor* had they
15 in the *vessel* with them *any* more than one loaf. And
he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the
leaven of the Pharisees and . . the leaven of Herod.
16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, . . We
17 have no bread. And Jesus *knowing* it, *said to* them,
Why reason ye because ye have no bread? Perceive
ye not yet, neither *consider?* Have ye your heart yet
18 hardened? Having eyes, see ye not? And having ears,
19 hear ye not? And do *not ye* remember? When I brake
the five loaves among *the* five thousand, how many
baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say *to*
20 him, Twelve. And when the seven among *the* four
thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye
21 up? And they said, Seven. And he said *to* them,
How is it that ye do not understand?
22 And he cometh to Bethsaida. And they bring *to* him
23 *a blind man,* and *beseech* him to touch him. And *taking*
the blind man by the hand, *he* led him out of the town,
and *having* spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him,
24 he asked him if he saw aught? And *looking* up *he* said,
25 I see men as trees walking. *Then* he put his hands
again *on* his eyes, and made him look up, and he was
26 restored, and saw *all* men clearly. And he sent him
away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town,
nor tell it to any in the town.
27 And Jesus went out and his disciples into the towns
of Caesarea, Philippi. And *in* the way he asked his
disciples, saying *to* them, Whom do men say that I am?
28 And they answered, John the Baptist; but some say
29 *Elijah;* and others, one of the prophets. And he saith
to them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter
30 *answering,* . . saith *to* him, Thou art the Christ. And
he charged them that they should tell no man of him.
31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must
suffer many things, and be rejected *by* the elders and . .
the chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and after
32 three days rise again. And he spake that saying openly.

33 And Peter *taking hold of* him, . . *rebuked* him. *But he turning* about, and *looking* on his disciples, . . rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan; for thou savourest not the things . . of God, but the things . . of men.

34 And when he had called the people *to* him, with his disciples also, he said *to* them, Whosoever *is willing to* come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross and follow me.

35 For whosoever *desireth to* save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life, for my sake and the
36 Gospel's, . . shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own
37 soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?
38 *For* whosoever . . shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him *shall also* the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

9 And he said *to* them, Verily I say unto you, *there are* some of them that stand here, *who* shall not taste of death till they *see* the kingdom of God *coming* with power.

2 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter and James and John, and *carrieth* them up into a high mountain, by themselves *apart*, and . . was transfigured
3 before them. And his *garments* became shining exceeding white, as snow, *such* as no fuller on earth can *whiten*.
4 And there appeared *to* them *Elijah* with Moses, and they
5 were talking with Jesus. And Peter *answering*, *saith* to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three *tents*, one for thee, and one for Moses, and
6 one for *Elijah*. For he *knew* not what to say; for they
7 were sore afraid. And there came a cloud overshadowing them, and a voice came out of the cloud, saying,
8 This is my beloved Son; hear *ye* him. And suddenly *looking* round . . , they saw no man any more, save Jesus
9 only, with themselves. And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them . . *to* tell no man *the* things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen
10 from the dead. And they *laid hold on* that saying . . , questioning one with another, *What meaneth, Till he were*
11 *risen from the dead?* And they asked him, saying, Why
12 say the scribes that *Elijah* must come first? And he *answering*, told them, *Elijah* verily *coming* first, . . restoreth all things; and how . . is written of the Son of man that he must suffer many things, and be set
13 at nought. But I say *to* you, *Elijah* is . . come, *as it is written of him:* and they have done *to* him whatsoever they listed.

14 And *coming* to his disciples, he saw a great multitude
15 about them, and . . scribes questioning with them. And straightway all the *multitude seeing* him, were greatly
16 amazed, and running to him, saluted him. And he
17 asked the scribes, What question ye with them? And one of the multitude answering said, Master, I have
18 brought *to* thee my son, *who* hath a dumb spirit. And wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him, and he foameth and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away. And I spake to thy disciples . . *to* cast him out, and
19 they could not. He *answering* them, . . saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? How
20 long shall I suffer you? Bring him *to* me. And they brought him *to* him. And when he saw him, *immediately* the spirit *tore* him, and he fell on the ground, and
21 wallowed, foaming. And he asked his father, How long is it . . since this came to him? And he said, *From* a
22 little child. And *it hath often* cast him *both* into the fire and into the waters to destroy him; but if thou canst
23 do any thing, have compassion on us and help us. Jesus *saith to* him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible
24 to him that believeth. And straightway the father of the child *crying* out, . . said with tears, Lord, I *do*
25 believe: help thou mine unbelief. *And* Jesus *seeing that* the *multitude* came running together, . . rebuked the *unclean* spirit, saying *to* him, Thou *deaf* and *dumb* spirit, I *command* thee, come out of him, and enter no more
26 into him. And . . *having* cried and rent him sore, *he* came out; and he was as . . dead, *so* that many said,
27 He is dead. But Jesus *taking* him by the hand, . . lifted him up and he arose.
28 And when he was come into *a* house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?
29 And he said *to* them, This kind can come forth by nothing but by prayer and fasting.
30 And *departing* thence, *they* passed through Galilee, and
31 he *was* not *willing* that any should know it. For he taught his disciples, and said *to* them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men; and they *will* kill him, and after *he hath been* killed, he shall rise the third day.
32 But they understood not *the word*, and were afraid to ask him.
33 And he came to Capernaum. And being in the house, he asked them, What was it . . ye disputed among
34 yourselves by the way? But they held their peace; for *they had been debating* among themselves *in the way*,
35 who should be greatest. And *sitting* down, *he* called the twelve, and saith *to* them, If any man desire to be *the* first, *let* him be least of all, and *the* servant of all.

36 And *taking* a little child, *he* set him in the midst of them,
37 and *taking* him *up* in his arms, he said *to* them, Whosoever shall receive one . . such *little child* in my name, receiveth me; and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not *only* me, but him that sent me.
38 And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, *who* followeth not us,
39 and we forbad him, because he followeth not us. And Jesus said, Forbid him not; for there is no one who shall do a miracle in my name, that can *readily* speak
40 evil of me. For he that is not against *you* is *for you*,
41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of *cold* water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say *to* you, he shall *in nowise* lose his reward.
42 And whosoever shall offend one of *the* little ones that believe in me, it *were* better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.
43 And if thy hand *cause thee to offend*, cut it off: it is *good* for thee to enter into life maimed, *rather* than having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be
44 quenched: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is
45 not quenched. And if thy foot *cause thee to offend*, cut it off: it is *good* for thee to enter halt into life, *rather* than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that
46 never shall be quenched: Where their worm dieth not,
47 and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye *cause thee to offend*, pluck it out: it is *good* for thee to enter into the kingdom of God having one eye, *rather* than
48 having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: Where their
49 worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice
50 shall be salted with salt. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost its saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

10 And he arose . . and cometh *thence* into the coasts of Judea, *through the country beyond* Jordan: and the *multitudes* resort *to* him again, and as he was wont, he
2 taught them again. And the Pharisees *coming*, . . asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife?
3 tempting him. And he *answering*, . . said to them,
4 What did Moses command you? . . They said, Moses suffered to write a bill of *divorce*, and to put her away.
5 And Jesus *answering*, . . said to them, For your hard-
6 ness of . . heart he wrote you this precept. . . But from the beginning of the creation God made them male
7 and female. For this cause shall a man leave his father
8 and mother, and cleave to his wife; And they twain shall be one flesh; so then they are no more twain but

9 one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let
10 not man put asunder. And in the house his disciples
11 asked him again of the same matter. And he saith *to* them, Whosoever shall put away his wife and marry another,
12 committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.
13 And they brought *little* children to him that he *might* touch them; *but the* disciples rebuked those that brought
14 them. But Jesus *seeing* it, . . was much displeased, and said *to* them, Suffer the little children to come *to* me, and forbid them not; for of such is the kingdom of
15 God. Verily I say *to* you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall *in nowise*
16 enter therein. And *taking* them up in his arms, *he* put his hands upon them, and blessed them.
17 And *as* he was *going out* into the way, . . one running and *kneeling* to him, . . asked him, Good Master, what
18 shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? But Jesus saith *to* him, Why callest thou me good? There is none
19 good but one, that is God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not *murder*, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour
20 thy father and mother. And he *answering*, said *to* him, Master, all these have I *kept* from my *childhood.*
21 Then Jesus *looking upon* him, loved him, and said *to* him, One thing thou lackest: Go . . , sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, *follow me*, *taking* up *thy*
22 cross. *But* he was sad at that saying, and went away
23 grieved; for he had great possessions. And Jesus *looking* around . . *said to* his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God?
24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus *answering* again . . saith *to* them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the
25 kingdom of God? It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into
26 the kingdom of God. And they were astonished out of measure, saying *to each other*, Who then can be saved?
27 And Jesus looking upon them, said, With men it is impossible, but not with God, for with God all things
28 are possible. And Peter . . *said to* him, Lo we have
29 left all and followed thee. And Jesus *answering* . . said, Verily I say *to* you, there is *none* that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or
30 children, or lands, for my sake and the Gospel's, But he shall receive *a* hundred fold now in this time, houses and brethren and sisters and mothers and children and

lands with persecutions, and in the world to come eternal
31 life. But many that are first shall be last, and the
last first.
32 And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem, and
Jesus went before them. And they were amazed, and
as they followed, they were afraid. And *taking* the
twelve again he . . *told* them what things *were to befall*
33 him: . . Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son
of man shall be *betrayed to* the chief priests, and . . the
scribes: and they *will* condemn him to death, and
34 deliver him to the Gentiles. And they will mock him
and . . scourge him and . . spit upon him and . .
kill him. And the third day he *will* rise again.
35 And James and John the sons of Zebedee come *to*
him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do
36 for us *whatever* we shall *ask*. And he said *to* them, What
37 would ye that I should do for you? They said *to* him,
Grant us *to sit* one on thy right hand, and *one* on thy
38 left hand, in thy glory. *But* Jesus said *to* them, Ye
know not what ye ask. Can ye drink of the cup that I
drink of, and be baptized with the baptism that I am
39 baptized with? And they said *to* him, We can. And
Jesus said *to* them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup
that I drink of, and *be baptized* with the baptism that I
40 am baptized *with*. But to sit on my right hand and
on my left, is not mine to give, *save* to them for whom
41 it is prepared. And . . the ten *hearing* it *were* much
42 displeased *concerning* James and John. But Jesus *calling*
them to him, . . saith unto them, Ye know that they
who . . rule over the Gentiles, *lord it* over them, and
43 their great ones exercise authority upon them. But *it*
shall not be *so* among you; but whosoever *desireth to*
44 be great among you, shall be your servant. And who-
soever *desireth to* be the *chief*, shall be *the* servant of all.
45 For . . the Son of man came not to be *served*, but to
serve, and to give his life a ransom for many.
46 And they come to Jericho. And as he went out of
Jericho with his disciples and a great *multitude*, blind
Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the *way* side
47 begging. And *hearing*, It is Jesus of Nazareth, he . .
cried out and *said*, Jesus, thou Son of David, have
48 mercy on me. And many charged him *to* hold his peace;
but he cried *so much* the more a great deal, Thou Son
49 of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus *standing* still,
. . commanded him to be called. And they call the
blind man, saying *to* him, *Take courage*, rise; he calleth
50 thee. And . . casting away his garment, *he* rose and
51 came to Jesus. And Jesus *answering* said *to* him, What
wilt thou that I should do *for* thee? The blind man said

52 to him, Lord, that I may receive my sight. And Jesus said, Go . . ; thy faith hath *saved thee.* And immediately he received his sight, and followed *him* in the way.

11 And when they *were come* nigh to Jerusalem *to* Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth
2 . . two of his disciples, And saith *to* them, Go *ye* . . into the village over against you, and as soon as *ye enter* it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat: loose
3 . . and bring him. And if any . . say *to* you, Why do ye this? say . . , The Lord hath need of him; and
4 straightway he will send him hither. And they went . . and found the colt tied *at* the door, without, in the *street,*
5 and they loose him. And *some* of them that stood there
6 said . . , What do ye, loosing the colt? And they said *to* them . . as Jesus had commanded; and they let *him*
7 go. And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their
8 garments on him, and he sat on him. And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches
9 from the trees, and *strewed* them in the way. And they that went before, and they that followed *after* cried, saying, Hosanna: blessed *in the name of the Lord* is he
10 that cometh. Blessed be the kingdom of our father David that cometh . . : Hosanna in the highest.
11 And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple, and *having* looked round about upon all things, *it being now evening,* he went out *to* Bethany with the twelve.
12 And on the morrow, *as* they were *coming* from Bethany,
13 he was hungry. And seeing a fig tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and *coming* to it, he found nothing but leaves;
14 for *it was not a season of figs.* And *he answering* said *to* it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever; and
15 his disciples heard. And they come to Jerusalem. And Jesus *going* into the temple, . . *drove* out them that *bought* and *sold* in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them
16 that sold doves, And *suffered not* that any *one* should
17 carry *a* vessel through the temple. And he taught, saying *to* them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations *a* house of prayer? But ye have
18 made it a den of thieves. And the scribes and the chief priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because *the whole multitude* was astonished at his *teaching.*
19 And when *evening* was coming he went out of the city.
20 And *passing by* in the morning, they saw the fig tree
21 dried up from the roots. And Peter *remembering,* saith *to* him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst

22 is withered away. And Jesus answering saith *to* them,
23 Have faith in God. For verily I say *to* you, . . Whosoever shall say *to* this mountain, Be thou removed and . . cast into the sea, and . . not doubt in his heart, but . . believe that *the* things which he saith shall come to
24 pass, he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say *to* you, *All* things *what*soever ye *ask in prayer*, believe
25 that ye *shall* receive, and ye shall have them. *But* when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any, that your Father *who* is in heaven may forgive you
26 *also* your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father *who* is in heaven forgive your trespasses.
27 And they come again to Jerusalem. And as he was walking in the temple, the chief priests and the scribes
28 and the elders *come to him*, And say *to* him, By what authority *dost* thou these things? And who gave thee . .
29 authority to do these things? . . Jesus *answering* said *to* them, I also will ask you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.
30 *Was* the baptism of John from heaven or *from* men?
31 Answer me. And they reasoned *among* themselves, saying, If we . . say from heaven, he will say, Why
32 then did ye not believe him? But if we . . say *from* men: they feared the people; for all . . *accounted* John
33 that he was *indeed* a prophet. And they *answering say to* Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith *to* them, Neither . . tell *I* you by what authority I do these things.

12 And he . . *said* to them *in* parables, A . . man planted a vineyard, and set *a* hedge about it, and digged a . . wine fat, and built a tower, and let it out to
2 husbandmen, and went into a far country. And at the season he sent *a servant* to the husbandmen . . *to* receive
3 from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard. *But they took* him, and beat him, and sent him away empty.
4 And again he sent *to* them another servant, and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and
5 sent him *away shamefully handled.* And again he sent another, and him they killed; and many others, beating
6 some and killing some. Having yet therefore one son, his well beloved, he sent him also last *to* them, saying,
7 They will reverence my son. But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir: come, let us
8 kill him, and the inheritance *will* be ours. And they took him and killed him, and cast him out of the
9 vineyard. What therefore *will* the lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and
10 will give the vineyard *to* others. And have ye not

read *even* this scripture? The stone which the builders
11 rejected, *this* is become the head of the corner? This
was the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.
12 And they sought to *seize* him, but feared the *multitude;*
for they knew he had spoken the parable against them;
and *leaving* him, *they* went away.
13 And they send *to* him certain of the Pharisees, and of
14 the Herodians, to catch him in his *discourse.* And *they*
coming say *to* him, Master, we know that thou art true,
and carest for no man; for thou regardest not the person
of men, but teachest the way of God in truth. Is it
15 lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not? Shall we give,
or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy
said *to* them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penny,
16 that I may see it; And they brought it. And he saith
to them, Whose is this image and inscription? They
17 say *to* him, Caesar's. And Jesus answering said *to* them,
Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's and to
God the things that are God's. And they marvelled
at him.
18 Then come *to* him the Sadducees, *who* say there is no
19 resurrection, and they asked him, saying, Master, Moses
wrote *to* us, If a man's brother die, and leave *a* wife . . ,
and leave no children, that his brother should take his
20 wife, and raise up *issue to* his brother. . . There were
seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and dying left
21 no *issue.* And the second took her and died, neither
22 left he any *issue;* and the third likewise. And the seven
took her and left no *issue.* Last of all *died the woman*
23 *also.* In the resurrection, therefore, when they shall
rise, whose wife shall she be of them? For the seven
24 had her to wife. And Jesus answering, said *to* them,
Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the
25 Scriptures, neither the power of God? For when they
. . rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given
in marriage, but are as the angels who are in heaven.
26 And . . touching the dead that they rise, Have ye not
read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake
to him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God
27 of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? He is not the God of
the dead, but the God of the living. Ye therefore . .
greatly err.
28 And one of the scribes *coming to him,* . . having heard
them *disputing* together, and perceiving that he had
answered them well, asked him, Which is the first com-
29 mandment of all? And Jesus answered him, The first
commandment of all is, Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God
30 is one Lord. And thou shalt love the Lord thy God
with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all

thy mind, and with all thy strength. This is the first
31 commandment. And the second is like *unto it*, . . Thou
shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is no other
32 commandment greater than these. And the scribes
said *to* him, *Excellently* well, Master! Thou hast said
the truth; for *he* is one . . : and there is no other but he.
33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the
understanding, and with all the *mind*, and with all the
strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more
34 than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. And . .
Jesus, *seeing* that he answered discreetly, . . said *to*
him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And
no man after that durst *question him any more.*
35 And Jesus *answering as* he taught in the temple, *said,*
How say the scribes, that Christ is the Son of David?
36 For David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The Lord
saith to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make
37 thine enemies thy footstool. David therefore himself
calleth him Lord: *how* is he then his son? And a *great*
multitude heard him gladly.
38 And he said *to* them in his *teaching*, Beware of the
scribes, *who* love to walk in long robes, and *to be saluted*
39 in the market places, And the chief seats in the
40 synagogues, and the uppermost *places* at feasts; *Who*
devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long
prayers: these shall receive *the* greater damnation.
41 And Jesus *sitting* over against the treasury, . . beheld
how the people cast money into the treasury: and many
42 that were rich cast in much. And *a poor widow coming,*
43 *cast* in two mites, which make a farthing. And *calling*
to him his disciples, *he* saith *to* them, Verily I say unto
you, that this poor widow hath cast *in more* than *they*
44 *all who* have cast into the treasury. For *they all* did
cast in of their abundance: but she of her *penury* did
cast in all that she had, even her *whole* living.

13 And as he *was going* out of the temple, one of his
disciples saith *to* him, Master, see what manner of
2 stones, and *what manner* of buildings . . ! And Jesus
answering said *to* him, Seest thou these great buildings?
There shall not be left one stone upon another that
3 shall not be thrown down. And as he sat *on* the mount
of Olives, over against the temple, Peter and James and
4 John and Andrew asked him privately, Tell us when
shall these things be? And what shall be the sign
5 when all these things shall be fulfilled? And Jesus
answering *said*, Take heed lest any . . deceive you.
6 For many *will* come in my name saying, I am He, and
7 *will* deceive you. But when ye shall hear of wars and

rumours of wars, be . . not troubled; *for it must be:*
8 but the end is not . . yet. For nation shall rise against
nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall
be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be
famines and troubles: these are the *beginning* of sorrows.
9 But take heed to yourselves, for they *will* deliver you
. . to councils, and *ye shall* be beaten *in synagogues,*
and . . shall *stand* before rulers and kings for my sake,
10 for a testimony *to* them. And the Gospel must first be
11 published among all nations. But when they shall *hale*
you and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand
what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate; but
whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak
. . ; for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost.
12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and
the father the son: and *the* children shall rise up against
their parents, and . . cause them to be put to death.
13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake;
but he that . . endureth *to* the end, *he* shall be saved.
14 But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation
spoken of by Daniel the prophet standing where it
ought not, (let him that readeth understand,) then let
15 them that *are in Judea* flee to the mountains: And let
not him that is on the house top go down into the house,
16 neither enter *in,* to take any thing out of his house. And
let *not* him that is in the field turn back . . to take up
17 his garment. But wo to them that are with child, and
18 to them that give suck in those days. And pray ye
19 that your flight be not in the winter. For in those
days shall be affliction, such as was not from the
beginning of the creation, which God created until *now,*
20 neither shall be. And *unless* the Lord had shortened
those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the
elect's sake whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened
21 *those* days. . . Then if any man . . say to you, Lo,
22 here is Christ, or lo, he is there, believe *it* not. For
false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall
show signs and wonders, to seduce, if . . possible,
23 even the elect. But take ye heed: Behold, I have
foretold you all things.
24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall
25 be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, And
the stars of heaven shall *be falling,* and the powers that
26 are in the heavens shall be shaken. And then shall
they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great
27 power and glory. And then shall he send his angels,
and gather together his elect, from the four winds, from
the uttermost part of the earth, to the uttermost part
of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable from . . the fig tree. When *its*
branch is *now* tender and putteth forth leaves, ye know
29 that summer is *nigh*. So *likewise* when ye see these
things come to pass, know that *he* is nigh, even at the
30 door. Verily I say *to* you, . . this generation shall in
31 *nowise* pass, till all these things be done. Heaven and
earth shall pass away, but my words shall in *nowise*
pass away.
32 But of that day *or* that hour knoweth no *one*, no, not
the angels *that are* in heaven, neither the Son, but the
Father.
33 Take . . heed; watch and pray: for ye know not
34 when the time is. For the Son of man is as a man taking
a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority
to his servants, and to *each* his work, and commanded
35 the porter to watch. Watch ye therefore; for ye know
not when the master of the house cometh; at evening,
or at midnight, . . at cock crowing, or in the morning:
36 Lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. And what
I say *to* you, I say *to* all, Watch.

14 *And* after two days was the feast of the passover
and of unleavened bread; and the chief priests and
the scribes sought how they might *apprehend* him by
2 *subtlety*, and put him to death. But they said, Not *at*
3 the feast . . , lest there be a *tumult* of the people. And
he being in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper as
he sat at *table*, there came a woman having an alabaster
box of ointment, of spikenard, very *costly;* and *shaking*
4 the box, she poured it on his head. But there were
some that had indignation within themselves, and said,
5 Why was this waste of the ointment made? For *this*
ointment might have been sold for more than three
hundred pence and . . given to the poor. And they
6 murmured *at* her. But Jesus said, Let her alone: why
trouble ye her? She hath wrought a good work on me.
7 For *the poor* ye *have* always with you, and *when* ye will
ye may do them good; but me ye have not always.
8 She hath done what she could: she *hath* beforehand
9 *embalmed* my body *for* the *burial*. Verily I say *to* you,
wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached throughout
the whole world, *what* she . . hath done shall be spoken
of *also*, for a memorial of her.
10 And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went *to* the chief
11 priests, to betray him unto them. And *hearing* it they
were glad, and promised to give him money. And he
sought how he might conveniently betray him.
12 And *on* the first day of unleavened bread, when they
killed the passover, his disciples *say to* him, Where wilt

thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the
13 passover? And he sendeth . . two of his disciples, and
saith *to* them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet
you a man *carrying* a pitcher of water: follow him.
14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the . . man
of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest
chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my
15 disciples? And he will show you a large upper room . .
16 furnished: there make ready for us. And his disciples
went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had
said *to* them. And they made ready the passover.
17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve. And
as they sat and *ate*, Jesus said, Verily I say *to* you, one
19 of you *that eat* with me *will* betray me. And they *were*
sorrowful, and *said to* him one by one, Is it I? And
20 another said, Is it I? And he *answering* said *to* them,
It is one of the twelve that dippeth with me in the dish.
21 The Son of man indeed goeth as it is written of him;
but wo to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed:
it had been good for that man if he had *not* been born.
22 And as they *ate*, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and
brake it, and gave . . to them, and said, Take, eat:
23 this is my body. And he took the cup, and *having*
given thanks, . . gave it . . them, and they all drank
24 of it. And he said *to* them, This is my blood of the
25 New Testament, which is shed for many. Verily I say
to you I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, *till*
that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.
26 And *having* sung *the* hymn, they went out *toward* the
27 mount of Olives. And Jesus saith *to* them, Ye *will all*
be offended *at* me this night; for it is written, I will
smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.
28 But after . . I am risen, I will go before you into
29 Galilee. But Peter said *to* him, . . Though all *men* shall
30 be offended, yet will not I. . . Jesus saith *to* him, Verily
I say *to* thee, That *thou to-day*, . . this night before the
31 cock crow twice, *wilt* deny me thrice. But he *said* the
more vehemently, If I *must* die with thee I will *in nowise*
deny thee. *In like manner* also said they all.
32 And they come to a place . . named Gethsemane;
and he saith to his disciples, Sit . . here while I *shall*
33 pray. And he taketh with him Peter and James and
John; and *he* began to be sore amazed and *in deep*
34 *anguish*, And saith *to* them, My soul is exceeding sor-
35 rowful *even to* death: tarry ye here and watch. And
going forward a little, *he* fell on the ground, and prayed,
that if it were possible, the hour might pass from him.
36 And he said Abba, Father, all things are possible *to*
thee: take away this cup from me: *yet* not what I will,

37 but what thou wilt. And he cometh and findeth them
sleeping, and saith to Peter, Simon, sleepest thou?
38 Couldest *thou not* watch one hour? Watch . . and
pray lest ye enter into temptation; the spirit *indeed* is
39 *willing*, but the flesh is weak. And *going* away again
40 he prayed, *speaking* the same words. And *returning*,
he found them asleep again (for their eyes were heavy)
41 *and they knew not* what to answer him. And he cometh
the third time, and saith *to* them, Sleep on now, and
take your rest. It is enough. The hour is come:
behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of
42 sinners. Rise up; let us go: lo, he that betrayeth
me is at hand.
43 And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh *up*
Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude,
with swords and *clubs* from the chief priests, and the
44 scribes, and the elders. *Now* he that betrayed him had
given them *a signal*, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, . .
45 is he: *seize* and lead him away safely. And *when* he
was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith,
46 Master, Master! and kissed him. And they laid their
47 hands on him and took him. And one of them that
stood by, *drawing* a sword, smote the servant of the
48 high priest, and cut off his ear. And Jesus *answering*
said *to* them, Are ye come out as against *a robber*, with
49 swords and *clubs* to take me? I was daily with you in
the temple teaching, and ye took me not; but that the
50 Scriptures *may* be fulfilled. Then they all forsook him
51 and fled. And *a certain young man* followed him, having
a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and the young
52 men laid hold on him. And he left the linen cloth, and
fled from them naked.
53 And they led Jesus away to the high priest, and with
him . . assembled all the chief priests, and the elders,
54 and the scribes. And Peter followed him afar off, even
into the palace of the high priest, and sat with the
servants, and warmed himself at the fire.
55 *Then* the chief priests and all the council sought for
evidence against Jesus, to put him to death, and found
56 none. For many *bore* false witness against him; but
57 their *evidences were not sufficient.* And *certain men*
58 *arising bore* false witness against him, saying, We heard
him say, I will destroy this temple . . made with hands,
and *in* three days I will build another made without
59 hands. *And* neither so *was* their *evidence sufficient.*
60 *Then* the high priest *rising* up in the midst, asked Jesus,
saying, Answerest thou nothing? What is it *that* these
61 witness against thee? But he held his peace, and an-
swered nothing. Again the high priest asked him and

said *to* him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?
62 And Jesus said I am; and ye shall see the Son of man
sitting *at* the right hand of power, and coming *with* the
63 clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes,
and saith, What *farther need have we of* witnesses?
64 Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And
65 they all condemned him to be *worthy* of death. And
some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and
to buffet him, and . . say *to* him, Prophesy. And the
servants *smote* him with the palms of their hands.
66 And as Peter was *in the hall below,* there cometh one
67 of the maids of the high priest. And *seeing* Peter
warming himself, she looked *on* him, and said, . . Thou
68 *wast also* with Jesus of Nazareth. But he denied, saying,
I know not, neither understand I what thou *meanest.*
And he went out into the porch and the cock crew.
69 And the maid *seeing* him again, *said* to them that stood
70 by, This is one of them. And he denied it again. And a
little after those that stood by said again to Peter,
Surely thou art one of them; for thou art a Galilean,
71 and thy speech agreeth thereto. *Then* began *he* to curse
and to swear, . . I know not this man of whom ye
72 speak. And the second time the cock crew. And Peter
called to mind the word that Jesus *had* said *to* him,
Before the cock crow twice, thou wilt deny me thrice.
And *he covered* his head *and* wept.

15 And straightway in the morning the chief priests
having consulted with the elders and scribes, and the
whole council, *having* bound Jesus, . . carried him away
2 and delivered him to Pilate. And Pilate asked him,
Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answering said
3 *to* him, Thou sayest it. And the chief priests accused
4 him of many things. . . And Pilate asked him again,
saying, Answerest thou nothing? Behold how many
5 things they witness against thee. But Jesus . . an-
6 swered nothing *any more,* so that Pilate marvelled. Now
at *every* feast he released *to* them one prisoner, whom-
7 soever they *would.* And there was one named Barabbas,
who lay bound with them that had made insurrection
with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.
8 And the multitude crying aloud, *asked* him to do as he
9 had ever done *for* them. *And* Pilate answered them,
saying, Will ye that I release *to* you the king of the
10 Jews? (For he knew that the chief priests had delivered
11 him for envy.) But the chief priests *stirred up* the people
to ask, that he *would* rather release Barabbas *to* them.
12 And Pilate *answering* said to them *again,* What will ye
then that I . . do *to* him whom ye call the king of the

13 Jews? And they cried out again, Crucify him. Then
Pilate said *to* them, Why, what evil hath he done?
But they cried out the more exceedingly; Crucify him.
15 And . . Pilate, willing to *satisfy* the people, released
Barabbas *to* them, *and having scourged Jesus*, delivered
him to be crucified.
16 And the soldiers led him away *to* the hall called
17 Praetorium, and . . call together the whole *troop*. And
they *clothe* him with purple, and *having* platted a crown
18 of thorns, . . put it about his head, And *they saluted*
19 him, Hail, king of the Jews. And they smote him on
the head with a *cane*, and . . spit upon him, and bowing
20 their knees, *did him homage*. And when they had
mocked him, they took . . the purple robe from him,
and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to
21 crucify him. And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian,
who *was passing* by, coming out of the country, the
father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.
22 And they bring him *to* the place, Golgotha, which is
23 being interpreted, the place of a skull. And they gave
him to drink wine mingled with myrrh; but he received
24 it not. And when they had crucified him, they parted
his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man
25 should take. And it was the third hour *when* they
26 crucified him. And *there was an inscription* of his accu-
sation . . written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.
27 And with him they crucify two thieves, . . one on his
28 right hand, and . . *one* on his left. And the scripture
was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with
29 the transgressors. And they that passed by, *reviled*
him, wagging their heads and saying, Ah, thou that
30 destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, Save
31 thyself, and come down from the cross. *In like manner*
also the chief priests mocking said *to one another*, with
32 the scribes, He saved others; *cannot he save himself?* Let
the Christ, the king of Israel, *come down* now from the
cross, that we may see and believe. . . They also that
33 were crucified with him reviled him. And when the
sixth hour was come, there was darkness over *all the*
34 *earth* until the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour
Jesus cried with a loud voice, . . Eloi, Eloi, lama
sabacthani? Which is, being interpreted, My God, my
35 God, why hast thou forsaken me? And some of them
that stood by *hearing* it said, Behold, he calleth *Elijah*.
36 And one ran, and *filling* a sponge *with* vinegar, . . put
it on a *cane*, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone;
let us see *if* Elijah will come to take him down.
37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and *expired*.
38 And the veil of the temple was rent in twain, from the

39 top to the bottom. And . . the centurion, who stood
over against him, *seeing that having* so cried *he expired,*
40 . . said, Truly this man was the Son of God. There
were also women, *beholding from* afar . . , among whom
was Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of James
41 the less, and of Joses, and Salome: Who also when he
was in Galilee, followed him and *served* him, and many
other women *who had come* up with him *to* Jerusalem.
42 And *the evening being now* come, (*because* it was the
43 preparation, that is, the day before the Sabbath,) Joseph
of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, *who* also *him-
self* waited for the kingdom of God, came and went in
44 boldly *to* Pilate, and *asked* the body of Jesus. And
Pilate marvelled *that* he *was* dead *already:* and calling
to him the centurion, he asked . . if he had been any
45 while dead? And when he knew it of the centurion,
46 he gave the body to Joseph. And *having* bought fine
linen, *he* took him down and wrapped him in the linen,
and laid him in a sepulchre, which was hewn out of a
rock, and rolled a stone *to* the door of the sepulchre.
47 And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses
beheld where he was laid.

16 And when the Sabbath was *over,* Mary Magdalene,
and Mary the mother of James and Salome, had
bought . . spices, that they might come and *embalm*
2 him. And very early in the morning, the first day of
the week, they came *to* the sepulchre, at the rising of
3 the sun. And they said *one to another,* Who shall roll
us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre? (*For*
4 *it was very great.*) *And looking up,* they saw that the
5 stone was rolled away. And entering into the sepulchre,
they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed
6 in a . . white *robe;* and they were affrighted. He saith
to them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth,
who was crucified. He is risen: he is not here. Behold
7 the place where they laid him. But go . . tell his
disciples, and Peter, He goeth before you into Galilee:
8 there shall ye see him, as he said *to* you. And *going*
out . . they fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled
and were amazed: *and they said nothing* to any, . . for
9 they were afraid. Now when Jesus was risen early, the
first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magda-
10 lene, out of whom he had cast seven devils. . . She went
and told them that had been with him, as they mourned
11 and wept. *But* they *hearing* that he was alive, and had
12 been seen of her, believed not. After that he appeared
in another form unto two of them, as they *were walking,*
13 *going* into the country. And they went and told it *to*

14 the *rest,* neither believed they them. Afterward he
appeared *to* the eleven *sitting* at meat, and upbraided
them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because
they believed not them *who* had seen him *when* he was
risen.
15 And he said *to* them, Go ye into all the world, and
16 preach the Gospel to every creature. He that believeth
and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth
17 not shall be *condemned.* And these signs shall follow
them that believe: in my name *they shall* cast out devils:
18 they shall speak with new tongues: They shall take up
serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall
in nowise hurt them: they shall lay hands on the sick,
and they shall recover.
19 So then *the Lord after he* had spoken *to* them, . . was
received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of
20 God. And they went forth, and preached every where,
the Lord working with them and confirming the word
with signs following.

THE
GOSPEL according to ST. LUKE

CHAPTER I

1 Forasmuch as many have *undertaken* to *compose a*
narrative of the facts which have been fully confirmed
2 among us, Even as they (*who* were eye witnesses and
ministers of the word from the beginning) delivered them
3 *to* us: It seemed good to me also, having *accurately*
traced all things from *their first rise*, to write unto thee
4 in order, most excellent Theophilus, That thou *mayest*
know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast
been instructed.
5 There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a
certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia:
and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her
6 name was Elisabeth. And they were both righteous
before God, walking in all the commandments and
7 ordinances of the Lord blameless. And they had no
child, because . . Elisabeth was barren, and they *were*
8 *both advanced* in years. And . . while he executed the
priest's office before God in the order of his course,
9 According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot
was to burn *the* incense, *going* into the temple of the
10 Lord. And the whole multitude of the people were
11 praying without, at the time of *the* incense, And there
appeared *to* him an angel of the Lord, standing on the
12 right side of the altar of incense. And Zacharias *seeing*
13 him was troubled, and fear fell upon him. But the
angel said *to* him, Fear not, Zacharias; for thy prayer is
heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and
14 thou shalt call his name John. And thou shalt have
joy and *exultation*, and many shall rejoice at his birth.
15 For he shall be great *before* the Lord, and shall drink
neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled
with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.
16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to
17 the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in
the spirit and power of *Elijah*, to turn the hearts of the
fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the
wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared
18 for the Lord. And Zacharias said *to* the angel, Whereby

shall I know this? For I am an old man, and my wife
19 *advanced* in years. And the angel answering, said *to* him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God, and sent to speak *to* thee, and to show thee these glad
20 tidings. And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, *till* the day that these things *are done*, because thou believedst not my words, which shall be fulfilled
21 in their season. And the people *were waiting* for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the
22 temple. And *coming* out, he could not speak *to* them; and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple; for he beckoned *to* them, and remained speech-
23 less. And *when* . . the days of his ministration were
24 accomplished, he *went* to his own house. And after these days, his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself
25 five months saying, Thus hath the Lord *done to* me, in the days wherein he looked *upon* me, to take away my reproach among men.
26 And in the sixth month, the Angel Gabriel was sent
27 from God *to* a city of Galilee, named Nazareth. To a virgin *of the house of David, espoused to a man whose name was Joseph*, and the virgin's name was Mary.
28 And the angel *coming* in *to* her, . . said, Hail, thou . . highly favoured; the Lord is with thee: blessed art
29 thou among women. *But* she *seeing* him, . . was troubled at his saying, and *reasoned*, what manner of
30 salutation this should be. And the angel said *to* her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.
31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring
32 forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give . . him the throne of his father
33 David. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for-
34 ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Then said Mary *to* the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know
35 not a man? And the angel *answering* said *to* her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee; therefore also that holy thing which shall be born . . , shall be called the Son
36 of God. And behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age, and this is the sixth
37 month with her who was called barren. For with God
38 nothing shall be impossible. And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord: be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.
39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill
40 country with haste, into a city of Judah, And entered into
41 the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth. And . . when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe

leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the
42 Holy Ghost, And *cried* with a loud voice and said,
Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit
43 of thy womb. And whence is this to me, that the mother
44 of my Lord should come to me? For lo! *when* the voice
of thy salutation sounded in my ears, the babe leaped
45 in my womb for joy. And *happy* is she that believed;
for there shall be a performance of those things which
46 were told her from the Lord. And Mary said, My soul
47 doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in
48 God my Saviour. For he hath regarded the low estate
of his hand*maid:* for behold, from henceforth all gener-
49 ations shall call me blessed. For he that is mighty hath
50 done to me great things, and holy is his name. And his
mercy is on them that fear him, from generation to
51 generation. He hath *wrought* strength with his arm;
he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their
52 hearts. He hath put down the mighty from their
53 *thrones,* and exalted them of low degree. He hath filled
the hungry with good things, *but* sent the rich empty
54 away. He hath helped his servant Israel, in remem-
55 brance of his mercy, As he spoke to our fathers to
56 Abraham and *to* his seed for ever. And Mary abode
with her about three months, and returned to her own
house.

57 Now Elisabeth's full time came, that she should be
58 delivered and she brought forth a son. And her neigh-
bours and *relations* heard *that* the Lord had showed great
59 mercy upon her, and they rejoiced with her. And . .
on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child,
and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his
60 father. But his mother *answering,* said, *Nay,* but he
61 shall be called John. And they said to her, There is
62 none of thy kindred that is called by *that* name. And
they made signs to his father, *what* he would have him
63 called. And *asking* for a writing *tablet,* . . *he* wrote
saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.
64 And immediately his mouth was opened, and his tongue
65 loosed, and he spake, *blessing* God. And fear came on
all that dwelt round about them, and all these things
were noised abroad, *in* all the hill country of Judea.
66 And all that heard them, laid them up in their hearts,
saying, What manner of child shall this be? And the
67 hand of the Lord was with him. And his father Zacha-
rias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied,
68 saying, Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath
69 visited and redeemed his people, And hath raised up *a*
horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant
70 David: As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets,

71 *who* have been since the world began: That we should
be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all
72 that hate us; To perform the mercy promised to our
73 fathers, and to remember his holy covenant, Thy oath
74 which he sware to our father Abraham, That he would
grant . . us, . . being delivered out of the hand of *his*
75 enemies, *to* serve him without fear, In holiness and right-
76 eousness before him, all the days of our life. And thou,
child, shalt be . . *a* prophet of the Highest: for thou
shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways,
77 To give knowledge of salvation *to* his people, by the
78 remission of their sins, Through the tender mercy of
our God, whereby the day spring from on high hath
79 visited us, To *shine on* them that sit in darkness and in
the shadow of death, to *direct* our feet into the way of
80 peace. And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit,
and was in the deserts, till the day of his *being shown to*
Israel.

2 And . . in those days . . there went out a decree
from Augustus Caesar, that all the world should be
2 *enrolled.* (*Now* this *first enrollment* was . . made when
3 Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be
4 *enrolled,* every one *to* his own city. And Joseph also
went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth into
Judea, *to* the city of David, which is called Bethlehem,
(because he was of the *family* and *household* of David)
5 To be *enrolled* with Mary, his espoused wife, being . .
6 with child. And . . while they were there, the days
7 were *fulfilled,* that she should be delivered. And she
brought forth her son, the first born, and . . *swathed*
him, and laid him in a manger, because there was no
room for them in the inn.
8 And there were in the same country, shepherds *lying*
out in the field, *and* keeping watch over their flock by
9 night. And lo, *an* angel of the Lord came upon them,
and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and
10 they were sore afraid. And the angel said *to* them,
Fear not; for behold I bring you *glad* tidings of great
11 joy, which shall be to all people. For *to* you is born
this day in the city of David, a Saviour, *who* is Christ
12 the Lord. And this shall be a sign *to* you; ye shall
find the babe, wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a
13 manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a
multitude of the heavenly host, praising God and say-
14 ing, Glory to God in the highest; and on earth peace;
good will toward men.
15 And . . *when* the angels were gone away from them
into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us . .

go . . *to* Bethlehem, and see this thing which is *done*,
16 which the Lord hath made known *to* us. And they
came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the
17 babe lying in *the* manger. And *having* seen it, they made
known abroad the saying which was told them concern-
18 ing *the* child. And all that heard wondered at *the*
19 things which were told them by the shepherds. But
Mary kept all these things, *comparing them together* in
20 her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and
praising God for all the things that they had heard and
seen, as it was told . . them.
21 And when eight days were *fulfilled, to circumcise*
the child, his name was called Jesus, which was . .
named of the angel, before he was conceived in the womb.
22 And when the days of . . purification were *fulfilled*
according to the law of Moses, they brought him up to
23 Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord: (As it is written
in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the
24 womb shall be . . holy to the Lord) And to offer a
sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of
the Lord, A pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.
25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem whose
name was Simeon, and this . . man was just and devout,
waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy
26 Ghost was upon him. And it *had been* revealed *to* him
by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death before
27 he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the
Spirit into the temple. And when his parents brought
in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the
28 law, . . He took him up in his arms, and blessed God,
29 and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in
30 peace, according to thy word: For mine eyes have seen
31 thy salvation; Which thou hast prepared before the face
32 of all people. A light *revealed to* the Gentiles, and the
33 glory of thy people Israel. And Joseph and his mother
marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.
34 And Simeon blessed them, and said *to* Mary his mother,
Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of
many in Israel, and for a sign which shall be spoken
35 against, (Yea, and a sword shall pierce through thy own
soul also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be
revealed.
36 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter
of Phanuel, of the tribe of *Asher:* she was *far advanced*
in years, . . *having* lived with *a husband* seven years
37 from her virginity. And she was a widow of about
four-score and four years, *who* departed not from the
temple, but served God with fastings and prayers, night
38 and day. And she coming in *at* that *hour*, gave thanks

. . *to* the Lord, and spake of him to all . . that *were*
39 *waiting* for redemption in Jerusalem. And when they
had performed all things, according to the law of the
Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city
40 Nazareth. And the child grew, and waxed strong in
spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was
upon him.
41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the
42 feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years
old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the
43 feast. And when they had fulfilled the days, as they
returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem;
44 and Joseph and his mother knew it not, But . . sup-
posing him to *be* in the company, *they* went a day's
journey; and . . sought him among their kinsfolk and
45 *among their* acquaintance. And *not finding* him they
46 *went* back . . to Jerusalem, seeking him. And . . after
three days, they found him in the temple, sitting in the
midst of the doctors, both hearing them and asking
47 them questions. And all that heard him were astonished
48 at his understanding and answers. And *seeing* him they
were amazed. And his mother said *to* him, Son, why
hast thou *done thus to* us? Behold, thy father and I
49 have sought thee sorrowing. And he said *to* them, *Why*
sought ye me? Knew ye not that I must be about my
50 Father's business? And they understood not the saying
51 which he spake *to* them. And he went down with them,
and came to Nazareth, and was subject *to* them; but
52 his mother kept all these things in her heart. And
Jesus increased in wisdom and in stature and in favour
with God and man.

3 Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius
Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and
Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip
tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and
2 Lysanias . . tetrarch of Abilene, Annas being the high
priest and Caiaphas, the word of God came *to* John, the
3 son of Zacharias, in the wilderness. And he came into
all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of
4 repentance, for the remission of sins: As it is written in
the book of the words of the Prophet *Isaiah*, saying,
The voice of one crying *aloud* in the wilderness, Prepare
5 ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. Every
valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall
be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight,
6 and the rough ways . . smooth: And all flesh shall see
7 the salvation of God. Then said he to the multitude
that came forth to be baptized of him, *Ye brood* of

vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to
8 come? Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance;
and begin not to say within yourselves, We have
Abraham to our father; for I say *to* you, that God is
able of these stones to raise up children *to* Abraham.
9 And now also the axe *lieth at* the root of the trees: every
tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is
hewn down and cast into the fire.
10 And the *multitude* asked him, saying, What then shall
11 we do? He *answering* . . saith *to* them, He that hath
two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and
12 he that hath meat, let him do likewise. *And* publicans
also came to be baptized, and said *to* him, Master, what
13 shall we do? And he said *to* them, Exact no more than
14 . . *what* is appointed you. And soldiers likewise *asked*
him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said *to*
them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely;
and be content with your *pay*.
15 And as the people were in expectation, and all . .
mused in their hearts of John, whether he *was not* the
16 Christ, John answered, saying *to* them all, I indeed
baptize you with water, but one mightier than I cometh,
the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose:
he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:
17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge
his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but
18 the chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire. And
many other things in his exhortation preached he *to* the
19 people. But Herod the tetrarch being reproved by him
concerning Herodias, his brother Philip's wife, and *con-*
20 *cerning* all the evils which Herod had done, Added *also*
this above all, that he shut up John in prison.
21 Now when all the people were baptized, it came to
pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the
22 heaven was opened, And the Holy Ghost descended in a
bodily *form*, *as* a dove, upon him, and a voice came from
heaven, *saying*, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I
delight.
23 And Jesus . . *was* about thirty years of age, *when he*
began his ministry, being, as was supposed, the son of
24 Joseph, *who* was the son of Heli, . . The son of Matthat,
. . the son of Levi, . . the son of Melchi, . . the son
25 of Janna, . . the son of Joseph, . . The son of Mat-
tathias, . . the son of Amos, . . the son of Nahum,
26 . . the son of Esli, . . the son of Nagge, . . The son
of Maath, . . the son of Mattathias, . . the son of
Shimei, . . the son of Joseph, . . the son of Judah, . .
27 The son of Johanan, . . the son of Rhesa, . . the son
of Zerubbabel, . . the son of Salathiel, . . the son of

28 Neri, . . The son of Melchi, . . the son of Addi, . .
the son of Cosam, . . the son of Elmodam, . . the
29 son of Er, . . The son of Jose, . . the son of Eleazar,
. . the son of Jorim, . . the son of Matthat, . . the
30 son of Levi, . . The son of Simeon, . . the son of Judah,
. . the son of Joseph, . . the son of Johanan, . . the
31 son of Eliakim, . . The son of Melea, . . the son of
Menan, . . the son of Mattatha, . . the son of Nathan,
32 . . the son of David, . . The son of Jesse, . . the son
of Obed, . . the son of Booz, . . the son of Salmon, . .
33 the son of Naasson, . . The son of Aminadab, . . the
son of Aaron, . . the son of Esrom, . . the son of
34 Phares, . . the son of Judah, . . The son of Jacob, . .
the son of Isaac, . . the son of Abraham, . . the son
35 of Terah, . . the son of Nahor, . . The son of
Saruch, . . the son of Ragau, . . the son of Phalec, . .
36 the son of Heber, . . the son of Sala, . . The son of
Cainan, . . the son of Arphaxad, . . the son of Shem,
37 the son of Noah, . . the son of Lamech, . . The son of
Methuselah, . . the son of Enoch, . . the son of Jared,
38 . . the son of Maleleel, . . the son of Cainan, . . The
son of Enos, . . the son of Seth, . . the son of Adam,
. . the son of God.

4 And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from
Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,
2 Being forty days tempted *by* the devil. And in those
days he *ate* nothing, and when they were ended, he . .
3 hungered. And the devil said *to* him, If thou be the
Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.
4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, . . Man
shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.
5 And the devil *leading* him up into a high mountain,
showed . . him all the kingdoms of the world in a
6 moment. . . And the devil said *to* him, All this power
will I give thee, and the glory of them; for *it* is delivered
7 *to* me, and I . . give it to whomsoever I will. If thou
8 therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus
answering said *to* him, . . It is written, Thou shalt
worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou
9 serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him
on *the battlement* of the temple, and said *to* him, If thou
10 be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: For
it is written, He shall . . charge his angels . . *con-*
11 *cerning* thee, to keep thee: And in their hands they
shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot
against a stone.
12 And Jesus answering said *to* him, It is said, Thou
13 shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. And the devil

having ended all the temptation, . . departed from him *till a convenient* season.

14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all
15 the region round about. And he taught in their syna-
16 gogues, being glorified of all. And he came to Nazareth, where he *was* brought up; and as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the Sabbath . . , and stood
17 up . . to read. And there was delivered *to* him the book of the Prophet Isaiah, and *having* opened the book,
18 he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath *anointed* me to preach the Gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken hearted; to *proclaim* deliverance to the captives, and *recovery* of sight to the blind, to set at
19 liberty them that are bruised, To *publish* the acceptable
20 year of the Lord. And *having* closed the book, he gave it again to the *servant*, and sat down. And the eyes of
21 all . . in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he . . *said to* them, *To-day* is this scripture fulfilled in your
22 ears. And *they* all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And
23 they said, Is not this Joseph's son? And he said *to* them, Ye will surely say *to* me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself. Whatsoever we have heard done in
24 Capernaum, do also here in thy *own* country. And he said, Verily I say *to* you, No prophet is *acceptable* in his
25 own country. . . I tell you of a truth, Many widows were in Israel in the days of *Elijah*, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, *while a* great
26 famine was through . . all the land. *Yet to* none of *these* was *Elijah* sent, *but to* Sarepta, a city of Sidon, *to*
27 a . . widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of *Elisha* the prophet, *yet* none of them were
28 cleansed, *but* Naaman the Syrian. And all . . in the synagogue *hearing* these things, were filled with *fury*,
29 And *rising* up, . . thrust him out of the city, and *brought* him *to* the brow of the hill whereon their city
30 was built, *to* cast him down headlong. But he passing through the midst of them, went *away*.

31 And *he* came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee,
32 and taught them on the Sabbath days. And they were astonished at his *teaching*, for his word was with *authority*.
33 And there was in the synagogue a man *who* had a spirit of an unclean devil: and *he* cried out with a loud voice,
34 Saying, Let us alone: What have we to do with thee, . . Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us?
35 I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come

out of him. And the devil *having* thrown him in the
36 midst, . . came out of him, and hurt him not. And
they were all amazed, and spake among themselves,
saying, What . . word is this, *that* with authority and
power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they
37 come out! And the fame of him went *forth* into every
place of the country round about.
38 And . . *rising up* out of the synagogue, *he* entered
into Simon's house. And Simon's wife's mother was *ill*
39 *of* a great fever, and they besought him for her. And
standing over her, *he* rebuked the fever, and it left her:
40 and immediately she arose and *served* . . them. Now
when the sun was *set*, all . . that had any sick *of* divers
diseases brought them *to* him; and he laid his hands on
41 every one of them, and healed them. And devils also
came out of many, crying out and saying, Thou art
Christ, the Son of God. And he rebuking them, suffered
42 them not to *say that* they knew he was *the* Christ. And
when it was day, *going out* he went into a desert place:
and the *multitude* sought him, and came *to* him, and
43 *detained* him, that he *might* not depart from them. And
he said *to* them, I must preach the kingdom of God to
44 other cities also, for therefore am I sent. And he preached
in the synagogues of Galilee.

5 And . . as the *multitude* pressed *on* him to hear the
word of God, he stood by the lake . . Gennesareth,
2 And saw two *vessels* standing by the lake; but the
fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing
3 their nets. And *going* into one of the vessels, which
was Simon's, *he desired* him *to* thrust out a little from
the land. And *sitting* down, *he* taught the *multitude* out
4 of the *vessel*. . . When he had *ceased* speaking, he said
to Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your
5 nets for a draught. *But* Simon answering said *to* him,
Master, *having* toiled all night, *we* have taken nothing:
6 nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net. And
having done *this* they enclosed a great multitude of
7 fishes, and *the* net brake. And they beckoned *to* their
partners, who were in the other *vessel to* come and help
them; and they came and filled both the *vessels* so that
8 they began to sink. . . Simon Peter *seeing* it, fell down
at Jesus's knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a
9 sinful man, O Lord. For . . *astonishment seized him*,
and all . . that were with him, at the draught of . .
10 fishes which they had taken. And *in like manner* also
James and John, the sons of Zebedee, *who* were partners
with Simon. And Jesus said *to* Simon, Fear not: from
11 henceforth thou shalt catch men. And when they had

brought their *vessels* to land, they forsook all and followed him.

12 And . . when he was in a certain city, behold, a man full of leprosy, who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst
13 make me clean. And *stretching* forth his hand *he* touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And
14 immediately the leprosy departed from him. And he charged him to tell no man: but go, . . show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, . . as Moses
15 commanded, for a testimony *to* them. But . . *the* fame of him went abroad *the more*, and great multitudes came together, to hear and to be healed by him of their
16 infirmities. *But* he withdrew into the *deserts* and prayed.

17 And . . on a certain day as he was teaching, there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, *who* were come out of every town of Galilee, and *out of* Judea and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present
18 to heal them. And behold men *bringing on a couch* a man *that* was *ill of the* palsy; and they sought . . to
19 bring him in and . . lay him before him. And, . . not *finding* by what way they *might* bring him in *through* the multitude, they went *up on* the house . . , and let him down through the tiling with his couch into the midst,
20 before Jesus. And *seeing* their faith, he said *to* him,
21 Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. And the scribes and the Pharisees . . *reasoned*, saying, Who is this *that* speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God
22 *only? And* Jesus *knowing* their thoughts, . . *answered*
23 *and* said *to* them, *Why* reason ye in your hearts? *Which* is easier? To say, Thy sins *are* forgiven thee? Or to
24 say, *Arise* and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath *authority on* earth to forgive sins (he said *to* the *paralytic*) I say *to* thee, Arise, . . take up
25 thy couch, and go *to* thine house. And immediately *rising* up before them, and *taking* up that *on which* he
26 lay, *he went* to his . . house, glorifying God. And they were all amazed, and . . glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day.

27 And after these things he went forth, and saw a publican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom,
28 and . . said to him, Follow me. And *leaving* all, *he*
29 rose up and followed him. And Levi made him a great *entertainment* in his own house; and there was a great company of publicans and of others that sat down with
30 them. But *the* scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with

31 publicans and sinners? And Jesus answering said *to*
them, They that are whole need not a physician, but
32 they that are sick. I came not to call the righteous,
33 but sinners to repentance. And they said *to* him, Why
do the disciples of John, and likewise . . of the Pharisees, fast often and make prayers; but thine eat and
34 drink? And he said *to* them, Can ye make the children
of the bride chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with
35 them? But the days will come, when the bridegroom
shall be taken away from them: and then shall they
36 fast in those days. . . He spake also a parable *to* them,
No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old;
. . otherwise . . both the new maketh *a* rent, and the
37 piece . . out of the new agreeth not with the old. And
no man putteth new wine into old *leathern* bottles: else
the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and
38 the bottles will perish. But new wine must be put into
39 new bottles, and both are preserved. And no man . .
having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new; for
he saith, The old is better.

6 And . . on the *first* Sabbath *after the second day of unleavened bread*, . . he went through the corn fields,
and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and *ate*,
2 rubbing them in their hands. And certain of the
Pharisees said *to* them, Why do ye what it is not lawful
3 to do on the Sabbath *day?* And Jesus answering them
said, Have ye not read *even* this, what David did, when
4 himself *hungered*, and they *that* were with him? How
he went into the house of God, and *took* and *ate* the
show bread, and gave also to them that were with him,
which it is not lawful to eat, but for the priests *only?*
5 And he said to them, . . The Son of man is Lord *even*
of the Sabbath.
6 And . . on another Sabbath also . . he *went* into the
synagogue and taught. And there was a man whose
7 right hand was withered. And the scribes and *the*
Pharisees *watched*, whether he would heal on the Sabbath . . , that they might find an accusation against
8 him. But he knew their thoughts, and said to the
man *that* had the withered hand, Rise . . and stand
forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth.
9 Then said Jesus *to* them, I will ask you, . . *Which* is . .
lawful on the Sabbath . . , To do good, or to do evil?
10 To save life, or to *kill?* And looking round . . upon
them all, he said *to him*, Stretch forth thy hand; and he
did so: and his hand was restored . . as the other.
11 And they were filled with madness, and *talked* one with
another what they *should* do to Jesus.

12 And in those days . . he went out into *the* mountain
to pray, and continued all night in *the* prayer of God.
13 And when it was day he called *to* him his disciples, and
. . chose twelve of them, whom also he named apostles:
14 Simon (whom also he . . named Peter) and Andrew his
brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,
15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alpheus, and
16 Simon called Zelotes, Jude the brother of James, and
17 Judas Iscariot, *who* also *became* a traitor. And *coming*
down with them, *he* stood *on* a plain, and the company
of his disciples, and a great multitude of people *from*
all Judea and Jerusalem, and . . the sea coast of Tyre
and Sidon, *who* were come to hear him, and to be healed
18 of their diseases; And they that were vexed with unclean
19 spirits: and they were healed. And the whole multitude
sought to touch him, for . . virtue went out of him,
and healed them all.
20 And *lifting* up his eyes on his disciples *he* said, *Happy*
21 *are* ye poor; for yours is the kingdom of God. *Happy*
are ye that hunger now; for ye shall be *satisfied: Happy*
22 are ye that weep now; for ye shall laugh. *Happy* are
ye when men shall hate you, and . . shall separate you
from their company, and shall *revile* you, and cast
out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.
23 Rejoice . . in that day and leap for joy: for behold
your reward is great in heaven; for in . . like manner
24 did their fathers *to* the prophets. But wo *to* you that
25 are rich; for ye have . . your consolation. Wo *to* you
that are full; for ye shall hunger; wo *to* you that laugh
26 now; for ye shall mourn and weep. Wo *to* you, when
all men shall speak well of you; for so did their fathers
to the false prophets.
27 But I say *to* you *that* hear, Love your enemies; do
28 good to them *that* hate you. Bless them that curse
29 you, . . pray for them *that* despitefully use you. And
to him that smiteth thee on the . . cheek, offer also
the other: and to him that taketh away thy cloak,
30 forbid not to take thy coat also. Give to every man
that asketh . . thee, and of him that taketh away thy
goods, ask them not again.
31 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye
32 also to them likewise. For if ye love them *that* love
you, what thank have ye? For sinners also love those
33 that love them. And if ye do good to them that do
good to you, what thank have ye? For *even* sinners . .
34 do the same. And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope
to receive, what thank have ye? For *even* sinners . .
35 lend to sinners, to receive as much again. But love ye
your enemies, and do good and lend, hoping for nothing

again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall
be . . *sons* of the Highest; for he is kind *to* the unthank-
36 ful and . . the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your
37 Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not
be judged: condemn not and ye shall not be condemned:
38 forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give and it shall be
given to you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken
together, and running over, shall *they* give into your
bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete with,
39 it shall be measured to you again. And he *spoke* a
parable *to* them, Can the blind lead the blind? *Will*
40 they not both fall into the ditch? The disciple is not
above his master, but every one that is perfected, shall
41 be as his master. And why beholdest thou the mote
that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam
42 that is in thine own eye? *Or* how canst thou say to
thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in
thine eye, . . thou thyself *not seeing* the beam that is
in thine own eye. Thou hypocrite, cast . . first the
beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see
clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.
43 For *there is no* good tree *which* bringeth . . forth corrupt
fruit, neither . . a corrupt tree *which* bringeth forth
44 good fruit. For every tree is known by *its* own fruit;
for *they* do not gather figs *from* thorns, nor *from* a
45 bramble *do* they gather grapes. A good man, out of
the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which
is good; and an evil man, out of the evil treasure of his
heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for *out* of the
46 abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh. And why
call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I
47 say? Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings,
48 and *doth* them, I will show you to whom he is like. He
is like a man *who* built a house, and digged deep, and
laid the foundation on a rock: and when *a* flood arose,
the stream *broke* vehemently upon that house, *but* could
49 not shake it; for it was founded *on* a rock. But he
that heareth, and doth not, is like a man that built a
house without a foundation upon the earth: against
which the stream *broke* vehemently, and immediately it
fell; and the *breach* of that house was great.

7 Now when he had ended all his sayings in the *hearing*
of the people, he entered into Capernaum. And a
2 certain centurion's servant who was dear *to* him, was
3 sick and ready to die. And *hearing* of Jesus, he sent *to*
him . . elders of the Jews, beseeching him *to* come and
4 heal his servant. And *coming* to Jesus, they besought
him *earnestly*, saying, . . he is worthy for whom *thou*

5 *shouldest* do this. For he loveth our nation, and . .
6 hath *himself built* us a synagogue. Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying *to* him, Lord, trouble not thyself; for I am not worthy that thou
7 shouldest enter under my roof. Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come *to* thee; but *speak* in a
8 word, and my servant shall be healed. For I . . am a man set under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say *to* one, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he cometh, and to my servant, Do this,
9 and he *doth* it. Jesus *hearing* these things, . . marvelled at him, and *turning*, . . said to the people that followed him, I say to you, I have not found so great faith . . in
10 Israel. And they that *had been* sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.
11 And . . he went *afterward* to a city called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him and a *great multitude.*
12 *And as he drew* nigh the gate of the city, behold . . a dead man was carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow; and a *great multitude* of the
13 city was with her. And . . the Lord *seeing* her, *was moved with tender* compassion *for* her, and said . . , Weep
14 not. And *coming near*, he touched the bier, and *the bearers* stood still. And he said, Young man, I say *to*
15 thee, Arise. And *the dead man* sat up, and began to
16 speak: and he delivered him to his mother. And *fear seized* all, and they glorified God, saying, . . A great prophet is risen up among us; and . . God hath visited
17 his people. And this rumour of him went forth through all Judea, and . . all the country round about.
18 And the disciples of John *informed* him of all these
19 things. And John, calling *to* him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that *is to* come,
20 or look we for another? And the men *being* come *to* him, . . said, John *the* Baptist hath sent us *to* thee, saying, Art thou he that *is to* come, or look we for
21 another? And in that . . hour he cured many of . . *diseases* and plagues, and of evil spirits, and *to* many
22 that were blind he gave sight. And *he* answering said *to* them, Go . . and *relate to* John *the* things ye have seen and heard: . . the blind see; the lame walk; the lepers are cleansed; the deaf hear; the dead are raised;
23 to the poor the Gospel is preached. And *happy* is he,
24 whosoever shall not be offended *at* me. And when the messengers of John were departed, he . . said *to* the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness . . to see? A reed shaken *by* the wind?
25 But what went ye out . . to see? A man clothed in

soft *garments?* Behold, they *that* are *splendidly* apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings' *palaces.* But what went ye out . . to see? A prophet? Yea, I say *to* you, and much more than a prophet. This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, *who* shall prepare *thy* way before thee. For I say *to* you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist; but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he. And all the people that heard him, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. But the Pharisees and *the scribes made void* the counsel of God *toward* themselves, being not baptized of him. . . *To whom* then shall I liken the men of this generation, and to what are they like? They are like . . children sitting in the market place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped *to* you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept. For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye say he hath a devil. The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a wine bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified *by* all her children.

And one of the Pharisees *asked* him *to* eat with him. And *going* into the Pharisee's house, *he* sat down *to table.* And behold, a woman in the city, who *had been* a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat *at table* in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, And *standing* at his feet behind him weeping *watered his feet with a shower of* tears, and . . wiped them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. *But* the Pharisee, *who* had *invited* him, *seeing* it, . . spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him; for she is a sinner. And Jesus answering said *to* him, Simon, I have somewhat to say *to* thee. And he saith, Master, say on. . . A certain creditor had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. But *they having* nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. . . *Which therefore* will love him most? Simon *answering* said, I suppose he to whom he forgave most. He said to him, Thou hast rightly judged. And *turning* to the woman, he said *to* Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into *thy* house, . . thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath *watered* my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but *she, from* the time I came in, hath

46 not ceased to kiss my feet. Thou didst not anoint my
head with oil: but *she* hath anointed my feet with
47 ointment. Wherefore I say *to* thee, *those many sins of*
hers are forgiven; *therefore* she *loveth* much: but he to
48 whom little is forgiven, . . loveth little. And he *saith*
49 *to* her, Thy sins are forgiven *thee.* And they that sat
at *table* with him *said* within themselves, Who is this
50 that forgiveth sins also? And he said to the woman,
Thy faith hath saved thee: go in peace.

8 And . . afterward . . he went through . . every city
and village preaching and *publishing* the glad tidings of
the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him.
2 And certain women who had been healed of evil spirits
and infirmities, Mary, called Magdalene, out of whom
3 *had gone* seven devils, And Joanna, the wife of Chuza,
Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, *who*
ministered *to* him of their substance.
4 And *a great multitude being* gathered together, *coming*
5 to him out of every city, he spake by a parable, A sower
went *forth* to sow his seed: and *while* he sowed, some fell
by the *high-way* side; and it was trodden down, and
6 the *birds* of the air devoured it. And some fell upon *the*
rock, and . . *springing* up, it withered away, because it
7 lacked moisture. And some fell among thorns, and the
8 thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. And other
fell on good ground, and sprang up, and *yielded* fruit *a*
hundred fold. And *saying* these things, he cried *aloud,*
9 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. And his disciples
10 asked him . . , What *is the* parable? And he said, *To*
you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of
God, but to others in parables, *so* that seeing they *do*
11 not see, and hearing they *do* not understand. Now the
12 parable is this: the seed is the word of God. Those by
the *high-way* side are they that hear; then cometh the
devil and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest
13 they should believe and be saved. *Those* on the rock
are they, *who,* when they hear, receive the word with
joy. *But they* have no root, . . who for a while believe;
14 *but* in time of temptation fall away. . . That which fell
among the thorns are they who, *having* heard, go forth,
and are choked with cares, and riches, and pleasures of
15 this life, and bring no fruit to perfection. But that on
the good ground are they *who,* having heard the word,
keep it in an honest and good heart, and bring forth
16 fruit with *perseverance.* No man . . *having* lighted a
candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a
bed; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they who
17 *come* in may see the light. For *there is* nothing *hid* that

shall not be *discovered*, neither any thing *concealed*, that
18 shall not be known and come *to light*. Take heed therefore, how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away *even what* he *most assuredly* hath.
19 Then came *toward* him his mother and his brethren,
20 *but* could not come to him for the *crowd*. And it was told him by *some who* said, Thy mother and thy brethren
21 stand without, desiring to *speak with* thee. And he *answering* said *to* them, My mother and my brethren are these *who* hear the word of God and do it.
22 *And* . . on a certain day . . he went into a *vessel* with his disciples; and he said *to* them, Let us go over *to*
23 the other side of the lake, And they *put to sea*. *And* as they sailed, he fell asleep. And there came down a storm of wind on the lake, and they were filled with
24 water, and were in *danger*. And *coming* to him, *they* awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish! *And rising* he rebuked the wind and the raging of the water,
25 and they ceased, and there was a calm. And he said *to* them, Where is your faith? *But* they were afraid *and* wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this? For he commandeth even the winds and *the* water and they obey him.
26 And they *sailed to* the country of the Gadarenes,
27 which is over against Galilee. And *as* he went forth to land, there met him out of the city, a certain man *that* had *had* devils *a* long time, and wore no clothes, neither
28 abode in *a* house, but in the tombs. *But seeing* Jesus, he cried out and fell down before him, and said with a loud voice, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I beseech thee torment me
29 not. (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man: for *many* times it had caught him, and he had been kept bound with chains and . . fetters, and . . *breaking* the bands *asunder*, . . *he had been*
30 driven *by* the devil into the deserts.) And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion;
31 because many devils *had* entered into him. And they besought him that he would not command them to go
32 *away* into the *abyss*. And there was *a* herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him, that he would suffer them to enter into them: and he
33 suffered them. Then the devils *going* out of the man, . . entered into the swine: and the herd *rushed* . . down
34 the steep . . into the lake, and were *stifled*. *And* they that . . fed them, *seeing* what was done, . . fled, and
35 went and told it in the city and in the country. Then they went out to see what was done, and came to Jesus,

and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right
36 mind: and they were afraid. They also *that had seen* it *related to* them, *how* he that was possessed *by* the devils,
37 was healed. Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear, and he
38 went . . into the *vessel* and returned. . . *And* the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him. But Jesus sent him away,
39 saying, Return *home*, and *tell* how great things God hath done *for* thee. And he went . . and published through . . the whole city, how great things Jesus had done *for* him.
40 And . . when Jesus . . returned, the *multitude* gladly
41 received him; for they were all waiting for him. And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue; and *falling* down at the feet
42 of Jesus, *he* besought him . . *to* come *to* his house. For he had *an* only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay dying. But as he went, the *multitude*
43 thronged him. And a woman *who had had a flux* of blood twelve years, *and* had spent all her living upon
44 physicians, neither could be healed *by* any, *Coming* behind him, touched the border of his garment, and
45 immediately her *flux* of blood stanched. And Jesus said, Who touched me; when all denied, Peter and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and press thee, and sayest thou, Who *is it that*
46 touched me? And Jesus said, *Some one* hath touched
47 me; for I *know* that virtue is gone out of me. And the woman, *seeing* that she was not hid, . . came trembling, and falling down before him, . . declared *to* him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and
48 how she *had been* healed immediately. And he said *to* her, Daughter, *take courage:* thy faith hath *saved thee;*
49 go in peace. While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogues . . , saying to him,
50 Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master. Jesus *hearing* it, . . answered him, saying, Fear not; only
51 believe, and she shall be made whole. And coming into the house, he suffered *none* to go in, save Peter and John and James, and the father and the mother of the maiden.
52 And all wept and bewailed her. But he said, Weep
53 not; she is not dead; but sleepeth. And they laughed
54 him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and *taking* her by the hand, . . called,
55 saying, Maid, arise. And her spirit *returned*, and she arose straightway, and he commanded to give her *to eat.*

56 And her parents were astonished; but he charged them . . *to* tell no man what *had been* done.

9 And calling together the twelve, he gave them power and authority over all devils and to cure diseases. And
2 he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal
3 the sick. And said *to* them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, *nor* bread, *nor* money:
4 neither have two coats apiece. And into whatsoever
5 house ye enter there abide and thence depart. And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city shake off the very dust from your feet for a testi-
6 mony against them. And they departed, and went through the towns preaching the Gospel, and healing every where.
7 Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all *the things that were* done by him. And he was perplexed, because . . it was said *by* some, that John was risen from the dead;
8 and *by* some, that *Elijah* had appeared: . . *by* others,
9 that one of the old prophets was risen again. And Herod said, John have I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he *sought* to see him.
10 And the apostles *returning* told him *whatsoever* they had done. And he took them and went aside privately
11 into *the* desert *of* Bethsaida. And when the *multitudes* knew it, *they* followed him, and he received them, and spake *to* them of the kingdom of God, and healed them
12 that had need of healing. And . . the day began to *decline: and* the twelve *coming to him* said, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about and lodge, and *find victuals:* for
13 we are here in a desert place. But he said *to* them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more *than* five loaves and two fishes, except we should go and
14 buy meat for all this people. For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them
15 sit down by fifties in a company. And they did so, and
16 made them all sit down. *Then taking* the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before
17 the multitude. And they *all ate* and were . . *satisfied,* and there were taken up of fragments that remained . . twelve baskets.
18 And as he was . . praying *apart,* his disciples were with him. And he asked them saying, Whom say the
19 people that I am? They answering said, John the Baptist; but some say, *Elijah;* and others, . . that one
20 of the old prophets is risen again. He said to them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering said,

21 The Christ of God. But he straitly charged . . and
22 commanded them, to tell *this to* no man, saying, The
Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected
of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be *killed*,
and be raised the third day.
23 And he said to . . all, If any man *be willing* to come
after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross
24 daily, and follow me. For whosoever *desireth to* save
his life shall lose it; but whosoever *shall* lose his life
25 for my sake, *he* shall save it: For what is a man *profited*,
if he gain the whole world, and lose himself or be cast
26 away? For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of
my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed,
when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's,
27 and *that* of the holy angels. And I tell you of a truth
there *are* some standing here, *who* shall not taste of
death till they see the kingdom of God.
28 And . . about eight days after these sayings, he took
Peter and John and James, and went up into *the* moun-
29 tain to pray. And as he prayed the fashion of his
countenance was altered, and his raiment *became* white
30 and glistering. And behold, two men talked with him,
31 *who* were Moses and *Elijah*, Who *appearing* in glory,
spake of his decease, which he *was about* to accomplish
32 at Jerusalem. But Peter and *those* with him were
weighed down with sleep; and *awaking* they saw his
33 glory, and the two men that stood with him. And . .
just as they *were parting* from him, Peter said to Jesus,
Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make
three *tents*, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for
34 *Elijah*, not knowing what he said. While he spake thus,
. . a cloud came and overshadowed them, and they
35 feared *while* they entered into the cloud. And there
came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved
36 Son; hear *ye* him. And when the voice was past, Jesus
was found alone: and they *held their peace*, and told no
man in those days any of those things which they had seen.
37 And . . the next day, *as* they *came* down from the
38 *mountain, a great multitude* met him. And behold, a
man *from the multitude* cried *aloud*, saying, Master, I
beseech thee, look upon *my* son; for he is *my* only child.
39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out,
and it teareth him that he foameth . . . and bruising
40 him hardly departeth from him. And I besought thy
41 disciples to cast him out, and they could not. And Jesus
answering, said, O faithless and perverse generation,
how long shall I be with you and suffer you? Bring
42 thy son hither. And as he was yet coming, the devil
threw him down and tore *him:* and Jesus rebuked the

unclean spirit, . . healed the child, and delivered him
43 again to his father. And they were all amazed at the
mighty power of God. *And* while they *all* wondered
. . at all things which Jesus did, he said *to* his disciples,
44 Let these sayings sink down into your ears; for the
Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.
45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from
them, *so* that they perceived it not; and they feared to
46 ask him of *this* saying. *And* there arose a reasoning
47 among them, which of them *was the* greatest? And Jesus
seeing the reasoning of their heart, took a *little* child,
48 and set him by him, And said *to* them, Whosoever shall
receive this child, in my name, receiveth me; and whoso-
ever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for
he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.
49 And John *answering*, . . said, Master, we saw one
casting out devils in thy name, and we forbad him;
50 because he followeth not . . us. And Jesus said *to* him,
Forbid him not, for he that is not against *you* is for *you*.
51 And . . when the *days were fulfilled*, that he should
be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to
52 Jerusalem. And sent messengers before his face, and
they went and entered into a village of the Samaritans,
53 to make ready for him. *But* they did not receive him,
because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.
54 And . . his disciples James and John *seeing it*, . . said,
Lord, wilt thou that we *bid* fire . . come . . from
55 heaven and consume them, even as *Elijah* did? But he
turning, rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what
56 manner of spirit ye are of: For the Son of man is not
come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And
they went to another village.
57 And . . as they went in the way, *one* said *to* him,
58 Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. But
Jesus said *to* him, *The* foxes have holes, and the birds
of the air have nests: but the Son of man hath not
59 where to lay his head. And he said to another, Follow
me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury
60 my father. Jesus said *to* him, Let the dead bury their
dead, but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.
61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but
suffer me first *to* bid them farewell *that* are . . in my
62 house. . . Jesus said to him, No man having put his
hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the
kingdom of God.

10 After these things the Lord appointed other seventy
also, and sent them two *by* two before his face into
every city and place, whither he himself *intended* to

2 come. . . *And* he said *to* them, The harvest truly is
plenteous, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore
the Lord of the harvest, that he would *thrust* forth
3 labourers into his harvest. Go . . : behold I send you
4 forth as lambs *in the midst of* wolves. Carry *not* purse,
5 *or* scrip, *or* shoes, and salute no man by the way. And
into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to
6 this house. And if a son of peace be there, your peace
shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.
7 And remain in the same house eating and drinking such
things as they have; for the labourer is worthy of his
8 hire: *remove* not from house to house. And into what-
soever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things
9 as are set before you. And heal the sick that are therein,
and say *to* them, The kingdom of God is come nigh *to*
10 you. But into whatsoever city ye enter and they receive
11 you not, *going* . . out into the street of *it*, . . say, Even
the . . dust of your city which cleaveth *to our feet* do
we wipe off against you; *yet know this* that the kingdom
12 of God is *at hand*. . . I say *to* you . . it shall be more
13 tolerable for Sodom in that day than for that city. Wo
to thee, Chorazin, wo *to* thee, Bethsaida; for if the
mighty works which have been done in you, had been
done in Tyre and Sidon, they *would have* repented *long*
14 *ago*, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it shall be more
tolerable for Tyre and Sidon *in* the judgment than for
15 you. And thou Capernaum, which *hast been* exalted to
16 heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell. He that heareth
you, heareth me; and he that *rejecteth* you, *rejecteth* me;
and he that *rejecteth* me, *rejecteth* him that sent me.
17 And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even
18 the devils are subject to us through thy name. And he
said *to* them, I beheld Satan *falling* as lightning from
19 heaven. Behold, I give . . you power to tread on
serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the
20 enemy, and nothing shall *in any wise* hurt you. *Yet* in
this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject *to* you; but
rather rejoice, *that* your names are written in heaven.
21 In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit and said, I thank
thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou
hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and
hast revealed them *to* babes; even so, Father, for so it
22 *seemeth* good in thy sight. All things are delivered *to*
me of my Father; and no *one* knoweth who the Son is,
but the Father, and who the Father is, but the Son, and
23 he to whom the Son *is pleased to* reveal him. And
turning to the disciples *apart*, he said . . , Blessed are the
24 eyes which see the things that ye see. For I tell you,
. . many prophets and kings have desired to see *the*

things which ye see, and have not seen them, and to hear *the* things which ye hear, and have not heard them.
25 And behold, a certain *scribe* stood up, and *trying* him, *said*, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?
26 He said *to* him, What is written in the law? How
27 readest thou? And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind;
28 and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said *to* him, Thou hast answered right: this do and thou shalt live.
29 But he willing to justify himself, said *to* Jesus, And who
30 is my neighbour? And Jesus answering, said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among *robbers, who having* stripped . . and wounded
31 him, . . departed, leaving him half dead. And *it came to pass that a certain priest* came down that way, and
32 *seeing* him, passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked
33 . . , and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan *journeying*, came where he was, and *seeing*
34 him, *was moved with tender compassion*, And *going* to him, . . bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and *setting* him on his own beast, . . brought him to an inn,
35 and took care of him. And on the morrow *departing*, he took out two *pieces of money*, and gave them to the host, and said *to* him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, *as I come back* I will repay thee.
36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was the neigh-
37 bour *to* him that fell among the *robbers?* And he said, He that showed mercy on him. Then said Jesus *to* him, Go and do thou *in like manner.*
38 *And* . . as they went, . . he entered into a certain village, and a certain woman named Martha received
39 him into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, *who* also *sitting* at the feet of Jesus, . . heard his *dis-*
40 *course.* But Martha was encumbered *with* much serving, and *coming* to him *she* said, Lord, dost thou not care, that my sister hath left me to serve alone? Bid her
41 therefore . . help me. *But* Jesus *answering*, . . said *to* her, Martha, Martha! Thou art careful and *hurried*
42 about many things: But one thing is needful; and Mary hath chosen *the* good part, which shall not be taken . . from her.

11 And . . as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said *to* him, Lord, teach
2 us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. And he said *to* them, when ye pray, say, Our Father *who* art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come:

thy will be done as in heaven, so *on* earth. Give us
day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins;
for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us.
And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from
evil. And he *saith to* them, Which of you shall have a
friend, and shall go *to* him at midnight, and say to him,
Friend, lend me three loaves: For a friend of mine on
his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set
before him: And he from within shall answer, Trouble
me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with
me in bed: I cannot rise and give thee: I *tell* you,
though he will not rise and give him because he is his
friend, yet because of his importunity, he will rise and
give him as many as he needeth. And I say *to* you,
Ask and it shall be given you, seek and ye shall find,
knock and it shall be opened *to* you. For every one
that asketh receiveth, and he that seeketh findeth, and
to him that knocketh it shall be opened. If a son shall
ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him
a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him
a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he *give* him a
scorpion? If ye then being evil know how to give good
gifts *to* your children, how much more will your heavenly
Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?
And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb:
and *when* the devil was gone out, the dumb spake, and
the *multitude* wondered. But some of them said, He
casteth out devils by Beelzebub the prince of the devils:
And others tempting him, sought of him a sign from
heaven. But he knowing their thoughts, said *to* them,
Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to
desolation, and a house divided against a house falleth.
If Satan *then* be divided against himself, how shall his
kingdom stand? Because ye say that I cast out devils
by Beelzebub. And if I cast out devils by Beelzebub,
by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore they
shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils *by* the
finger of God, *then* the kingdom of God is come upon
you. *While the* strong *one* armed *guardeth* his palace,
his goods are in peace, But when *he that is stronger* than
him *cometh* upon him and over*cometh* him, he taketh
from him *his complete* armour wherein he trusted and
divideth his spoils. He that is not with me is against
me, and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.
When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh
through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he
saith, I will return *to* my house whence I came out.
And *coming* he findeth it swept and garnished. Then
goeth he and taketh to him seven other spirits more

wicked than himself; and *entering* in they dwell there; and the last state of that man *becometh* worse than the first.

27 As he spake these things, a certain woman . . *lifting* up her voice *out of the multitude* said to him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast
28 sucked! But he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it.

29 *And the multitudes being* gathered thick together, he *said*, This is an evil generation: *it seeketh* a sign; *but*
30 no sign shall be given it, *save* the sign of Jonah. . . For as Jonah was a sign *to* the Ninevites, so shall also the
31 Son of man be to this generation. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation and condemn them; for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.
32 The *Ninevites* shall rise up in the judgment with this generation and . . condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

33 No man *having* lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick,
34 that they *who* come in may see the light. The eye is the *lamp* of the body; therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body . . is full of light, but when thine eye
35 is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. Take heed therefore, *lest* the light *that* is in thee be . . darkness.
36 If then thy whole body be full of light, *not having any* part dark, the whole shall be *as* full of light, as when *a lamp enlighteneth thee with its bright shining.*

37 And as he spake, a certain Pharisee *asked* him to dine
38 with him. And he went in and sat down to *table. But* the Pharisee *seeing* it, . . marvelled that he had not
39 first washed *himself* before dinner. And the Lord said *to* him, Now ye Pharisees *cleanse* the outside of the cup and *dish:* but your inward part is full of *rapine* and
40 wickedness. Ye *unthinking men,* did not he that made
41 *the outside* make *the inside* also? But . . *give what is in them in alms,* and behold all things are clean to you.
42 But wo *to* you, Pharisees; for ye tithe mint and rue and all . . herbs, and pass *by justice* and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other
43 undone. Wo *to* you, Pharisees; for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and *salutations* in the
44 markets. Wo *to* you . . , for ye are as graves which appear not, and men that walk over them are not
45 aware . . . *And* one of the lawyers *answering said to* him, Master, thus saying thou reproachest us also.

46 And he said, Wo *to* you lawyers also; for ye *load* men
with burthens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves
47 touch not the burthens with one of your fingers. Wo
to you; for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and
48 your fathers killed them. Truly ye *bare* witness that ye
approve the deeds of your fathers; for *whom* they killed,
49 . . ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also the wisdom
of God *hath* said, I will send them prophets and apostles,
and some of them they *will kill*, and persecute *the rest.*
50 *So* that the blood of all the prophets . . shed from the
foundation of the world, *shall* be required of this genera-
51 tion. From the blood of Abel to the blood of Zachariah,
who was destroyed between the temple and the altar:
Verily I say *to* you, it shall be required of this generation.
52 Wo *to* you, lawyers; for ye have taken away the key of
knowledge: ye *have* not entered in yourselves; and
53 them that were entering in, ye *have* hindered. And as
he said these things *to* them, the scribes and the Pharisees
began *fiercely to fasten upon him*, and to *urge* him to
54 speak of many things, Laying wait for him, and seeking
to catch something out of his mouth, that they might
accuse him.

12 In the meantime an innumerable multitude *being*
gathered together, *so* that they trod one upon another,
he *said* to his disciples first. . , Beware . . of the
2 leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. For there
is nothing covered that shall not be *uncovered*, neither
3 hid, that shall not be *made* known: *So that* whatsoever
ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light,
and *what* ye have *whispered* . . in closets shall be
4 proclaimed *on* the house tops. *But* I say *to* you, my
friends, *Fear not* them that kill the body, and after . .
5 that can do no more: But I will *show* you whom ye shall
fear: fear him, *who* after he hath killed, hath power to
6 cast into hell: yea, I say *to* you, fear him. Are not five
sparrows sold for two farthings? *Yet* not one of them is
7 forgotten before God. But even the hairs of your head
are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more
8 value than many sparrows. *And* I say *to* you, Whoso-
ever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of
9 man also confess before the angels of God. But he
that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the
10 angels of God. And whosoever shall speak . . against
the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but *to* him
who blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not
11 be forgiven. *But* when they bring you *to* the synagogues
and *to* magistrates and powers, take . . no thought how
12 or what . . ye shall answer, or what ye shall say. For

the Holy Ghost shall teach you in *that* hour what ye
ought to say.
13 And one of the *multitude* said *to* him, Master, speak
to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.
14 *But* he said *to* him, Man, who made me a judge or a
15 divider over you? And he said *to* them, Take heed and
beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not
in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.
16 And he spake a parable to them, saying, The *land* of a
17 certain rich man brought forth plentifully. And he
reasoned in himself, saying, What shall I do? *For* I
18 have no room where to *stow* my fruits. And he said,
This I will do: I will pull down my barns and build
greater; and there will I *stow* all my fruits and goods.
19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods
laid up for many years: take thine ease; eat, drink, . .
20 be merry. But God said *to* him, Thou fool, this night
they require thy soul of thee: and whose shall *the* things
21 be *that* thou hast provided? So is he that layeth up
treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.
22 And he said *to* his disciples, therefore I say *to* you,
Take no thought for your life what ye shall eat, neither
23 for the body what ye shall put on. The life is more
24 than meat, and the body . . than raiment. Consider
the ravens; for they neither sow nor reap; . . neither
have storehouse nor barn: *yet* God feedeth them. How
25 much . . better are ye than the *birds?* And which of
you *by* taking thought, can add *the least measure to his*
26 *age?* If ye then be not able to do *even that* which is
27 least, why take ye thought for the rest? Consider the
lilies, how they grow; they toil not, *neither do* they spin;
and yet I say *to* you, that Solomon in all his glory was
28 not arrayed like one of these. If then God so clothe
the grass which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow
is cast *into* the *still,* how much more *will* he clothe you,
29 O ye of little faith? And seek not ye what ye shall eat
or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of a doubtful
30 mind. For the nations of the world seek . . all these
things; and your Father knoweth that ye . . need . .
31 these things. But . . seek ye the kingdom of God,
32 and all these things shall be added *to* you. Fear not,
little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give
33 you the kingdom. Sell what ye have and give alms:
provide yourselves *purses* which wax not old, a treasure
in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approach-
34 eth, neither moth corrupteth. For where your treasure
35 is, there will your heart be also. Let your loins be
36 *girt* . . , and your *lamps* burning, And ye . . like . .
men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from

the wedding, that, when he cometh and knocketh, they
37 may open *to* him immediately. *Happy* . . those servants, whom the Lord, when he cometh, shall find watching; verily I say *to* you, that he will gird himself, and make them . . sit down to *table*, and will come . .
38 and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so,
39 *happy* are those servants. And this *ye* know, that if the . . *master* of the house had known what hour the thief would *have* come, he would have watched, and not
40 *have* suffered his house to be *broke open*. Therefore be ye also ready; for the Son of man cometh *in* an hour
41 when ye think not. Then Peter said *to* him, Lord,
42 speakest thou this parable *to* us, or *also* to all? And the Lord said, Who . . is that faithful and wise steward, whom his Lord shall make ruler over his household, to
43 give . . *the allowance of food* in due season? *Happy* . . that servant, whom his Lord, when he cometh, shall
44 find so doing. *Verily* I say *to* you, . . he will *set* him . .
45 over all that he hath. But . . if that servant say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming, and shall begin to beat the men servants and maidens, and to eat, and
46 drink, and be drunken: The Lord of that servant will come in a day when he *expecteth not*, and at an hour when he *knoweth not*, and will cut him in sunder, and appoint
47 him his portion with the *unfaithful*. And that servant who knew his Lord's will, and prepared not . . , neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many
48 stripes. But he that knew not, and did . . things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few. . . For *to* whomsoever much is given, of him much shall be required; and to whom *they* have committed much, of
49 him they will ask the more. I am come to send fire on the earth. And what *do I desire? That it were*
50 already kindled! . . I have a baptism to be baptized with: and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!
51 Suppose ye that I am come to give peace *upon* earth?
52 I tell you, Nay, but rather division: For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three
53 against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.
54 And he said to the people also, When ye see a cloud *rising* out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh
55 a *heavy* shower, and so it is. And when ye *find* the south wind *blowing*, ye say, There will be *sultry* heat; and it

56 *is so.* Ye hypocrites, ye *know to* discern the face of
the earth and of the sky: . . how . . do ye not discern
57 this *season?* Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye
58 not what is right? When thou *art going* with thine
adversary to the magistrate, give diligence . . in the
way *to* be delivered from him, lest he hale thee to the
judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and
59 the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt
in nowise come out thence till thou hast paid the last mite.

13 *And* there were present at that season some that
told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had
2 mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering
said *to* them, Suppose ye that *those* Galileans were
sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered
3 such things? I tell you, Nay; but except ye repent, ye
4 shall all likewise perish. Or those eighteen *on* whom
the tower in Siloam fell and slew them, *suppose* ye that
they were sinners above all men that dwelt at Jerusalem?
5 I tell you, Nay; but except ye repent, ye shall all like-
6 wise perish. He spake also this parable. A . . man had a
fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came *seeking* fruit
7 thereon, and found none. Then said he *to* the *keeper*
of *the* vineyard, Behold, . . three years I come seeking
fruit *from* this fig tree, and find none; cut it down: why
8 *doth* it *also* cumber the ground? And he answering
said *to* him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall
9 dig about it and dung it. *Perhaps it may bear fruit;*
but if not, . . after that thou shalt cut it down.
10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the
11 Sabbath. And behold, there was a woman *who had*
had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed
12 together, and *utterly unable to* lift up herself. And
Jesus *seeing* her, . . called her to him, and said *to* her,
13 Woman, thou art loosed from thy infirmity. And he
laid his hands on her, and immediately she was made
14 straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the
synagogue *being much displeased,* because . . Jesus had
healed on the Sabbath day, *answered* and said *to* the
multitude, There are six days, in which men ought to
work: *on these* therefore come and be healed, and not
15 on the Sabbath. . . The Lord . . answered him and
said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each . . of you loose his
ox or his ass from the stall on the Sabbath, and lead
16 him away to watering? And ought not this woman,
being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound,
lo these eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on
17 the Sabbath? And when he had said these things, all
his adversaries were ashamed: and all the *multitude*

rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 Then said he, *To* what is the kingdom of God like,
19 and *to what* shall I resemble it? It is like a grain of mustard seed which a man took and cast into his garden; and it grew and *became* a great tree, and the
20 *birds* of the air lodged in the branches of it. . . Again
21 he said, Whereto shall I liken the kingdom of God? It is like leaven, which a woman took and *covered up* in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.
22 And he went through *all* the cities and villages,
23 teaching and journeying toward Jerusalem. Then said one *to* him, Lord are there few that *are* saved? And he
24 said to *him*, Strive to enter in *through* the strait gate; for many, I say *to* you, will seek to enter in, and shall
25 not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut the door, and ye begin to stand without, and . . knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open *to* us: he shall answer and say to you, I know ye
26 not whence ye are. Then shall ye . . say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught
27 in our streets. But he shall say, I tell you I know not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye workers of
28 iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and . . your-
29 selves thrust out. And they shall come from the east and the west, and the north and the south, and shall sit
30 down in the kingdom of God. *But* behold there are last *who* shall be first, and there are first who shall be last.
31 The same day . . came certain Pharisees saying *to* him, *Go* . . out and depart *from* hence; for Herod *is*
32 *minded to* kill thee. And he said *to* them, Go and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I *perform* cures to-day and to-morrow; and the third day I *am* perfected.
33 *But* I must *go on* to-day and to-morrow, and the day following; for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of
34 Jerusalem. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *that* killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent *to* thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a *bird gathereth* her brood under her wings, and ye would
35 not! Behold, your house is left *to* you desolate: and . . I say *to* you, Ye shall not see me, *till* the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

14 And . . as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees on the Sabbath, to eat bread, . . they
2 *were watching* him. And behold, there was a certain

3 man before him, *who* had the dropsy. And Jesus
answering spake *to* the *scribes* and Pharisees, saying,
4 Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath day? *But* they
held their peace. And he took him and healed him,
5 and let him go, And answered them, saying, Which of
you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and
will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath
6 day? And they could not answer him again to these
things.
7 And he *spake* a parable *to* them *that were invited*, when
he marked how they chose the chief *seats*, saying *to*
8 them, When thou art *invited by* any man to a *marriage*
feast, sit not down in the highest *place*, lest a more
9 honourable man than thou be *invited by* him; And he
that *invited* thee and him come and say to thee, Give
this man place. And *then* thou *shalt* begin with shame
10 to take the lowest *place*. But when thou art *invited*, go
and sit down in the lowest *place*, that when he *who*
invited thee cometh, he may say . . , Friend, go up
higher: then shalt thou have *honour* in the presence of
11 them that sit at table with thee. For *every one* that
exalteth himself shall be *humbled*, and he that humbleth
himself shall be exalted.
12 Then said he also to him that *had invited* him, When
thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends,
nor thy brethren, *nor* thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours, lest they also invite thee again, and a recompense
13 be made thee. But when thou makest an *entertainment*,
14 *invite* the poor, the *disabled*, the lame, the blind: And
thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee;
but thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of
the just.
15 And one of them that sat at table with him *hearing*
these things, . . said *to* him, *Happy* is he that shall eat
16 bread in the kingdom of God. Then said he *to* him,
A certain man made a great supper, and *invited* many,
17 And he sent his servant at supper time to say to them
that were *invited*, Come, for all things are now ready.
18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse.
The first said *to* him, I have bought a *field*, and I must
19 needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused. And
another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go
20 to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. And
another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I
21 cannot come. So *the* servant came, and showed his
lord these things. Then the master of the house being
angry, said to his servants, Go out quickly into the
streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the
22 poor, and the *disabled*, and the *lame*, and the blind. And

the servant said, *Sir*, it is done as thou hast commanded;
23 and yet there is room. And the lord said *to* the servant,
Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them
24 to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say *to*
you, that none of those men *who* were *invited* shall taste
of my supper.
25 And . . great multitudes went with him. And he
26 turned and said *to* them, If any man come to me, and
hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children,
and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also,
27 he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not
bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.
28 *And* which of you intending to build a tower sitteth not
down first, and *computeth* the cost, whether he hath
29 sufficient to finish it? Lest haply after he hath laid
the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that
30 behold . . mock him, saying, This man began to build,
31 and was not able to finish. Or what king *marching* to
encounter another king *in war*, sitteth not down first,
and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand,
to meet him that cometh against him with twenty
32 thousand? *If not*, while the other is yet a great way
off, he sendeth an embassage, and desireth conditions
33 of peace. So . . *every one* of you, *who* forsaketh not
34 all that he hath, . . cannot be my disciple. Salt is
good; but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith
35 shall it be seasoned? It is neither fit for the land nor
yet for *dung;* . . *they* cast it out. He that hath ears
to hear, let him hear.

15 Then drew near *to* him all the publicans and
sinners, . . to hear him. And the Pharisees and
2 scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners,
3 and eateth with them. And he spake *a* parable *to*
4 them, saying, *Who* of you having *a* hundred sheep,
and losing one of them, doth not leave the ninety and
nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost,
5 *till* he find it? And *having* found it, he layeth it on his
6 shoulders rejoicing. And *coming* home, he calleth to-
gether his friends and neighbours, saying *to* them,
Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was
7 lost. I say *to* you, *Thus* . . joy shall be in heaven over
one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and
8 nine just persons, who *do not* need repentance. *Or* what
woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece,
doth not light a candle and sweep the house, and seek
9 diligently till she find it? And *having* found it, she
calleth her friends and . . neighbours together, saying,
Rejoice with me, for I have found the piece which I

10 had lost. *Thus* I say *to* you, There is joy in the presence
of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.
11 And he said, A certain man had two sons. And the
younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the
portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided *to*
13 them his *substance.* And not many days after, the
younger son *having* gathered all together, . . took *a*
journey into a far country, and there *squandered away*
14 his substance, *living riotously:* And when he had spent
all, there arose a mighty famine in that *country;* and
15 he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself
to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his
16 fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his
belly with the husks that the swine *ate:* and no man
17 gave *to* him. And *coming* to himself he said, How many
hired servants of my *father* have bread enough and to
18 spare, and I *am perishing* with hunger? I will arise and
go to my father, and will say *to* him, Father, I have
19 sinned against Heaven and before thee: . . *I* am no
more worthy to be called thy son; make me as one of
20 thy hired servants. And he arose and came to his
father: but *while* he was yet a great way off, his father
saw him, and *his bowels yearned,* and *he* ran, and fell
21 on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto
him, Father, I have sinned against Heaven and *before*
22 *thee,* and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But
the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe
and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes
23 on his feet. And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill
24 it, and let us eat and be merry. For this my son was
dead, and is alive again: he was lost, and is found.
25 And they began to be merry. Now his *eldest* son was
in the field. And as he came and drew nigh to the
26 house, he heard music and dancing. And *calling* one of
27 the servants, *he* asked what these things meant? And
he *told* him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath
killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him *in*
28 *good health. But* he was angry, and would not go in:
29 therefore his father *coming* out, . . entreated him. And
he answering, said to his father, Lo, *so* many years do
I serve thee, neither transgressed I thy commandment
at any time; . . yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I
30 might make merry with my friends. But as soon as
this thy son was come, *who* hath devoured thy *substance*
with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.
31 And he said *to* him, Son, thou art *always* with me, and
32 all that I have is thine. But it was meet . . *to* make
merry and be glad; for this thy brother was dead, and
is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

16 And he said also *to* his disciples, There was a certain
rich man *who* had a steward; and *he* was accused *to*
2 him *as wasting* his goods. And *calling* him, *he* said *to*
him, *Why* hear I this of thee? Give an account of thy
3 stewardship, for thou canst be no longer steward. And
the steward said *in* himself, What shall I do? For my
lord taketh away the stewardship from me. I cannot
4 dig; to beg I am ashamed. I *know* what to do, that
when I am *removed* from the stewardship, they may
5 receive me into their houses. So *having* called *to* him
every one of his lord's debtors, *he* said *to* the first,
6 How much owest thou *to* my lord? And he said, *A*
hundred measures of oil. . . He said *to* him, Take thy
7 bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. Then said
he to another, And how much owest thou? He said, *A*
hundred measures of wheat. He saith, Take thy bill,
8 and write four-score. And the lord commended the
unjust steward, because he had done wisely; for the
children of this world are wiser in their generation than
9 the children of light. And I say *to* you, Make to your-
selves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness, that,
when ye fail, they may receive you into *the* everlasting
10 habitations. He that is faithful in *the* least, is faithful
also in much; and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust
11 also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful
in the unrighteous mammon, who will *intrust you with*
12 the true riches? And if ye have not been faithful in
that which is *another's*, who *will* give you that which is
13 your own? No servant can serve two masters; for
either he will hate the one, and love the other, or . . he
will cleave to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot
serve God and mammon.
14 And the Pharisees . . , who were covetous, heard all
15 these things, and they derided him. And he said *to*
them, Ye are they *who* justify yourselves before men:
but God knoweth your hearts; *and* that which is highly
esteemed among men, is an abomination *before* God.
16 The law and the prophets were until John: *from* that
time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man
17 *forceth* into it. *Yet* it is easier for heaven and earth to
18 pass, than for one tittle of the law to fail. Whosoever
putteth away his wife and marrieth another, committeth
adultery; and whosoever marrieth her that is put away
19 from her husband, committeth adultery. There was a
certain rich man, *who* was clothed in purple and fine
20 linen, and *feasted splendidly* every day. And there was
a certain beggar, named Lazarus, *who* was laid at his
21 gate full of sores; And desiring to be fed with the
crumbs *that* fell from the rich man's table: *yea*, the dogs

22 also came and licked his sores. And . . the beggar
died, and was carried by angels into Abraham's bosom:
23 the rich man also died, and was buried: And in hell
lifting up his eyes, being in torments, *he* seeth Abraham
24 afar off and Lazarus in his bosom; And *crying out, he*
said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send
Lazarus . . *to* dip the tip of his finger in water and
25 cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But
Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime
receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil
things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.
26 And beside all this, between us and you there is a great
gulf fixed; so that they *who* would pass from hence to
you, cannot, neither can they pass that would come to
27 us from thence. Then he said, I pray thee, therefore,
father, that thou wouldst send him to my father's
28 house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify
to them, lest they also come into this place of torment.
29 Abraham saith to him, They have Moses and the proph-
30 ets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father
Abraham; but if one *go to* them from the dead, they
31 will repent. And he said *to* him, If they hear not Moses
and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though
one rose from the dead.

17 Then said he *to* the disciples, It is impossible but . .
offences will come; but wo *to* him through whom
2 they come. It were better for him that a millstone were
hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than
3 that he should offend one of these little ones. Take
heed to yourselves; if thy brother *sin*, rebuke him, and
4 if he repent, forgive him. And if he *sin* against thee
seven times in a day, and seven times in a day *return*
5 to thee, saying, I repent, thou shalt forgive him. And
6 the apostles said *to* the Lord, Increase our faith. And the
Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye
might say to this sycamine tree, Be thou *rooted up*, and
be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you.
7 But which of you having a servant ploughing or feeding
cattle, will say *to* him *as soon as he cometh* from the field,
8 *Come* and sit down to *table?* And will not rather say
to him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird
thyself and serve me till I have eaten . . , and after-
9 ward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank that
servant because he did the things that were commanded
10 him? I *think* not. So likewise ye, when ye . . have
done all *the* things *that* are commanded you, say, We
are unprofitable servants: we have done what was our
duty to do.

11 And . . as he went to Jerusalem, . . he passed
12 through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he
entered into a certain village, there met him ten *lepers*
13 . . , *who* stood afar off: And they lifted up their voice
14 and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. And *seeing*
them, he said *to* them, Go, show yourselves *to* the
priests. And . . as they went, they were cleansed.
15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed,
16 turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God. And
fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks;
17 and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering said,
Were there not ten cleansed? But where are the nine?
18 There are not found . . *returning* to give glory to God,
19 save this stranger. And he said *to* him, Arise *and* go
. . , thy faith hath *saved thee.*
20 And *being asked by* the Pharisees, When *cometh* the
kingdom of God, he answered them and said, The
21 kingdom of God cometh not with observation. Neither
shall they say, Lo here, or lo there; for behold, the
22 kingdom of God is within you. And he said *to* the
disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to
see one of the days of the Son of man, and shall not
23 see it. And *when* they shall say to you, See here; or
24 see there; go not . . , nor follow them. For as the
lightning that lighteneth out of the one part under
heaven, shineth *to* the other part under heaven, so
25 shall . . the Son of man be in his day. But first he
must suffer many things, and be rejected by this gen-
26 eration. And as it was in the days of Noah, so shall
27 it be also in the days of the Son of man. They *ate,* they
drank, they married . . , they were given in marriage,
till the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the
28 flood came and destroyed them all. Likewise also as
it was in the days of Lot: they *ate,* they drank, they
29 bought, they sold, they planted, they builded: But the
day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and
30 brimstone from heaven and destroyed them all. Even
thus shall it be in the day *that* the Son of man is revealed.
31 In that day, he *that* shall be *on* the house top and his
goods in the house, let him not *go* down to take them
away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not
32 return back. Remember Lot's wife. Whosoever shall
seek to save his life, shall lose it, and whosoever shall
34 lose his life, shall preserve it. I tell you, in that night
there shall be two men in one bed; . . one shall be
35 taken and the other . . left. Two women shall be
grinding together; . . one shall be taken and the other
36 left. Two men shall be in the field; . . one shall be
37 taken and the other left. And they *answering* said *to*

him, Where, Lord? And he said *to* them, Wheresoever
the body is, *there* will the eagles be gathered together.

18 And he spake a parable *to* them to this end, that
men ought always to pray, and not to faint, Saying,
2 There was in a *certain* city a judge *who* feared not God
3 *nor reverenced* man. And there was a widow in that
city, and she came *to* him, saying, *Do me justice on* mine
4 adversary. And he would not for a while, but after-
ward he said *in* himself, Though I fear not God nor
5 *reverence* man, Yet because this widow *giveth me trouble,*
I will *do her justice,* lest by her continual coming she
6 weary me out. And the Lord said, Hear what the
7 unjust *judge* saith! And shall not God *vindicate* his
own elect, *who* cry *aloud to* him day and night, though
8 he bear long with them? I tell you . . he will *vindicate*
them speedily. *Yet* when the Son of man cometh, *will*
he find faith *upon* earth?
9 And he spake this parable *to* certain *who* trusted in
themselves that they were righteous, and despised others.
10 Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a
11 Pharisee and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood
by himself and prayed thus, God, I thank thee, that I
am not as other men are, *rapacious,* unjust, adulterers,
12 or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week: I
13 give tithes of all that I possess. And the publican
standing afar off, would not so much as lift up his eyes
to heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be
14 merciful to me a sinner. I tell you this man went
down to his house justified rather than the other; for
every one that exalteth himself shall be *humbled,* and
he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.
15 And they brought *to* him also infants, that he *might*
touch them; but the disciples *seeing* it, . . rebuked
16 them. But Jesus *calling* them *to* him, . . said, Suffer
little children to come *to* me and forbid them not: for
17 of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say *to* you,
Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a
little child, shall in nowise enter therein.
18 And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master,
19 what shall I do to inherit eternal life? *But* Jesus said
to him, Why callest thou me good? *There is* none good
20 save one, that is, God. Thou knowest the command-
ments, Do not commit adultery. Do not *murder.* Do
not steal. Do not bear false witness. Honour thy
21 father and thy mother. And he said, All these have I
22 kept from my *childhood.* . . Jesus *hearing* these things
. . said *to* him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that
thou hast, and distribute *to* the poor, and thou shalt

23 have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me. And
when he heard this, he was very sorrowful; for he was
24 very rich. And Jesus *seeing* that he was very sorrowful,
. . said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter
25 into the kingdom of God? . . It is easier for a camel
to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to
26 enter into the kingdom of God. And they that heard
27 it said, Who then can be saved? And he said, The
things . . impossible with men, are possible with God.
28 Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all and followed thee.
29 And he said *to* them, Verily I say unto you, There is no
man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or
30 wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake, Who
shall not receive manifold more in *the* present time, and
in the world to come life everlasting.
31 Then he took *to* him the twelve, and said *to* them,
Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are
written by the prophets . . *will* be accomplished *on* the
32 Son of man. For he *will* be delivered *to* the Gentiles,
and *will* be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and
33 spitted on: And they *will* scourge him, and put him
34 to death: and the third day he *will* rise again. And they
understood none of these things; and this saying was
hid from them, neither knew they the things which
were spoken.
35 And . . *while* he was *yet* nigh to Jericho, a certain
36 blind man sat by the way side begging. And hearing
37 the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant? And
38 they told him, Jesus of Nazareth passeth by. And he
cried *aloud*, saying, Jesus, thou Son of David, have
39 mercy on me. And they *that* went before *charged* him
to hold his peace; but he cried so much the more, Thou
40 Son of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus *standing*
still, . . commanded him to be brought *to* him: and
41 when he was come near, he asked him, Saying, What
wilt thou that I *should* do *for* thee? . . He said, Lord,
42 that I may receive my sight. And Jesus said *to* him,
43 Receive thy sight, thy faith hath saved thee. And im-
mediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorify-
ing God: and all the people *seeing* it, gave praise *to* God.

19 And *he* entered and passed through Jericho. And
behold . . a man named Zaccheus, *who* was the chief
3 *of* the publicans, and he was rich. And he sought to
see Jesus who he was, and could not for the *crowd*,
4 because he was little of stature. And *running* before,
he climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him; for he
5 was to pass by that way. And Jesus, when *he* came to
the place, *looking* up saw . . him, and said *to* him,

Zaccheus, make haste and come down; for to-day I
6 must abide at thy house. And he made haste and came
7 down, and received him joyfully. And *seeing* it, they
all murmured, saying, . . He *is* gone *in* to be a guest
8 with a . . sinner. And Zaccheus stood and said *to* the
Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the
poor, and if I have *wronged* . . any man *of* any thing
9 . . , I restore him four-fold. And Jesus said *to* him,
To-day is salvation come to this house; *forasmuch* as he
10 also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man is come
to seek and to save that which was lost.
11 And as they *were hearing* these things, he added and
spake a parable, because he was nigh Jerusalem, and
because they thought the kingdom of God *would* immedi-
12 ately appear. He said therefore, A certain nobleman
went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom,
13 and to return. And *having* called ten *of* his servants, . .
he gave them ten pounds, and said unto them, *Trade* till
14 I come. But his citizens hated him, and sent *an embassy*
after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign
15 over us. And . . when he was returned, having
received the kingdom, . . he commanded *those* servants
to be called *to* him, to whom he had given the money, . .
16 *to* know *what each* had gained by trading. Then came
the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten
17 pounds. And he said *to* him, Well *done*, . . good serv-
ant; because thou hast been faithful in a very little,
18 *be thou governor* over ten cities. And the second came,
19 saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And
he said to him likewise, Be thou also over five cities.
20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold . . thy pound,
21 which I have kept laid up in a napkin. For I feared
thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up
what thou layedst not down, and reapest *what* thou didst
22 not sow. And he saith *to* him, Out of thy own mouth
will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knowest
that I *am* an austere man, taking up what I laid not
23 down, and reaping what I did not sow. Wherefore then
gavest thou not my money into the bank, *and* at my
24 coming I *should* have *received it* with *interest?* And he
said *to* them that stood by, Take the pound from him,
25 and give it to him that hath ten pounds. (And they
26 said *to* him, Lord, he hath ten pounds!) For I say unto
you, *To* every one *that* hath shall be given: *but* from him
that hath not, even *what* he hath shall be taken away
27 from him. *Moreover*, those my enemies, *who* would not
that I should reign over them, bring hither and slay . .
28 before me. And *having said these things*, he went before
going up to Jerusalem.

29 And . . *as* he *drew* nigh *to* Bethphage and Bethany,
at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of
30 his disciples, saying, Go ye into the village over against
you, in . . which . . entering, ye shall find a colt tied,
whereon never man *yet* sat, loose him and bring him
31 hither. And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him,
thus shall ye say *to* him, . . The Lord hath need of him.
32 And they that were sent went . . , and found even as
33 he had said *to* them. And as they were loosing the
colt, the owners thereof said *to* them, Why loose ye
34 the colt? And they said, The Lord hath need of him.
35 And they brought him to Jesus, and they cast their
36 garments *on* the colt, and set Jesus thereon. And as
37 he went, they spread their clothes in the way. And
when he was *now* come nigh, . . at the descent of the
mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples
began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice, for
38 all the mighty works that they had seen, Saying, Blessed
be the king that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace
39 *be* in heaven, and glory in the highest. And some of
the Pharisees from among the multitude said *to* him,
40 Master, rebuke thy disciples. And he *answering* said
to them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace,
41 the stones would immediately cry out. And *as* he *drew*
42 near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, Saying, *O*
that thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy
day, the things *that are for* thy peace! But now they
43 are hid from thine eyes. For the days shall come upon
thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee
and compass thee round, and *straiten* thee . . on every
44 side, And shall *cast* thee *to* the ground, and thy children
that are in thee; and they shall not leave in thee one
stone upon another: because thou knewest not the time
of thy visitation.
45 And *going* into the temple, . . *he drove* out them that
46 sold . . , and them that bought therein, Saying *to* them,
It is written, My house is the house of prayer, but ye
have made it a den of thieves.
47 And he *was daily teaching* in the temple. But the
chief priests and the scribes, and the chief of the people,
48 sought to destroy him, And *found not* what they might
do; for all the people *hung upon him* to hear him.

20 And . . on one of those days, as he taught the
people in the temple and preached the Gospel, the
chief priests and the scribes came upon him, with the
2 elders. And spake *to* him, saying, Tell us, By what
authority *dost* thou these things, *and* who is he that
3 gave thee this authority? And he answering, said . . , I

will also ask you one thing, and *tell* me, *Was* the baptism
of John from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned
among themselves, saying, If we . . say from heaven,
he will say, Why then *did* ye not *believe* him? But if
we say of men, all the people will stone us; for they
are persuaded that John was a prophet. And they
answered, . . They could not tell whence Jesus
said *to* them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do
these things.
Then . . *he spake* this parable to the people: A
certain man planted a vineyard, and let it *out* to husband-
men and went into a far country for a long time. And
at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that
they might give him of the fruit of the vineyard; but
the husbandmen beat . . and sent him away empty.
And again he sent another servant: and they beat him
also, and *treated* him shamefully, and sent him away
empty. And again he sent a third, and they wounded
him also, and cast him out. Then said the lord of the
vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son;
perhaps seeing him they will reverence him. But . . the
husbandmen *seeing* him, . . reasoned among themselves,
saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the
inheritance may be ours. So they cast him out of the
vineyard and killed him. What therefore *will* the lord
of the vineyard do *to* them? He *will* come and destroy
these husbandmen, and . . give the vineyard to others.
And *hearing* it they said, God forbid. And he *looked*
on them and said, What is this then that is written,
The stone which the builders rejected, *this* is become
the head of the corner? Whosoever shall fall *on* that
stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall,
it will grind him to powder. And the chief priests and
scribes sought to lay hands on him the same hour; but
they feared the people, for they *knew* he had spoken this
parable against them.
And . . *watching* him, . . *they* sent forth spies, . .
feigning themselves *to be* just men, *to* take hold of his
discourse, that . . they might deliver him *to* the power
and authority of the governor. And they asked him,
saying, Master, we know that thou *speakest* and teachest
rightly, neither acceptest thou . . *persons*, but teachest
the way of God *in truth:* Is it lawful for us to give tribute
to Caesar or no? But he, *observing* their craftiness, . .
said *to* them, Why tempt ye me? Show me a penny.
Whose image and *inscription* hath it? They *answering*
said, Caesar's. . . He said . . , Render therefore *to* Caesar
the things which *are* Caesar's, and *to* God the things which
are God's. And they could not take hold of his words

before the people; and *marvelling* at his answer, *they* held their peace.

27 Then . . certain of the Sadducees (*who* deny there is
28 any resurrection) coming to him, . . asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote *to* us, If a man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed to his brother.
29 *Now* there were . . seven brethren, and the first *taking*
30 a wife, . . died without children. And the second took
31 her to wife, and he died childless. And the third took her, and in like manner the seven also; and they died
32 and left no children. Last of all the woman died also.
33 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she?
34 For seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering said *to* them, The children of this world marry, and are given in
35 marriage. But they *who* are counted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither
36 marry nor are given in marriage. *For* neither can they die any more, for they are equal to angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.
37 *But* that the dead are raised, even Moses showed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord, The God of Abraham,
38 and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living; *so that* all live
39 *to* him. *And some* of the scribes answering said, Master,
40 thou hast *spoken excellently* well. And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.

41 And he said *to* them, How say they that Christ is
42 David's son? And David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my
43 right hand, Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.
44 David therefore calleth him Lord: how is he then his
45 son? Then in the *hearing* of all the people, he said to
46 his disciples, Beware of the scribes, *who* desire to walk in long robes, and love *salutations* in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief *places*
47 at feasts, *Who* devour widows' houses, and for a *pretence* make long prayers; *these* shall receive greater damnation.

21 And *looking* up *he* saw the rich . . casting their gifts into the treasury. And he saw also a certain
3 poor widow casting in thither two mites. And he said, Of a truth I say *to* you, . . This poor widow hath cast
4 in more than they all. For all of these have of their abundance cast *into* the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

5 And as some spake of the temple, *that* it was adorned
6 with goodly stones and gifts, he said, As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in . . which there

shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not
7 be thrown down. And they asked him, saying, Master,
. . when shall these things be? And what *is the* sign . .
8 when these things shall come to pass? And he said,
Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come
in my name, saying I am *the* Christ; and the time *is*
9 near. Go ye not . . after them. *And* when ye shall
hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified; for
these things must *be* first; but the end is not *immediately.*
10 Then said he *to* them, Nation shall rise against nation,
11 and kingdom against kingdom. And great earthquakes
shall be in divers places, and famines and pestilences,
and there shall be fearful sights and great signs from
12 heaven. But before all these *things* they shall lay their
hands on you and persecute you, delivering you up to
the synagogues and into prisons, being brought before
13 kings and rulers for my name's sake. And it shall turn
14 to you for a testimony. Settle it therefore in your
15 hearts, not to *premeditate* what *to* answer. For I will
give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries
16 shall not be able to gainsay *or* resist. *But* ye shall be
betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolk,
and friends: and some of you they *will* cause to be put
17 to death. And ye shall be hated by all men for my
18 name's sake. But there shall not *a* hair of your head
19 perish. In your patience possess ye your souls. And
20 when ye . . see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then
21 know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them
that are in Judea flee to the mountains, and let them
that are in the midst of it depart out, and let not them
22 that are in the countries enter . . into it. For these
are the days of vengeance, that all things which are
23 written may be fulfilled. But wo *to* them that are with
child, and to them that give suck in those days; for
there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath *on*
24 this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the
sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations;
and Jerusalem shall be trodden . . *by* the Gentiles, *till*
25 the times of the Gentiles *are* fulfilled. And there shall
be signs in the sun, and . . moon, and . . stars; and
upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the
26 sea . . roaring *and tossing:* Men *fainting away* for fear,
and *expectation of the* things . . coming *upon* the *world;*
27 for the powers of *the heavens* shall be shaken. And then
shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud, with
power and great glory.
28 Now when these things begin to come to pass, . . look
up and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth
nigh.

29 And he spake a parable to them, Behold the fig tree
30 and all the trees. When they now shoot forth, ye see
31 and know of yourselves, that summer is now nigh. So
likewise . . when ye see these things come to pass, know
32 . . that the kingdom of God is nigh . . . Verily I say
unto you, this generation shall not pass away, till all
33 *things* be *effected.* Heaven and earth shall pass away,
34 but my words shall *in nowise* pass away. *But* take heed
to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be *overloaded*
with *gluttony* and drunkenness, and *the* cares of this life,
35 and so that day come upon you unawares. For as a
snare shall it come on all them that *sit* on the face of
36 the whole earth. Watch ye therefore and pray always,
that ye may be *counted* worthy to escape all these things
which will come to pass, and to stand before the Son
of man.
37 *Now by day* he was teaching in the temple; and at
night *going* out *he lodged at the mount* called the mount
38 of Olives. And all the people came early in the morning
to him in the temple . . to hear him.

22 Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which
is called the passover. And the chief priests and
2 scribes sought how they might kill him; *but* they feared
the people.
3 Then entered Satan into Judas, surnamed Iscariot,
4 being of the number of the twelve. And he went . . and
talked with the chief priests and captains, how he might
5 betray him *to* them. And they were glad, and *agreed* to
6 give him money. And he promised and sought oppor-
tunity to betray him *to* them, in the absence of the
multitude.
7 *And the first* day of unleavened bread *was come,* when
8 the passover *was to* be killed. And he sent Peter and
John, saying, Go and *make ready* the passover *for us,*
9 that we may eat *it.* And they said *to* him, Where wilt
10 thou that we *make it ready?* And he said *to* them,
Behold, when ye are entered into the city, . . a man
will meet you bearing a pitcher of water; follow him
11 into the house where he entereth . . . And . . say *to* the
master of the house, The Master saith *to* thee, Where is
the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover with
12 my disciples? And he *will* show you a large upper room
13 furnished; there make ready. And they went, and
found as he had said *to* them. And they made ready
the passover.
14 And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the
15 twelve apostles with him. And he said *to* them, With
desire have I desired to eat this passover with you,

16 before I suffer. For I say *to* you, I will not eat thereof
any more, *till* it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.
17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take
18 this and divide it among yourselves. For I say *to* you,
I will not drink of the fruit of the vine *till* the kingdom
19 of God shall come. And he took bread, and gave thanks,
and brake it, and gave . . *to* them saying, This is my
body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of
20 me. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This
cup is the New Testament in my blood, which is shed
21 for you. But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth
22 me is with me on the table. And truly the Son of man
goeth as it was determined; but wo *to* that man by
23 whom the *Son of man* is betrayed. And they . . in-
quired among themselves, which of them it was, that
24 *would* do this . . ? There was also a *contention* among
25 them, which of them *was* greatest. And he said *to* them,
The kings of the Gentiles . . *lord* it over them, and they
that exercise authority upon them, *have the title of* bene-
26 factors. But ye shall not be so; but he that is greatest
among you, let him be as the *least*, and he that is chief as
27 he that *serveth*. For *which* is greater, he that sitteth at
table, or he that serveth? Is not he that sitteth at *table?*
28 But I am *in the midst* of you as he that serveth. Ye are
they *who* have continued with me in my temptations.
29 And I appoint *to* you a kingdom, as my Father *has*
30 appointed *to* me, That ye may eat and drink at my
table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the
31 twelve tribes of Israel. And the Lord said, Simon,
Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he
32 might sift you as wheat. But I have prayed for thee
that thy faith fail not; and when thou art *returned*,
33 strengthen thy brethren. And he said *to* him, Lord, I
am ready to go with thee both *to* prison and to death.
34 And he said, I tell thee, Peter, *it shall not be the time of
cock crowing* this day, before . . thou *wilt* thrice deny
35 that thou knowest me. And he said *to* them, When I
sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye
36 any thing? And they said, Nothing. Then said he *to*
them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it,
and likewise his scrip; and he that hath no sword, let
37 him sell his garment and buy one. For I say *to* you,
That this *which* is written must yet be accomplished in
me, And he was *numbered with* the transgressors. For
38 the things concerning me have an end. And they said,
Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said *to* them,
It is enough.
39 And *going* out, *he* went, *according to his custom*, to the
mount of Olives, and his disciples also followed him.

40 And when he was at the place he said *to* them, Pray
41 that ye enter not into temptation. And *as he was withdrawing* from them about a stone's cast, and *kneeling*
42 down, *he* prayed, Saying, Father, if thou *art* willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless, not my will but
43 thine be done. And there appeared *to* him an angel
44 from heaven strengthening him. And being in *an* agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were
45 great drops of blood falling down *on* the ground. And *rising* up from prayer, *he came* to his disciples, *and* found
46 them sleeping for sorrow, And *he* said *to* them, Why sleep ye? Rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.
47 And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before
48 them, and drew near *to* Jesus to kiss him. *And* Jesus said *to* him, Judas betrayest thou the Son of man with
49 a kiss? *And* they *who* were about him *seeing* what would follow, . . said *to* him, Lord, shall we smite with
50 the sword? And one of them smote the servant of the
51 high priest, and cut off his right ear. And Jesus *answering*, . . said, Suffer ye thus far. And *touching* his ear
52 *he* healed him. Then Jesus said *to* the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, *who* were come to him, *Are* ye come out as against a *robber* with
53 swords and *clubs?* When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched *not* forth *your* hands against me: but this is your hour and the power of darkness.
54 Then *taking* him, *they* led him, and brought him *to* the high priest's house: and Peter followed afar off.
55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were sat down together, Peter sat down among
56 them. But a certain maid *seeing* him as he sat by the light, and *looking* earnestly upon him, . . said, This
57 man also was with him. *But* he denied him, saying,
58 Woman, I know him not. And after a . . while another saw him and said, Thou also art . . of them.
59 And Peter said, Man, I am not. And about . . one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this *man* also was with him, for he is a Galilean.
60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou *meanest.* And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew.
61 And the Lord *turning* looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said *to* him, Before . . cock *crowing* thou *wilt* deny me thrice.
62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.
63 And the men that held Jesus mocked . . and smote
64 him. And *having* blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesy, who is it

65 that smote thee? And many other things blasphe-
mously spake they against him.
66 And *when* it was day, the elders of the people and the
chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him
67 into their council, saying, Art thou the Christ? Tell us.
And he said *to* them, If I tell you, ye will not believe.
68 And if I also ask you, ye will not answer me, nor let me
69 go. Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand
70 of the power of God. *And* they all said, Art thou then
the Son of God? . . He said . . , Ye say *it*: . . I am.
71 And they said, What . . farther need have we *of*
evidence? For we ourselves have heard *from* his own
mouth.

23 And the whole multitude of them arose, and led
him *to* Pilate. And they . . *accused* him, saying,
2 We found this fellow perverting *our* nation, and for-
bidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself
3 is Christ a king. And Pilate asked him, saying, Art
thou the king of the Jews? And he *answering* him . .
4 said, Thou sayest . . . Then said Pilate to the chief
priests and . . the multitude, I find no fault in this man.
5 *But* they were the more *violent*, saying, He stirreth
up the people, teaching through . . all *Judea*, beginning
6 from Galilee, to this place. . . Pilate *hearing* of Galilee
7 . . asked *if* the man *was* a Galilean? And *when* he
knew that he belonged *to* Herod's jurisdiction, he sent
him to Herod, who himself was also *in* Jerusalem at
8 that time. And Herod *seeing* Jesus . . was exceeding
glad; for he *had been long desirous* to see him, because
he had heard many things of him, and . . hoped to
9 *see* some miracle done by him. *And* he questioned him
10 in many words, but he answered him nothing. And
the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently
11 accused him. And Herod *having with his soldiers* set
him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a
12 *splendid* robe, . . sent him *back* to Pilate. And the
same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together:
for before they were at enmity between themselves.
13 And Pilate *having* called together the chief priests,
14 and the rulers, and the people, said *to* them, Ye have
brought this man *to* me, as . . *perverting* the people;
and behold, I having examined him before you, have
found no fault in this man, touching *the* things whereof
15 ye accuse him. . . Nor yet Herod; for I sent you to
16 him, and lo, *he hath done* nothing worthy of death. I will
17 therefore chastise and release him. For *he was under a*
18 necessity of *releasing* one *to* them at the feast. And
they cried . . all at once, saying, Away with this man,

19 and release *to* us Barabbas: (Who for *an insurrection*
made in the city, and for murder, *had been* cast into
20 prison.) Pilate . . *desiring* . . to release Jesus, spake
21 again to them. But they cried *out*, saying, Crucify him,
22 crucify him. . . He said *to* them the third time, Why,
what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death
23 in him: I will therefore chastise and *release him*. But they
were instant with loud voices, requiring that he *should*
be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief
24 priests prevailed. And Pilate gave sentence, that *what*
25 *they desired* should be *done*. And he released *to* them
him, that for *insurrection* and murder *had been* cast
into prison, whom they . . desired, but he delivered
Jesus to their will.

26 And as they led him away, they laid hold *on* one
Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country; and on
him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after
27 Jesus. And there followed him a great company of
people and of women, *who* also bewailed and lamented
28 him. But Jesus turning *to* them, said, Daughters of
Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves,
29 and for your children. For behold, the days are coming
in . . which they *will* say, *Happy* are the barren, and
the wombs that never bare, and the *breasts* that never
30 gave suck. Then shall they . . say to the mountains,
31 Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. For if they do
these things in *the* green tree, what shall be done in
32 the dry? And there were also led two other *men*,
malefactors, to be put to death with him.

33 And when they were come to the place, . . called *the*
place of a skull, there they crucified him, and the *two*
malefactors, one on the right hand, and *one* on the left.
34 Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know
not what they do. And they parted his *garments* and
35 cast lots. And the people stood beholding. And the
rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved
others; let him save himself, if he be *the* Christ, the
36 chosen of God. And the soldiers also mocked him,
37 coming to him, and offering him vinegar, And saying,
38 If thou be the king of the Jews, save thyself. And an
inscription also was written over him in . . Greek, and
Latin, and Hebrew *letters*, THIS IS THE KING OF
THE JEWS.

39 And one of the malefactors, *who* were *hanging*, *reviled*
him, saying, If thou be *the* Christ, save thyself and us.
40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost
thou not fear God, seeing thou art in the same con-
41 demnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the
due reward of our deeds: but this *person* hath done

nothing amiss. And he said *to* Jesus, Lord, remember
me, when thou comest *in thy* kingdom. And Jesus said
to him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be
with me in paradise.
And it was about the sixth hour; and there was dark-
ness over all the earth till the ninth hour. And the sun
was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in
the midst. And Jesus *crying* with a loud voice, . .
said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit. And
having said thus, he *expired.* And the centurion *seeing*
what was done, . . glorified God, saying, Certainly
this was a righteous man. And all the people *who had*
come together to that sight, beholding the things which
were done, returned, *smiting* their breasts. And all his
acquaintance, and the women *who* had followed him
from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.
And behold . . a man named Joseph, a counsellor,
. . a good man and a just: (*He* had not consented to
the counsel and deed of them) . . of Arimathea, a city
of the Jews, who also himself waited for the kingdom of
God: This man *going to* Pilate, *asked* the body of Jesus.
And *taking* it down, *he* wrapped it in *fine* linen, and laid
it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never
man before was laid. And that day was the preparation;
. . the Sabbath drew on.
And the women . . *who had come* with him from
Galilee, *following* after, . . beheld the sepulchre, and
how his body was laid. And *returning*, they prepared
spices and ointments, and rested *on* the Sabbath,
according to the commandment.

24 And . . *on* the first day of the week, very early in
the morning, they came *to* the sepulchre, bringing the
spices which they had prepared, and certain others with
them.
And they found the stone rolled away from the
sepulchre; And *entering, they* found not the body of the
Lord Jesus. And . . *while* they were . . perplexed
concerning it, behold, two men stood by them in shining
garments. And as they were afraid and bowed their
face to the earth, they said *to* them, Why seek ye the
living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen.
Remember how he spake *to* you *being* yet in Galilee,
Saying, the Son of man must be delivered into the hands
of sinful men, and be crucified, and rise again the third
day. And they remembered his words, And *returning*
from the sepulchre, . . told all these things *to* the
eleven, and to all the rest. It was Mary Magdalene,
and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and *the*

other women . . with them, *who* told these things *to*
11 the apostles. And their words seemed to them as idle
12 tales, and they believed them not. *But* Peter *rising up*, . . ran *to* the sepulchre; and stooping down, he *seeth* the linen clothes laid by themselves: and *he went home*, wondering . . at *what* . . was come to pass.
13 And behold two of them *were going* that . . day to a village called Emmaus, which was *sixty* furlongs from
14 Jerusalem. And they talked together of all these
15 things which had happened. And . . *as* they *talked* and *argued* together, Jesus himself drew near, and went
16 with them. But their eyes were holden *so* that they
17 *did* not know him. And he said *to* them, What *discourses* are these that ye have one *with* another as ye walk, and
18 are sad? And . . one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said *to* him, *Dost thou alone even sojourn at* Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are
19 come to pass there in these days? And he said *to* them, What things? And they said *to* him, *Those* concerning Jesus of Nazareth, (*who* was a prophet mighty in deed
20 and word before God and all the people) . . How *our* chief priests and . . rulers delivered him to be con-
21 demned to death, and have crucified him. But we trusted that it had been he who should have redeemed Israel. And beside all this, to-day is the third day
22 since these things were done. Yea, and certain women . . of our company *have* astonished us, *who* were early
23 at the sepulchre, And not *finding* his body, they came, saying, That they had seen also a vision of angels, *who*
24 *say*, . . He is alive. And *some* of *the men who* were with us went to the sepulchre, and found it . . so as
25 the women had said; but him they saw not. Then he said *to* them, O *foolish*, and slow of heart to believe all
26 that the prophets have spoken! Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?
27 And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he *explained to* them the things in all the Scriptures, con-
28 cerning himself. And they drew nigh . . the village whither they *were going*, and he made as though he
29 would *go* farther. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us; for it is *going* toward evening, and the
30 day *declines*. And he went in to *abide* with them. And . . as he sat at *table* with them, he took *the* bread, and
31 blessed it, and brake and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished
32 out of their sight. And they said one to another, *Was* not our heart *burning* within us, while he *was talking* to us *in* the way, and . . *opening* the Scriptures to us?
33 And *rising* up the same hour, *they* returned to Jerusalem,

and found the eleven *met* together, and them that were
34 with them, Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath
35 appeared to Simon. And they told *the* things . . done in the way, and how he was known *by* them in *the* breaking of bread.
36 And as they spake thus, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and *said to* them, Peace be unto you.
37 But *being* terrified and affrighted, *they thought* they *saw*
38 a spirit. And he said *to* them, Why are ye troubled?
39 And why do *reasonings* arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself. Handle me and see: for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as you
40 see me have. And *having* spoken *this*, he showed them
41 his hands and his feet. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said *to* them, Have ye
42 here any meat? And they gave him a piece of a broiled
43 fish and of *a* honeycomb. And he took it, and *ate* before them.
44 And he said *to* them, These are the words which I spake *to* you, *being* yet with you, that all things . . written in the law of Moses, and the prophets, and the
45 psalms concerning me, must be fulfilled. Then opened he their understanding, *to* understand the Scriptures,
46 And said *to* them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day.
47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name *to* all nations, beginning at Jeru-
48 salem. And ye are witnesses of these things. And
49 behold I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry . . in the city of Jerusalem, *till* ye be *clothed* with power from on high.
50 And he led them out as far as . . Bethany; and
51 *lifting* up his hands, *he* blessed them. And . . while he *was blessing* them, he was parted from them, and
52 carried up into heaven. And they worshipped him
53 and returned to Jerusalem with great joy, And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God.

THE
GOSPEL according to ST. JOHN

IN this book is set down the history of the Son of God dwelling among men.

ST. JOHN

CHAPTER I

1 In the beginning *existed* the Word, and the Word was
2 with God and the Word was God. The same was in
3 the beginning with God. All things were made by him,
and without him was not one single thing made that
4 was made. In him was life, and the life was the light
5 of men. And the light shineth in darkness, *but* the
darkness *perceived* it not.
6 There was a man sent from God whose name was
7 John. The same came for a testimony to *testify* of the
8 light, that all through *it* might believe. He was not
9 *the* light, but was sent to *testify* of *the* light. *This* was
the true light, *who* lighteth every man that cometh into
10 the world. He was in the world, and the world was
11 made by him; *yet* the world knew him not. He came *to*
12 his own, and his own received him not. But as many
as received him, to them gave he *privilege* to become the
13 sons of God, to them that believe in his name: *Who*
were born, not of blood, nor *by* the will of the flesh, nor
by the will of man, but of God.
14 And the Word was made flesh, and *tabernacled* among
us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only
begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.
15 John *testified* of him and cried, saying, This *is* he of
whom I *said*, He that cometh after me is preferred before
16 me, for he was before me. And out of his fulness have
17 we all received, *even* grace *upon* grace. For the law
was given by Moses, but grace and truth *were* by Jesus
18 Christ. No man hath seen God at any time; the only-
begotten Son, *who* is in the bosom of the Father, he hath
19 declared him. And this is the *testimony* of John, when
the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask
20 him, Who art thou? And he confessed and denied not,

21 but confessed, I am not the Christ. And they asked
him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he saith, I
am not. Art thou *the* prophet? And he answered, No.
22 Then said they to him, Who art thou? That we may
give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou
23 of thyself? He said, I am the voice of one crying *aloud*
in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord,
24 as said the Prophet Isaiah. And they *who* were sent
25 were of the Pharisees. And they asked him and said
to him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou *art* not *the*
26 Christ, nor Elijah, neither *the* prophet? John answered
them saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth
27 one among you whom ye know not. He it is who
coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoe's
28 latchet I am not worthy to unloose. These things were
done in Bethabara, beyond Jordan, where John was
baptizing.
29 The next day *he* seeth Jesus coming toward him, and
saith, Behold the Lamb of God, *who* taketh away the
30 sin of the world, This is he of whom I said, After me
cometh a man *who* is preferred before me; for he was
31 before me. And I knew him not, but that he might be
manifested to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with
32 water. And John *testified*, saying, I saw the Spirit
descending from heaven *as* a dove, and it abode upon
33 him. And I knew him not, but he that sent me to
baptize with water, *he* had said to me, *On* whom thou
shalt see the Spirit descending and *abiding* on him,
34 *this* is he *who* baptizeth with the Holy *Ghost*. And I
saw *it*, and *testified*, that this is the Son of God.
35 Again, the next day, John *was standing*, and two of
36 his disciples, And looking upon Jesus *walking*, he saith,
37 Behold the Lamb of God. And the two disciples heard
38 him speak, and they followed Jesus. *And* Jesus *turning*
and *seeing* them following, saith to them, What seek ye?
They said to him, Rabbi, (*that is*, being interpreted,
39 Master) where dwellest thou? He saith *to* them, Come
and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and
abode with him that day; for it was about the tenth
40 hour. *Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, was* one of the
41 two who heard John speak, and followed him. He first
findeth his own brother Simon, and saith to him, We
have found the Messiah (which is being interpreted the
42 Christ). And he brought him to Jesus. And Jesus
looking upon him, said, Thou art Simon, the son of
Jonah; thou shalt be called Cephas which is by inter-
pretation, *Peter*.
43 The day following *he was minded to depart* into Galilee,
44 and findeth Philip, and saith to him, Follow me. Now

Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.
45 Philip findeth Nathanael and saith to him, We have found him, *whom* Moses in the law and the prophets
46 *described*, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. And Nathanael saith to him, Can . . any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith to him, Come and see.
47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming *toward* him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.
48 Nathanael saith to him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said *to* him, Before Philip . . called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.
49 Nathanael answered and *said to* him, Rabbi, thou art
50 the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel. Jesus answered and said to him, Because I said to thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, believest thou? Thou shalt
51 see greater things than these. And he saith to him, Verily, verily I say to you, Hereafter ye shall see *the* heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending *on* the Son of man.

2 And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee and the mother of Jesus was there. And both
2 Jesus *and his disciples were invited* to the marriage.
3 And *wine falling short*, the mother of Jesus saith to him,
4 They have *not* wine. Jesus saith *to* her, Woman, what
5 *is it to me and thee?* Mine hour is not yet come. His mother saith to the servants, Whatsoever he saith to
6 you, do . . . And there were set there six water pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews,
7 containing two or three *measures* apiece. Jesus saith to them, Fill the water pots with water. And they filled
8 them up to the brim. And he saith to them, Draw out now, and *carry to* the governor of the feast. And they
9 *carried* it. When the *governor* of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, (*he* knew not whence it was, . . but the servants *who had drawn* the water knew) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom,
10 And saith to him, Every man *doth set out good wine first* and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse:
11 but thou hast kept the good wine *till* now. *Jesus wrought* this beginning of miracles in Cana of Galilee, and manifested . . his glory, and his disciples believed on him.
12 After this he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and they *tarried* there not many days.
13 *For the passover of the Jews was nigh.* And Jesus went
14 up to Jerusalem, And found in the temple *them* that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money

15 sitting. And *having made* a scourge of *rushes*, he drove
. . all out of the temple, *both* the sheep, and the oxen,
and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the
16 tables, And said to them that sold doves, Take these
things hence: make not my Father's house a house of
17 *traffic*. And his disciples remembered that it *is* written,
18 The zeal of thine house eateth me up. Then answered
the Jews, and said to him, What sign showest thou . .
19 us, seeing . . thou dost these things? Jesus answered
and said to them, Destroy this temple, and *I will raise*
20 *it up in three days*. Then said the Jews, Forty and six
years was this temple in building, and wilt thou *raise*
21 it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his
22 body. When therefore he was risen from the dead, his
disciples remembered that he had said this . . ; and
they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus
23 had said. Now when he was in Jerusalem at the
passover, *on* the feast day, many believed in his name,
24 *beholding* the miracles which he did. But Jesus did not
25 *trust* himself to them, because he knew all men, And
needed not that any should testify of man; for he knew
what was in man.

3 *Now* there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nico-
demus, a ruler of the Jews. The same came to *him*
2 by night, and said to him, Rabbi, we know that thou
art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these
miracles *which* thou dost, except God be with him.
3 Jesus answered and said to him, Verily, verily I say unto
thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the
4 kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith to him, How can a
man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second
5 time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus
answered, Verily, verily I say unto thee, Except a man
be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the
6 kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is
flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.
7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.
8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the
sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and
whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the
9 Spirit. Nicodemus answered and said to him, How can
10 these things be? Jesus answered and said to him, Art
thou a *teacher* of Israel, and knowest not these things?
11 Verily, verily I say to thee, We speak *what* we know,
and testify *what* we have seen; *yet* ye receive not our
12 *testimony*. If I have told you earthly things, and ye
believe not, how *would* ye believe if I *told* you heavenly
13 things? For no one hath *gone* up to heaven, but he

that came down from heaven, the Son of man, who is
14 in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the
15 wilderness, *so must* the Son of man be lifted up, That
whosoever believeth *on* him *may* not perish, but have
16 *everlasting* life. For God so loved the world, that he
gave his only-begotten Son, that whosoever believeth
17 *on* him *may* not perish, but have everlasting life. For
God sent not his Son into the world, to condemn the
world, but that the world might be saved through him.
18 He that believeth on him, is not condemned; but he
that believeth not is condemned already, because he
hath not believed *on* the name of the only-begotten Son
19 of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is
come into the world, and men loved darkness rather
20 than light, because their deeds were evil. For every
one that doth evil, hateth the light, neither cometh to
21 the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that
practiseth the truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds
may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.
22 After these things . . Jesus and his disciples *went* into
the land of Judea, and there he tarried with them and
23 baptized. And John also was baptizing in Enon, near
Salim, because there was much water there; and they
24 came and were baptized. For John was not yet cast
into prison.
25 Then there arose a *dispute* between some of John's
26 disciples and the Jews about purifying. And they came
to John, and said to him, Rabbi, he that was with thee
beyond Jordan, to whom thou *gavest testimony*, behold
27 *he* baptizeth, and all men come to him. John answered
and said, A man can receive nothing, *unless* it be given
28 him from heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness that
29 I said, I am not the Christ, but I am sent before him. He
that hath the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend
of the bridegroom *who* standeth and heareth him,
rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice:
30 this my joy therefore is fulfilled. He must increase,
31 *but* I must decrease. He that cometh from above is
above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh
of the earth: he that cometh from heaven is above all.
32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth:
33 *yet* no man receiveth his testimony. He that hath
received his testimony, hath set to his seal, that God is
34 true. For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words
of God; for God giveth not *him* the Spirit by measure.
35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things
36 into his hand. He that believeth on the Son, hath
everlasting life: *but* he that obeyeth not the Son, shall
not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

4 When therefore the Lord knew *that* the Pharisees had
heard, Jesus *maketh* and *baptizeth* more disciples than
2 John, (Though Jesus himself baptized not; but his
3 disciples) He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.
4 And he must needs go through Samaria. Then cometh
he to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, near *the field*
6 that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's well
was there. Jesus therefore being wearied with *the*
journey, sat thus *by* the well. It was about the sixth
7 hour. There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water.
8 Jesus saith to her, Give me to drink. (For his disciples
9 were gone . . to the city to buy meat.) Then saith
the Samaritan woman to him, How *dost* thou, being a
Jew, *ask* drink of me, *who* am a Samaritan woman?
For the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.
10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou *hadst known*
the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give
me to drink, thou wouldst have asked of him, and he
11 would have given thee living water. The woman saith
to him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the
well is deep; whence then hast thou that living water?
12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob *who* gave us the
well, and himself drank thereof, and his children and his
13 cattle? Jesus answered and said to her, Whosoever
14 drinketh of this water, *will* thirst again. But whosoever
drinketh of the water that I shall give him, *will* never
thirst, but the water that I shall give him, *will* become
in him a *fountain* of water springing up into everlasting
15 life. The woman saith to him, Sir, give me this water,
16 that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw. Jesus
saith to her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.
17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband.
Jesus said to her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:
18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou
19 now hast, is not thy husband: *this* thou *saidst* truly. The
woman saith to him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a
20 prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain:
but ye say, that *at* Jerusalem is the place where men
21 ought to worship. Jesus saith to her, Woman, believe
me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this
22 mountain, nor at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye
worship ye know not what; we know what we worship;
23 for salvation is *from* the Jews. But the hour cometh,
and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship
the Father in spirit and in truth; for the Father seeketh
24 such to worship him. God is a Spirit, and they that
worship him must worship in spirit and in truth.
25 The woman saith to him, I know that *the* Messiah *is*
coming who is called Christ: when he is come, he will

26 tell us all things. Jesus saith to her, I that speak to
27 thee am *He*. And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with a woman. Yet *none* said, What seekest thou? Or, Why talkest thou with her?
28 The woman then left her water pot, and went . . to
29 the city, and saith to the men, Come, see a man who told me all things that ever I did: Is not this the Christ?
30 Then they *went* out of the city, and came to him.
31 In the *meantime* his disciples prayed him, saying,
32 Master, eat. But he said to them, I have meat to eat
33 that ye know not of. The disciples said one to another,
34 Hath any man brought him . . to eat? Jesus saith to them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent
35 me, and to finish his work. Say ye not, There are yet four months, and *the harvest cometh? Lo*, I say to you, lift up your eyes and *survey* the fields, for they are white
36 already to the harvest. And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit to life eternal, that both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together.
37 And herein is *the* saying true, One soweth, and another
38 reapeth. I *have* sent you to reap that whereon you have bestowed no labour: others have laboured, and ye are entered into their labour.
39 And many of the Samaritans *out of the* city believed on him for the saying of the woman *testifying*, He told
40 me all that ever I did. So when the Samaritans were come to him, they besought him *to tarry* with them. And
41 he abode there two days. And many more believed,
42 because of his word, And said to the woman, *We no longer believe, because of thy saying;* for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.
43 After the two days, he departed thence, and went into
44 Galilee. (Now Jesus himself had testified, That a
45 prophet hath not honour in his own country.) *And when* he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did in Jerusalem at the feast. For they also *had come* to the feast.
46 So he came again to Cana of Galilee, where he *had* made the water wine. And there was a certain noble-
47 man, whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went to him, and besought him to come down and
48 heal his son, for he was at the point of death. Jesus said to him, *Unless* ye see signs and wonders, ye will
49 *in nowise* believe. The nobleman said to him, Sir,
50 come down, ere my child die. Jesus said to him, Go . . : thy son liveth. And the man believed the
51 word that Jesus *spake* to him, and he went . . . And

as he was now going down his servants met him, and
52 told him, saying, Thy son liveth. Then *he asked* of
them the hour when he *amended.* And they said to
him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.
53 So the father knew it was at the same hour, in . .
which Jesus had said to him, Thy son liveth. And
54 himself believed, and his whole house. This second
miracle again Jesus *wrought, being come* out of Judea
into Galilee.

5 After this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus
went up to Jerusalem. Now there is in Jerusalem by
2 the sheep *gate,* a *bath* which is called in the Hebrew
3 tongue, Bethesda, having five *porticos.* In these lay a
great multitude of *diseased,* of blind, halt, withered,
4 waiting for the moving of the water. For an angel
went down at certain *times* into the *bath,* and the *water*
was troubled, and whosoever went in first, after the trou-
bling of the water, was made whole, whatsoever disease
5 he had. And a certain man was there, *who had been*
6 *diseased eight and thirty years.* Jesus *seeing* him lie,
and *knowing* that he had now been *diseased* a long time,
7 saith to him, *Desirest thou to be* made whole? The
infirm man answered him, Sir, I have no man to put
me into the bath, when the water is troubled; and the
while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.
8 Jesus saith to him, Rise, take up thy bed and walk.
9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took
up his bed and walked: and the same day was the
10 Sabbath. *Then said the Jews* to him that was *healed,*
It is the Sabbath; it is not lawful for thee to *take up*
11 thy bed. He answered, He that made me whole, said to
12 me, Take up thy bed and walk. Then asked they him,
Who is the man that said to thee, Take up thy bed and
13 walk? And he that was healed *knew* not who he was;
for Jesus had *retired,* a multitude being in the place.
14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said to
him, *Lo,* thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse
15 thing come to thee. The man departed and told the
Jews, that it was Jesus who had made him whole.
16 And therefore the Jews *persecuted* Jesus, . . hecause
17 he had done these things on the Sabbath. But Jesus
answered them, My Father worketh *until now,* and I
18 work. Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him,
because he not only *broke* the Sabbath, but also said
that God was his *own* Father, making himself equal
19 with God. Then answered Jesus and said to them,
Verily, verily I say unto you, the Son can do nothing
of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: *but* what

things soever he doth, these also doth the Son likewise.
20 For the Father loveth the Son, and showeth him all
things that himself doth: and he will show him greater
21 works than these, *so* that ye will marvel. For as the
Father *quickeneth* the dead, . . so the Son also quick-
22 eneth whom he will. For *neither doth* the Father judge
23 *any one*, but hath *given* all judgment to the Son; That
all men *may* honour the Son, even as they honour the
Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth
24 not the Father *that sent* him. Verily, verily I say unto
you, he that heareth my word, and believeth on him that
sent me, hath everlasting life, and *cometh* not into con-
25 demnation, but is passed from death to life. Verily,
verily I say to you, The hour is coming, and now is,
when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God,
26 and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath
life in himself, so hath he given to the Son *also* to have
27 life in himself, And hath given him authority to execute
28 judgment *likewise*, because he is the Son of man. Marvel
not at this: for the *time* is coming in which all that are
29 in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth,
they that have done good to the resurrection of life,
and they that have done evil to the resurrection of
30 damnation. I can do nothing of myself: as I hear,
I judge, and my judgment is just; because I seek not
31 my own will, but the will *of him that* sent me. If I
32 *testify* of myself, my *testimony* is not *valid*. There is
another that *testifieth* of me, and I know that the
testimony which he *testifieth* of me is *valid*.
33 Ye sent to John, and he bare *testimony* to the truth.
34 But I receive *not* testimony from man, but these things
35 I say, that ye may be saved. He was a burning and a
shining light, and ye were willing for a season to rejoice
36 in his light. But I have a greater *testimony* than that
of John: for the works which the Father hath given
me to *fulfil*, the *very* works that I do *testify* of me, that
37 the Father hath sent me. And the Father . . who
hath sent me, *he hath testified* of me: ye have neither
38 heard his voice at any time, nor seen his *form*. And
ye have not his word abiding in you; for whom he hath
39 sent, ye believe not. Search the Scriptures: in them
ye are assured ye have eternal life: and *it is* they that
40 testify of me. *Yet* ye will not come to me, that ye *may*
41 have life. I receive not honour from men, But I know
43 you, that ye have not the love of God in you. *For* I
am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not:
if another shall come in his own name, him will ye
44 receive. How can ye believe, *while* ye receive honour
one of another, and seek not the honour that *is* from

45 God only? *Think not* that I will accuse you to the
Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses,
46 in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would
47 have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if ye believe
not his writings, how shall ye believe my words.

6 After these things, Jesus went over the sea of Galilee,
the sea of Tiberias, And a great multitude followed him,
2 because they *had seen* the miracles which he did on *the*
3 *diseased. But* Jesus went up into *the* mountain, and
4 *sat there* with his disciples. And the passover, a feast
5 of the Jews, was nigh. Jesus then *lifting up* his eyes,
and *seeing* a great multitude *coming* to him, saith to
Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?
6 (But this he said *trying* him: for he himself knew what
7 he *intended* to do.) Philip answered him, Two hundred
penny worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that
8 *each* of them may take a little. One of his disciples,
9 Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith to him, *Here is* a
lad, who hath five barley loaves and two small fishes:
10 but what are they among so many? Jesus said, Make
the men sit down. (Now there was much grass in the
place.) So the men sat down, in number about five
11 thousand. Then Jesus took the loaves, and having
given thanks, distributed to the disciples, and the
disciples to them that were sat down, and likewise of
12 the fishes as much as they would. When they were
filled, he *saith* to his disciples, Gather up the fragments
13 *which* remain, that nothing be lost. They therefore
gathered them, and filled twelve baskets with the frag-
ments of the five barley loaves, which remained over
14 and above to them that had eaten. Then those men
having seen the miracle *which* Jesus did, said, Of a truth
this is the prophet *that was* to come into the world.
15 *Jesus therefore knowing* that they *were about to* come
and take him by force to make him a king, again *retired*
to the mountain *all* alone.
16 *In the evening,* his disciples went down to the sea,
17 and *entering* into the vessel, *they* went over the sea
toward Capernaum: And it was now dark, and Jesus
18 was not come to them. And the sea *ran high, a great*
19 *wind blowing.* And *having rowed* about five and twenty
or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea,
and drawing nigh to the vessel: and they were afraid.
20 But he saith to them, It is I; be not afraid. Then
21 they willingly received him into the *vessel;* and immedi-
ately the *vessel* was at the land *to which they were bound.*
22 The day following, the *multitude who* had stood on
the other side of the sea, *because* they saw there was no

other vessel there, save that one into which his disciples went, and that Jesus went not into the *vessel* with his disciples, but that his disciples were gone away alone:
23 (But there came other *little vessels* from Tiberias, *near* the place where they *had eaten bread,* after the Lord
24 had given thanks.) When *they* saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also *went aboard the vessels,* and came to Capernaum seeking Jesus.
25 And *having found* him on the other side of the sea,
26 they said to him, Rabbi, when *comest* thou hither? Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily I say to you, ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because
27 ye did eat of the loaves and were *satisfied.* Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that which endureth to everlasting life, which the Son of man *will*
28 give you; for him hath God the Father sealed. Then said they to him, What shall we do, that we may work
29 the works of God? Jesus answered and said to them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom
30 he hath sent. They said therefore to him, What sign *dost* thou then, that we may see and believe thee? What
31 dost thou work? Our fathers *ate* manna, in the *wilderness,* as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven
32 to eat. Then said Jesus to them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not *the* bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.
33 For the bread of God is he *that* cometh down from heaven,
34 and giveth life to the world. Then said they to him,
35 Lord, *ever* give us this bread. And Jesus said to them, I am the bread of life. He that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never
36 thirst. *But* I *told* you, that *though* ye have seen me, *ye*
37 believe not. All that the Father giveth me, *will* come to me, and him that cometh to me, I will in nowise
38 cast out. For I came down from heaven, not to do
39 my own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the . . will *of him that* sent me, That of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should
40 raise it up . . at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one *who* seeth the Son, and believeth on him, *should* have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.
41 The Jews then murmured about him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.
42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? *How then saith he,* I came
43 down from heaven? Jesus answered and said to them,
44 Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come *unto* me, unless the Father who hath sent me, draw him;

45 and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written
in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God.
Every man therefore that hath heard and learned of
46 the Father cometh to me. Not that any man hath
seen the Father, save he *who is from* God; he hath
47 seen the Father. Verily, verily I say unto you, he that
48 believeth on me hath everlasting life. I am *the* bread
49 of life. Your fathers ate manna in the wilderness, and
50 *yet died.* This is the bread which cometh down from
51 heaven, that a man may eat *of it*, and not die. I am
the living bread which came down from heaven: If
any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever, and
the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give
for the life of the world.
52 The Jews *then debated* among themselves, saying, How
53 can this man give us his flesh to eat? *But* Jesus said
to them, Verily, verily I say unto you, *unless* ye eat the
flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have
54 no life in you. *He that* eateth my flesh, and drinketh
my blood, hath eternal life, and I will raise him up at
55 the last day. For my flesh is meat indeed, and my
56 blood is drink indeed. He that eateth my flesh and
57 drinketh my blood, *abideth* in me, and I in him. As the
living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father,
58 so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. This
is *the* bread which came down from heaven; not as your
fathers *ate* manna, and *died:* he that eateth of this
59 bread, shall live for ever. These things he said in the
synagogue, *teaching at* Capernaum.
60 Many of his disciples *hearing it*, said, This is a hard
61 saying: who can hear it? *Jesus knowing* in himself
that his disciples murmured *about this*, said to them,
62 Doth this offend you? What if ye shall see the Son of
63 man ascend where he was before? It is the Spirit that
quickeneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the words
that I have spoken, they are Spirit and they are life.
64 But there are some of you *who* believe not. (For Jesus
had known from the beginning who they were that
65 believed not, and who *would* betray him.) And he
said, Therefore said I to you, That no man can come to
me, unless it *be given* him by my Father.
66 From *this* time many of his disciples went back and
67 walked no more with him. Then said Jesus to the
68 twelve, *Are ye also minded* to go away? Then Simon
Peter answered him, saying, Lord, to whom shall we go?
69 Thou hast the words of eternal life. And we *have*
believed and *known*, that thou art *the* Christ, the Son
70 of the living God. Jesus answered them, Have not I
71 chosen you twelve? *Yet* one of you is a devil. He

spake of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; for he it was that *would* betray him, being one of the twelve.

7 After these things Jesus walked *in* Galilee: for he
would not walk in *Judea*, because the Jews sought to
2 kill him. Now the Jews' feast of tabernacles was *nigh.*
3 His brethren therefore said to him, Depart hence and
go into Judea, that thy disciples *there* also may see the
4 works *which* thou dost. For . . no man doth any
thing in secret, but *desireth to be publicly* known: if
5 thou dost these things, show thyself to the world. (For
6 neither did his brethren believe *on* him.) Jesus saith
to them, My time is not yet come: your time is always
7 ready. The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth;
8 because I testify of it, that *its* works are evil. Go ye
up *to the* feast: I go not *up to* this feast yet; *because* my
9 time is not yet *fully* come. *Having said these things* to
them, he abode in Galilee.
10 But when his brethren were gone up, then he also
went up to the feast, not openly, but as it were *privately.*
11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where
12 is he? And there was much murmuring among the
multitude concerning him: for some said, He is a good
man, others said, Nay; but he *seduceth* the people.
13 However no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.
14 Now *at the middle* of the feast, Jesus went up into the
15 temple and taught. And the Jews marvelled, saying,
How *doth* this man know letters, having never learned?
16 Jesus answered them and said, My doctrine is not mine,
17 but his that sent me. If any man *be willing to do* his will,
he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or
18 whether I speak of myself. He that speaketh of him-
self, seeketh his own glory; but he that seeketh *the* glory
of him that sent him, the same is true, and *there is* no
19 unrighteousness in him. Did not Moses give you the
law? Yet none of you keepeth the law. Why *seek ye* to
20 kill me? The people answered and said, Thou hast a
21 devil. Who *seeketh* to kill thee? Jesus answered and
said to them, I *did* one work, and ye all *marvelled at it.*
22 Moses . . gave . . you circumcision, (not *that it is* of
Moses, but of the fathers) and ye circumcise a man on
23 the Sabbath. If a man receive circumcision on the
Sabbath, that the law of Moses *may* not be broken; are
ye angry at me, because I *entirely healed* a man on the
24 Sabbath? Judge not according to appearance, but
judge righteous judgment.
25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he
26 whom they seek to kill? *And* lo he speaketh boldly, and
they say nothing to him. Do the rulers know indeed

27 that this is the . . Christ? Howbeit we know this man,
whence he is: but when Christ cometh *none* knoweth
28 whence he is: Then cried Jesus in the temple as he
taught saying, *Do you* both know me, and know whence
I am? And *yet* I am not come of myself, but he that sent
29 me is true, whom ye know not. But I know him; for I
30 am from him, and he hath sent me. Then they sought
to *seize* him; but no man laid hands on him, because his
31 hour was not yet come. And many of the *multitude*
believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he
do more miracles than these which this man hath done!
32 The Pharisees heard the *multitude whispering* such
things concerning him, and the Pharisees and the chief
33 priests sent officers to *seize* him. Then said Jesus to
them, Yet a little time I am with you, and then I go to
34 him that sent me. Ye shall seek, and shall not find me,
35 and where I am . . ye cannot come. Then said the
Jews among themselves, Whither *will* he go, that we
shall not find him? Will he go to the dispersed among
36 the *Greeks*, and teach the *Greeks?* What saying is this
that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me;*
and where I am . . ye cannot come?
37 *On* the last, *the* great day of the feast, Jesus stood and
cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come to me and
38 drink. He that believeth on me, out of his belly (as the
Scripture hath said) shall flow rivers of living water.
39 This he spake of the Spirit, which they who believed on
him *were to* receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet
40 given, because Jesus was not yet glorified. Many of
the *multitude* therefore, *hearing this discourse*, said, *Cer-*
41 *tainly* this is the prophet. Others said, This is the
Christ. But some said, *Doth* Christ come out of Galilee?
42 Hath not the Scripture said that Christ cometh of the
seed of David, and *from* Bethlehem, *the town* where
43 David was? So there was a division among the people
44 *concerning* him. And some of them would have *seized*
45 him: but no man laid hands on him. *So* the officers
came to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said to
46 them, Why have ye not brought him? The officers
47 answered, Never man spake like this man. *The Phar-*
48 *isees answered*, Are ye also deceived? Hath any of the
49 rulers believed on him, or of the Pharisees? But this
50 *populace*, who *know* not the law, are *accursed.* Nico-
demus (he that came to *him* by night, being one of them)
51 saith to them, Doth our law judge a man before it hear
52 him, and know what he doth? They answered and said
to him, Art thou also *a Galilean?* Search and *see, that*
53 out of Galilee ariseth no prophet. And every man went
to his own house.

8 *But* Jesus went to the mount of Olives. And early
in the morning he *returned* to the temple, and all the
people came to him, and *sitting* down he taught them.
3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought *in* . . a woman
taken in adultery, and *having set* her in the midst,
4 They say to him, Master, this woman was taken
5 *actually committing adultery.* Now Moses hath com-
manded us in the law . . to stone such. What
6 *therefore* sayest thou? This they *spoke* tempting him,
that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus *stooping*
7 down, wrote with his finger on the ground. . . And as
they continued asking him, he *raised himself* and said to
them, He that is without sin among you let him . . cast
8 *the first* stone at her. *Then stooping* down again, he
9 wrote on the ground. *But they who heard it went out one
by one, beginning at the eldest;* and Jesus was left alone,
10 and the woman . . in the midst. *Then* Jesus *raising*
himself up, . . said to her, Woman, where are thine
11 accusers? Hath no man condemned thee? She saith,
No man, sir. And Jesus saith unto her, Neither do I
condemn thee. Go, and sin no more.
12 Then spake Jesus again to them, I am the light of the
world, he that followeth me shall *in nowise* walk in
13 darkness, but shall have the light of life. The Pharisees
therefore said to him, Thou *testifiest* of thyself: thy
14 *testimony* is not *valid.* Jesus answered and said to them,
Though I *testify* of myself, yet my *testimony* is *valid:* for
I know whence I came, and whither I go: but ye *know*
15 *not* whence I came, or whither I go. Ye judge after the
16 flesh: I judge no man. And yet if I judge, my judgment
is *valid;* for I am not alone: but I and the Father that
17 sent me. *Even* in your law it is written, The testimony
18 of two men is *valid.* I am one that testify of myself, and
19 the Father that sent me *testifieth* of me. Then said they
to him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye
neither know me nor my Father. If ye had known
20 me, ye *would* have known my Father also. These
words spake he in the treasury, as he taught in the tem-
ple. And no man *seized* him; for his hour was not yet
come.
21 Then said Jesus again to them, I go, . . and ye shall
seek me, and shall die in your sin. Whither I go, ye
22 cannot come. The Jews said *therefore,* Will he kill him-
self? Because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.
23 And he said to them, Ye are *of them that are beneath;* I
am *of them that are above:* ye are of this world; I am not
24 of this world. Therefore I said, Ye shall die in your
sins; for if ye believe not that *I* am . . , ye shall die in
25 your sins. Then said they to him, Who art thou? And

Jesus saith to them, Even *what I say* to you from the
26 beginning. I have many things to say and to judge of
you; but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the
27 world *the* things which I have heard *from* him. They
understood not that he spake to them of the Father.
28 Jesus *therefore* said to them, When ye shall have lifted
up the Son of man, then shall ye know that *I* am . . , and
that I do nothing of myself, but as my Father hath
29 taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me
is with me; the Father hath not left me alone; for I do
30 always *the* things that please him. As he spake these
words, many believed on him.
31 Then said Jesus to *the* Jews *who* believed on him, If ye
32 continue in my word, ye are my disciples indeed: And
ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you
33 free. They answered him, We *are* Abraham's offspring,
and were never *enslaved* to any man: how sayest thou,
34 Ye shall be made free? Jesus answered them, Verily,
verily I say unto you, *He that* committeth sin is the *slave*
35 of sin: And the *slave* abideth not in the house for ever:
36 but the Son abideth *for ever.* If therefore the Son shall
37 make you free, you *will* be free indeed. I know that ye
are Abraham's offspring; *yet* ye seek to kill me, because
38 my word hath no place in you. I speak that which I
have seen with my Father, and ye do that which ye have
39 *heard from* your father. They answered and said to him,
Abraham is our father. Jesus saith to them, If ye were
the children of Abraham ye would do the works of
40 Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man who have
told you the truth which I have heard from God.
41 Abraham *did not thus.* Ye do the deeds of your father.
They said to him, We *were* not born of fornication; we
42 have one Father, even God. Jesus said to them, If God
were your Father, ye would love me; for I proceeded
forth, and come from God. I am come *not* of myself,
43 but he *hath* sent me. Why do ye not understand my
44 *discourse?* Even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye
are of your father the devil, and *your will is to do the
desires of your father.* He was a murderer from the
beginning, and abode not in the truth; for there is no
truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of
45 his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it. *But*
46 because I *speak* the truth, ye believe me not. Which of
you *convicteth* me of sin? And if I *speak* the truth, why
47 do ye not believe me? He that is of God heareth God's
words; ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not
48 of God. Then answered the Jews, and said to him,
Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a
49 devil? Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour

50 my Father, and ye dishonour me. I seek not my own
51 glory; there is one that seeketh *it* and judgeth. Verily,
verily I say unto you, If a man keep my *word*, he shall
52 never see death. Then said the Jews to him, Now we
know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead and the
prophets: *yet* thou sayest, If a man keep my word, he
53 shall never taste of death. Art thou greater than our
father Abraham, who is dead? The prophets *also* are
54 dead. Whom makest thou thyself? Jesus answered.
If I honour myself, my honour is nothing; it is my
Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, . . He is
55 *our* God. Yet ye have not known him: but I know him.
And if I should say I know him not, I *should* be a liar
56 like you: but I know him, and keep his *word*. Your
father Abraham *longed* to see my day; and he saw *it* and
57 was glad. Then said the Jews to him, Thou art not yet
58 fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? Jesus
said to them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Before
59 Abraham was, I AM. Then they took up stones to cast
at him; but Jesus *concealed* himself, and went out of the
temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed
on.

9 And as *he passed on*, he saw a man blind from his
birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, *who*
2 *sinned*, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?
3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his
parents; but that the works of God *might* be made
4 manifest *through* him. I must work the works of him
that sent me, while it is day; the night *is coming* when
5 no man can work. *While* I am in the world, I am the
6 light of the world. *Having said this*, he spat on the
ground, and made clay *with* the spittle, and anointed
7 the eyes of the blind man with the clay, and said to him,
Go, wash *at* the pool of Siloam (which is by interpreta-
tion, Sent). He went . . therefore, and washed, and
came seeing.
8 *Then* the neighbours and they who had seen him
before, *when* he was blind, said, Is not this he *who used*
9 *to sit begging?* Some said, This is he: others, He is
10 like him: but he said, I am he. *They said to him*, How
11 were thine eyes opened? He answered and said, A man
called Jesus made clay and anointed my eyes, and said
to me, Go to the pool of Siloam and wash. And I went,
12 and washed, and received sight. Then said they to him,
Where is he? He said, I know not.
13 They *bring* to the Pharisees *the man who had aforetime*
14 *been blind.* (It was the Sabbath, when Jesus made the
15 clay and opened his eyes.) Again the Pharisees also

asked him how he had received his sight? He said to them, He put clay on my eyes, and I washed, and see.
16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God because he keepeth not the Sabbath. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles?
17 And there was a division among them. They say to the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, *for* that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.
18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind and received his sight, *till* they *had* called
19 the parents of him who had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say
20 was born blind? How then doth he now see? His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is
21 our son, and that he was born blind. But *how* he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes we know not. He is of age: ask him; he *will* speak *con-*
22 *cerning* himself. *His parents said this* because they feared the Jews; for the Jews had already agreed, That if any man *should own him to be* Christ, he should be
23 put out of the synagogue. Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.
24 *Therefore they called a second time the man that had been blind,* and said to him, Give *glory to God;* we know
25 that this man is a sinner. He answered and said, *That* he is a sinner . . I know not: one thing I know, that . .
26 I was blind *and* now . . see. They said to him again,
27 What did he to thee? How opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not *hearken: why* would you hear *it* again? *Are ye also*
28 *willing* to be his disciples? Then they reviled him and said, Thou art *a* disciple *of that fellow;* but we are
29 disciples of Moses. We know that God spake to Moses;
30 *but we know not* this fellow, whence he is. The man answered and said to them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not whence he is: *although* he hath
31 opened my eyes! . . We know that God heareth not sinners; but if a man be a worshipper of God, and do
32 his will, him he heareth. Since the world began *it was not* heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was
33 born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do
34 nothing. They answered and said to him, Thou wast altogether born in sin, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.
35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and *having* found him, he said to him, Dost thou believe on the Son
36 of God? He answered and said, *Sir,* who is he, that I
37 *may* believe on him? Jesus said to him, Thou hast both
38 seen him, and he that talketh with thee is he. And

he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.
39 Jesus said, For judgment am I come into the world,
that they *who* see not *may* see, and that they *who* see
40 *may become* blind. And some of the Pharisees that
were with him heard *this*, and said to him, Are we blind
41 also? Jesus said to them, If ye *had been* blind ye *would*
have no sin. But now ye say, We see: therefore your
sin remaineth.

10 Verily, verily I say to you, he that entereth not by
the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some
2 other way, *he* is a thief and a robber. But he that
3 entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To
him the *doorkeeper* openeth, and the sheep hear his voice,
and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them
4 out. And when he *hath led* forth his own sheep, he goeth
before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know
5 his voice. They will not follow a stranger, but will
flee from him; for they know not the voice of
6 strangers. This parable spake Jesus to them; but they
understood not what things they were which he spake
to them.
7 Therefore Jesus said to them again, Verily, verily I
8 say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. *Whosoever*
are come before me, are thieves and robbers; but the
9 sheep did not hear them. I am the door; if any one
enter in by me, he shall be *safe*, and shall go in and out,
10 and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but to steal,
and to kill, and to destroy: I am come, that they *may*
have life, and that they *may* have it . . abundantly:
11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd *layeth down*
12 his life for the sheep. But *the* hireling, *who is* not the
shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf
coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: *so* the wolf
13 *seizeth* them, and scattereth the sheep. The hireling
fleeth, because he is a hireling, and careth not for the
14 sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep,
15 and am known of mine: (As the Father knoweth me,
and I know the Father) and I lay down my life for
16 the sheep. *I have also other sheep* which are not of
this fold: I must bring them *likewise*, and they *will*
hear my voice, and there shall be one *flock*, and one
17 shepherd. Therefore doth my Father love me, because
18 I lay down my life, that I *may* take it again. No one
taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have
power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again.
19 This *commission* have I received of my Father. There
was *again* a division among the Jews *because of* these
20 sayings. Many of them said, He hath a devil, and is

21 mad: why hear ye him? Others said, These are not
the words of *one* that hath a devil. Can a devil open
the eyes of the blind?
22 *Now* the feast of the dedication *came on* at Jerusalem:
23 and it was winter. And Jesus *was walking* in the temple
24 in Solomon's portico. Then came the Jews round about
him, and said to him, How long dost thou *keep us in*
25 *suspense?* If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. Jesus
answered them, I have told you; *yet* ye *do not believe;*
the works that I do in my Father's name, they *testify*
26 of me. *But as I have told you*, ye do not believe, because
27 ye are not of my sheep. My sheep hear my voice, and
28 I know them, and they follow me. And I give them
eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall
29 any . . pluck them out of my hand. My Father, who
gave *them* me, is greater than all; and *none shall* pluck
30 them out of my Father's hand. I and *the* Father are one.
31 Then the Jews again took up stones to stone him.
32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I showed
you from my Father; for which of those works do ye
33 stone me? The Jews answered him, We stone thee not
for a good work, but for blasphemy, and because . .
34 thou being a man, makest thyself God. Jesus answered
them, Is it not written in your law, I said ye are gods?
35 If he *call* them gods to whom the word of God came
36 (and the Scripture cannot be broken) Say ye of him
whom *God* hath sanctified and sent into the world, Thou
37 blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of God? If
38 I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But
if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works,
that ye may know and believe, that the Father *is* in
39 me, and I in him. Therefore they sought again to *seize*
him; but he escaped out of their hands.
40 And *he* went away again beyond Jordan, to the place
41 where John baptized at first, and there he abode. And
many *came* to him and said, John did no miracle: but
42 all things that John spake of this man were true. And
many believed on him there.

11 Now *one* Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary,
and her sister Martha, was sick. (It was that Mary
2 who anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his
feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.)
3 Therefore his sisters sent to him, saying, Lord, behold
4 he whom thou lovest is sick. Jesus *hearing it*, said,
This sickness is not *to* death, but for the glory of God,
5 that the Son of God *may* be glorified thereby. Now
6 Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. *So*
after he had heard that he was sick, he abode still two

7 days in the place where he was. Then after *this* he
8 saith to *the* disciples, Let us go into Judea again. *The*
disciples say to him, Master, the Jews *but now* sought
9 to stone thee, and goest thou thither again? Jesus
answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If
any man walk in the day he stumbleth not, because he
10 seeth the light of this world. But if *any* man walk in
the night, he stumbleth, because *the light is not in him.*
11 *Thus he spake,* and after that he saith to them, Our
friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go *to* awake him. . .
12 Then the disciples said, Lord, if he sleep, he *will recover.*
13 Jesus spake of his death; but they thought he had
14 spoken of the *natural* rest in sleep. Then said Jesus to
15 them plainly, Lazarus is dead. And I am glad for your
sake I was not there, *that* ye may believe: *but* let us go
16 to him. Then said Thomas, called Didymus, to his
fellow disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.
17 When Jesus came, he found he had *been now* four days
18 in the *tomb.* (Now Bethany was near Jerusalem, about
19 fifteen furlongs off.) And many of the Jews *were come*
to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their
20 brother. *When* Martha heard that Jesus was coming,
she went and met him; but Mary sat . . in the house.
21 Then said Martha to Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been
22 here, my brother had not died. But I know even now,
that whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give *it*
23 thee. Jesus saith to her, Thy brother shall rise again.
24 Martha said to him, I know that he shall rise again in
25 the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said to her,
I am the resurrection and the life; he that believeth in
26 me, though he *die,* yet shall he live; And whosoever
liveth and believeth in me, shall *not* die *for ever.* Believ-
27 est thou this? She saith to him, Yea, Lord, I believe
thou art the Christ, the Son of God, *who was to* come into
28 the world. *Having said this,* she went and *privately*
called Mary her sister, saying, The Master is come, and
29 calleth for thee. As soon as she heard *it,* she arose
30 quickly and came to him. Jesus was not yet come into
the town, but was *at* the place where Martha had met
31 him. The Jews then *who* were with her in the house
and comforted her, *seeing* Mary, that she arose up
quickly and went out, followed her, saying, She is going
32 to the *tomb* to weep there. When Mary was come where
Jesus was, and saw him, she fell at his feet, saying to
him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not
33 died. When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the
Jews . . weeping *who* came with her, he groaned *deeply,*
34 and troubled *himself* and said, Where have ye laid him?
35 They say to him, Lord, come and see. Jesus wept.

36 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him! And
37 some of them said, Could not this *person*, who opened
the eyes of the blind, have *even* caused that this man
38 should not have died? Jesus again groaning in himself,
cometh to the *tomb*. It was a cave, and a stone lay
39 upon it. Jesus saith, Take away the stone. Martha,
the sister of *the deceased*, saith to him, Lord, by this
time he stinketh; for he had been *buried* four days.
40 Jesus saith to her, Said I not to thee, if thou wouldest
41 believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then
they took away the stone *from* where the dead *lay*. And
Jesus lifted up his eyes and said, Father, I thank thee
42 that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest
me always: but I *spake this* because of the people who
stand by, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.
43 And *having spoken thus*, he cried with a loud voice,
44 Lazarus, come forth. And he that *had been dead* came
forth, bound hand and foot with grave clothes, and his
face was *wrapt* about with a napkin. Jesus saith to
them, Loose him, and let him go.
45 Many therefore of the Jews who *were come* to Mary,
and had seen the things which Jesus *had done*, believed
46 on him. But some of them went to the Pharisees, and
47 told them what things Jesus had done. Then the chief
priests and elders *assembled* a council and said, What
48 do we? For this man doth many miracles. If we let
him thus alone, all men will believe on him, and the
Romans *will* come and *subvert* both our place and nation.
49 And one of them, . . Caiaphas, being the high priest
50 that year, said to them, Ye know nothing, . . Nor consider it *as* expedient for us, that one man should die
for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.
51 He spake not this of himself, but being high priest that
year, he prophesied, that Jesus should die for *the* nation:
52 And not for that nation only, but that he *might* also
gather into one all the children of God that were scat-
53 tered abroad. Therefore from that day they *consulted*
together to put him to death.
54 Jesus therefore walked no *longer* openly among the
Jews, but went thence into the country, near the wilderness, to a city called Ephraim, and there continued with
55 his disciples. And the passover of the Jews was nigh;
and many went . . up to Jerusalem . . to purify
56 themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and *said* one
to another, standing in the temple, What think ye?
57 That he will not come to the feast? Now both the chief
priests and Pharisees had given *order*, That if any man
knew where he *was*, he should show *it*, that they might
apprehend him.

12 Then Jesus, six days before the passover, came to
Bethany, where Lazarus was, *who* had been dead,
2 whom he had raised from the dead. There they made
him a supper, and Martha served; but Lazarus was one
3 of them who sat at table with him. Then Mary, *taking*
a pound of ointment, of very costly spikenard, anointed
the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair; and
the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.
4 *But* one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, . . who *was*
5 *about* to betray him, saith, Why was not this ointment
sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?
6 This he said, not *because* he cared for the poor, but
because he was a thief and had the *purse*, and bare what
7 was put therein. Then Jesus said, Let her alone;
8 against the day of my *burial* hath she kept this. *Ye*
have the poor always with you: but me ye have not
always.
9 *Now* much people of the Jews knew that he was there,
and came not only for the sake of Jesus, but also to see
10 Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. But the
11 chief priests consulted, *how to kill* Lazarus also, Because
on his account, many of the Jews went away, and
believed on Jesus.
12 The next day, a *great multitude who* were come to the
feast, *having heard* that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,
13 Took branches of palm trees, and went *out* to meet
him, and cried, Hosanna: blessed in the name of the
14 Lord *is* he that cometh, *the King of Israel*. And Jesus
having found a young ass, *rode* thereon, as it is written,
15 Fear not, daughter of Sion; behold thy King cometh,
16 sitting on an ass's colt. These things his disciples
understood not at first: but when Jesus *had been*
glorified, then they remembered that these things were
written of him, and that they had done these things to
17 him. And *the multitude* who were with him, when he
called Lazarus out of the *tomb*, and raised him from the
18 dead, bare *witness*. For this cause also the *multitude*
went to meet him, *because* they heard he had done this
19 miracle. The Pharisees therefore said *to each other*,
Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? Behold, the world
is gone after him.
20 Now among those who came up to worship at the
21 feast, there were certain Greeks. *These* came to Philip
of Bethsaida in Galilee, and *asked* him, saying, Sir, we
22 *desire* to see Jesus. Philip cometh and telleth Andrew;
23 and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus. And Jesus
answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son
24 of man should be glorified. Verily, verily I say unto
you, *Unless* a *grain* of wheat *that falleth* into the ground

die, it *remaineth* alone; but if it die, it bringeth forth
25 much fruit. He that loveth his life shall lose it: and
he that hateth his life in this world shall *preserve* it to
26 life eternal. If any man serve me, let him follow me,
and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any
man serve me, him will *the* Father honour.
27 Now is my soul troubled. And what shall I say?
Father, save me from this hour? But for this cause I
28 came, for this hour. Father, glorify thy name. Then
a voice came from heaven, I have both glorified it, and
29 I will glorify *it* again. The *multitude* who stood and
heard it, said, *It* thundered; others said, An angel spake
30 to him. Jesus answered and said, This voice came not
31 because of me, but for your sakes. Now is the judgment
of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast
32 out. And I, *when* I am lifted up from the earth, will
33 draw all men *to* me. (*He spake this*, signifying what
34 death he should die.) The *multitude* answered him,
We have heard out of the law, that the Christ abideth
for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be
35 lifted up? Who is this Son of man? Then Jesus said
to them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk
while ye have the light, lest darkness *overtake* you; for
he that walketh in darkness, knoweth not whither he
36 goeth. While ye have the light, believe in the light,
that ye may *become* children of light. These things
spake Jesus, and *retiring concealed* himself from them.
37 But though he had done so many miracles before
38 them, *yet* they believed not on him; *So* that the word
of the Prophet Isaiah was fulfilled, which he *said*, Lord,
who hath believed our report? And to whom hath the
39 arm of the Lord been revealed? Therefore they could
40 not believe, *according to what* Isaiah said again, He hath
blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they
might not see with their eyes, and understand with their
41 heart, and be converted, *that I might* heal them. These
things said Isaiah, when he saw his glory, and spake of
42 him. Nevertheless many *even of* the . . rulers believed
on him, but they did not confess him, because of the
Pharisees, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.
43 For they loved the praise of man more than the praise
of God.
44 Jesus said *with a loud voice*, He that believeth on me,
45 believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. And he
46 that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. I am come a
light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me,
47 *may not continue* in darkness. If any man hear my
words, and believe not, I judge him not; for I *am not*
48 *come* to judge the world, but to save the world. He

that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him; the word *which* I have spoken,
49 *that* shall judge him *at* the last day. For I have not spoken of myself, but the Father who sent me, he gave me commandment, what I should say, and *how* I should
50 speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting; what therefore I speak to you, as the Father hath said to me, so I speak.

13 Now before the feast of the passover, Jesus *knowing* his hour was come, *to pass out* of this world to the Father, having loved his own who were in the world, he
2 loved them to the end. And *while they were at supper* (the devil having now put it into the heart of Judas
3 Iscariot, *the son of Simon*, to betray him) Jesus knowing the Father had given all things into his hands, and that
4 he was come *forth* from God, and *going* to God, Riseth from supper, and layeth aside his garments, and taking
5 a towel, girdeth himself. After that, he poured water into the basin, and began to wash the feet of the disciples, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was
6 girded. Then cometh he to Simon Peter, who saith to
7 him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? Jesus answered and said to him, What I do, thou knowest not now;
8 but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter saith to him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash
9 thee not, thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith to him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and
10 my head. Jesus saith to him, He *who hath been bathed*, needeth only to wash his feet, and is clean *all over:* and
11 ye are clean; but not all. For he knew who *would* betray him: therefore he said, Ye are not all clean.
12 So after he had washed their feet, and taken his garments, sitting down again, he said to them, Know ye
13 what I have done to you? Ye call me Master and Lord;
14 and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet, ye ought also to wash
15 one another's feet. For I have given you an example,
16 that ye *also may* do as I have done to you. Verily, verily I say unto you, the servant is not greater than his Lord,
17 neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If
18 ye know these things, happy are ye, if ye do them. I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen, that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with
19 me, hath lifted up his heel against me. Now I tell you before *it is done*, that when *it is done*, ye may believe
20 that I am he. Verily, verily I say unto you, he that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

21 Jesus *having said this*, was troubled in spirit, and
testified, and said, Verily, verily I say unto you, one of
22 you *will* betray me. Then the disciples looked one on
23 another doubting of whom he spake. Now there was
lying in the bosom of Jesus one of the disciples whom
24 Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him,
25 to ask who it *was* of whom he spake. He then, *leaning*
on the breast of Jesus, saith to him, Lord, who is it?
26 Jesus answered, It is he to whom I shall give the sop
when I have dipped it. And *having dipped* the sop, he
27 giveth it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. And after
the sop, *then* Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus
28 to him, *What* thou doest, do quickly. Now *none* at the
29 table knew *why he said* this to him. But some . .
thought, as Judas had the *purse*, that Jesus had said to
him, Buy *what* we have need of against the feast, or,
30 Give something to the poor. He then having received the
sop, went out immediately. And it was night *when
he went out.*
31 Jesus *saith*, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God
32 is glorified *by* him. If God be glorified *by* him, God
will also glorify him *with* himself, and will *shortly* glorify
33 him. *Beloved* children, yet a little while I am with you:
ye shall seek me, and as I said to the Jews, Whither I
34 go ye cannot come, so now I say to you. A new com-
mandment I give . . you, that ye love one another: as
35 I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By
this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye
36 have love one to another. Simon Peter said to him,
Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither
I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou *wilt* follow
37 me *hereafter.* Peter saith to him, Lord, why cannot I
follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.
38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for
my sake? Verily, verily I say unto thee, the cock shall
not *have crowed*, till thou hast denied me thrice.

14 Let not your heart be troubled: . . believe in God:
believe also in me. In my Father's house are many
2 mansions; *if not*, I would have told you. I go to prepare
3 a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you,
I will come again and receive you to myself, that where
4 I am, ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and
5 the way ye know. Thomas saith to him, Lord, we know
not whither thou goest, and how can we know the way?
6 Jesus saith . . I am the way, *and* the truth, and the
7 life; no man cometh to the Father but by me. If ye
had known me, ye *would* have known my Father also:
from henceforth ye *have known* him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith to him, Lord, show us the Father, and it
9 sufficeth us. Jesus saith to him, Have I been so long . .
with you, and hast thou not known me, Philip? He
that hath seen me, hath seen the Father; and how
10 sayest thou, Show us the Father? Believest thou not
that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me? The
words that I speak to you, I speak not of myself; *and*
11 the Father that dwelleth in me he doth the works. Be-
lieve me, *because* I am in the Father, and the Father in
me; *but if not,* believe me for the *sake of the works.*
12 Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me,
the works *which* I do shall he do also; and greater than
13 these shall he do, because I go to my Father. And
whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, I will do *it,* that
14 the Father may be glorified *through* the Son. If ye shall
ask any thing in my name, I will do *it.*
15 If ye love me, keep my commandments. And I will
ask the Father, and he will give you another Comforter,
17 *to remain* with you for ever, Even the Spirit of truth,
whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him
not, neither knoweth him. But ye know him, for he
18 *remaineth* with you, and shall be in you. I will not
19 leave you *orphans:* I come to you. Yet a little while,
and the world seeth me no more: but ye see me: because
20 I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that
21 I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you. He
that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it
is that loveth me: and he that loveth me, shall be loved
by my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest
myself to him.
22 Judas (not Iscariot) saith to him, Lord, how is it that
thou *art about to* manifest thyself to us, and not to the
23 world? Jesus answered and said to him, If any man
love me, he will keep my words; and my Father will
love him, and we will come to him, and make our abode
24 with him. He that loveth me not, keepeth not my
words; and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the
Father's who sent me.
25 These things have I spoken to you, *while I remained*
26 with you. But the Comforter, the Holy Ghost, whom
the Father will send in my name, he *will* teach you all
things, and *will* bring all things to your remembrance,
27 whatsoever I have said to you. Peace I will leave with
you; my peace I *will* give unto you; not as the world
giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled,
28 neither let it be afraid. Ye heard *me say to you,* I go, . .
and come again to you. If ye loved me, ye *would have*
rejoiced, because I . . go to the Father; for the Father
29 is greater than I. And now I have told you, before it

cometh to pass, that when it is come to pass ye *may*
30 believe. Hereafter I *shall* not talk much with you; for
the prince of this world *is coming; but he* hath nothing
31 in me: But that the world may know that I love the
Father, and as the Father *commanded me*, so I do.
Arise, and let us go hence.

15 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husband-
man. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit,
2 he taketh away; and every *one* that beareth fruit, he
3 *purifieth* it, that it may *bear* more fruit. Now ye are
clean through the word which I have spoken to you.
4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear
fruit of itself, *unless* it abide in the vine, *so neither* can ye,
5 *unless* ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the
branches. He that abideth in me, and I in him, *he*
beareth much fruit; *but separate* from me ye can do
6 nothing. If *any one* abide not in me, he is cast *out* as a
branch, and is withered: and *they* gather and cast them
7 into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me,
and my words abide in you, ye shall ask *whatsoever* ye
8 will, and it shall be done *for* you. Hereby is my Father
glorified, that ye bear much fruit: so shall ye be my
9 disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I *also*
10 loved you. *Abide* ye in my love. If ye keep my com-
mandments, ye shall abide in my love, even as I have
kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.
11 I have spoken these things to you, that my joy might
12 remain in you, and your joy might be full. This is my
commandment, That ye love one another, as I have
13 loved you. *No one* hath greater love than this, that a
14 man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my
15 friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. I *no*
longer call you servants, for the servant knoweth not
what his lord doth: but I have called you friends: for
all things that I have heard *from* my Father, I have
16 made known to you. Ye have not chosen me, but I
have chosen you, and *appointed* you that ye *may* go and
bear fruit, and that your fruit *may* remain; that
whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he
17 may give it you. *This* I command you, That ye love
one another.
18 If the world hate you, ye know it hated me before it
19 hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would
love *its* own; but because ye are not of the world, but
I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world
20 hateth you. Remember the word that I said to you,
The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have
persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they

21 have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But
all these things will they do to you, for my name's sake,
22 because they know not him that sent me. If I had not
come and spoken to them, they had not had sin, but
23 now they have no *excuse* for their sin. He that hateth
24 me, hateth my Father also. If I had not done among
them the works which *no* other did, they had not had
sin: but now have they . . seen *them*, and *yet* hated
25 both me and my Father. . . *So* that the word which is
written in their law is fulfilled, They hated me without
26 a cause. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will
send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth, who
27 proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me. Ye
also shall *testify*, because ye have been with me from
the beginning.

16 I have told you these things, that ye *may* not be
offended. They will put you out of the synagogues;
2 yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will
3 think he doth God service. These things will they do,
4 because they have not known the Father nor me. But
I have told you these things, that when the time shall
come, ye may remember I told you them. *I did not tell*
you these things at the beginning, because I was with
5 you. But now I go to him that sent me, and none of
6 you asketh me, Whither goest thou? But because I
have told you these things, sorrow hath filled your
7 heart. *But* I tell you the truth; it is expedient for you
that I go . . : for if I go not, . . the Comforter will
not come to you; but if I depart, I will send him to you.
8 And *he coming* will *convince* the world of sin, and of
9 righteousness, and of judgment: Of sin, because they
10 believe not on me: Of righteousness, because I go to
11 my Father, and ye see me no more: Of judgment,
because the prince of this world is judged.
12 I have yet many things to say to you, but ye cannot
13 bear them now. *But* when he, the Spirit of truth, is
come, he will guide you into all the truth; for he *will*
not speak of himself: but whatsoever he shall hear, . .
he will speak; and he will show you the things *which are*
14 to come. He *will* glorify me; for he *will* take of mine,
15 and show *it* you. All things that the Father hath are
mine: therefore I said, He *will* take of mine, and show
16 it . . you. A little while and ye shall not see me; and
again, a little while and ye shall see me, because I go
17 to the Father. Then some of his disciples said *to each*
other, What is this that he saith to us? A little while
and ye shall not see me; and again, a little while and
ye shall see me? and, Because I go to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little
19 while? *We understand not* what he saith. Jesus knew
they were desirous to ask him, and said to them, Ye
inquire among you of this, that I said, A little while
and ye shall not see me: and again, A little while and
20 ye shall see me. Verily, verily I say unto you, *Ye will*
weep and lament; but the world will rejoice: ye will
be sorrowful; but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.
21 A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because
her hour is come: but *when she hath brought forth* the
child, she no longer remembereth the anguish, for joy
22 that a man is born into the world. And ye now there-
fore have sorrow; but I will see you again, and your
heart shall rejoice, and your joy *no one* taketh from you.
23 And in that day ye shall *not question me about any thing.*
Verily, verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask
24 the Father in my name, he will give you. Hitherto ye
have asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall
25 receive, that your joy may be full. I have spoken these
things to you in *parables:* but the time *is coming* when
I will no longer speak to you in *parables,* but will show
26 you plainly the Father. At that day ye shall ask in
my name: and I say not to you, that I will pray the
27 Father for you. For the Father himself loveth you,
because ye have loved me, and have believed that I
28 came *forth* from God. I came forth from the Father,
and am come into the world: again, I leave the world,
and go to the Father.
29 His disciples *say* to him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly,
30 and speakest no *parable.* Now we are sure that thou
knowest all things, and needest not that any should
question thee: by this we believe that thou camest
31 forth from God. Jesus answered, Ye do now believe.
32 *But lo,* the hour is coming, yea, is *already* come that ye
will be scattered every *one* to his own, and shall leave
me alone: and yet I am not alone, for the Father is
33 with me. I have spoken these things to you, that ye
may have peace in me. In the world ye shall have
tribulation; but *take courage,* I have overcome the
world.

17 These *things* spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes
to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come:
glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee:
2 As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he
may give eternal life to *all whom* thou hast given him.
3 And this is life eternal, to know thee, the only true God,
4 and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glori-
fied thee on earth. I have finished the work which

5 thou gavest me to do. And now, Father, glorify thou
me with *thyself*, with the glory which I had with thee
before the world was.
6 I have manifested thy name to the men whom thou
hast given me out of the world. Thine they were, and
thou hast given them me, and they have kept thy word.
7 Now they know, that all things whatsoever thou hast
8 given me are of thee. For I have given them the words
which thou gavest me, and they have received *them*,
and have known surely, that I came *forth* from thee,
9 and they have believed that thou *hast* sent me. I pray
for them: I pray not for the world, but for them whom
10 thou hast given me; for they are thine. And *all things*
that are mine are thine, and that are thine are mine, and
11 I am glorified *by* them. And I am no longer in the world,
but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy
Father, keep through thy name them whom thou hast
12 given me, that they may be one, as we are. While I
was with them in the world I kept them *through* thy
name. Those whom thou hast given me I have *guarded*,
and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition, that
13 the Scripture might be fulfilled. And now *I am coming*
to thee, and I speak these things in the world, that they
14 *may* have my joy fulfilled in them. I have given them
thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they
15 are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I
do not pray that thou wouldest take them out of the
world, but that thou wouldest keep them from the evil
16 *one*. They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.
17 Sanctify them through the truth: thy word is truth.
18 As thou hast sent me into the world, *I also* have sent
19 them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify
myself, that they also *may* be sanctified through the
truth.
20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also *who*
21 *will* believe on me through their word: That they all
may be one; as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee,
that they also may be one in us, that the world may
22 believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which
thou *hast given* me, I have given them, that they may be
23 one as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they
may be *perfected* in one; and that the world may know,
that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them as thou
hast loved me.
24 Father, I will that *these* also *whom* thou hast given
me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my
glory which thou hast given me; for thou lovedst me
25 before the foundation of the world. Righteous Father,
though the world hath not known thee, *yet* I have known

26 thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And
I have declared to them thy name, and will declare *it*,
that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in
them, and I in them.

18 Jesus *having spoken* these words, went forth with
his disciples over the brook Kedron, where was a
2 garden, into which he entered and his disciples. And
Judas also, who betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus
3 *had often met there* with his disciples. Judas then having
received a *troop of soldiers*, and officers from the chief
priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and
4 torches, and *arms*. *Then* Jesus knowing all things that
were coming upon him, going forth said to them, Whom
5 seek ye? They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus
saith to them, I am he. And Judas also, who betrayed
6 him, stood with them. As soon as he said to them, I am
7 he, they went backward, and fell to the ground. He
asked them again, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus
8 of Nazareth. Jesus answered, I have told you, I am he:
9 if therefore ye seek me, let these go . . : That the
saying might be fulfilled which *he had spoken*, Of them
10 *whom thou hast given me*, I have lost none. Then Simon
Peter, having a sword, drew it, and smote the high
priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's
11 name was Malchus. Then said Jesus to Peter: Put up
the sword into its *scabbard*. The cup which my Father
hath given me, shall I not drink it?
12 Then the *soldiers* and the captain, and officers of the
13 Jews took Jesus and bound him. And led him away to
Annas first, (for he was father-in-law to Caiaphas, who
14 was high priest that year). Caiaphas was he *who had*
counselled the Jews, that it was expedient one man
15 should die for the people. Now Simon Peter followed
Jesus, and . . another disciple. That disciple was
known to the high priest, and went with Jesus into the
16 palace of the high priest. But Peter stood at the door
without: *therefore* the other disciple, who was known to
the high priest, went out and spake to her that kept the
17 door, and brought in Peter. Then saith the *maid* who
kept the door to Peter, Art not thou also one of this
18 man's disciples? He saith, I am not. And the servants
and officers *having* made a fire of coals (for it was cold)
stood and warmed themselves: and Peter stood with
19 them and warmed himself. Then the high priest asked
20 Jesus of his disciples and of his doctrine. Jesus
answered him, I spake openly to the world; I *was con-*
tinually teaching in the synagogue and in the temple,
whither all the Jews resort, and in secret have I said

21 nothing. Why askest thou me? Ask them that heard
me, what I said to them: behold they know what I said.
22 When he had said thus, one of the officers, who stood by,
gave Jesus a blow, saying, Answerest thou the high priest
23 so? Jesus answered, If I have spoken evil, bear witness
24 of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me? (Now
Annas had sent him bound to Caiaphas the high priest.)
25 And Simon Peter *was standing* and *warming* himself.
They said to him, Art not thou also one of his disciples?
26 He denied and said, I am not. One of the servants of
the high priest (being kinsman *to him* whose ear Peter
had cut off) said, Did not I see thee in the garden with
27 him? Peter denied again, and immediately the cock crew.
28 Then they led Jesus from Caiaphas *to the governor's*
palace and it was early: and they went not into the
palace themselves, *that they might not* be defiled, *but*
29 might eat the passover. Pilate therefore went out to
them, and said, What accusation do ye bring against
30 this man? They answered and said to him, If he were
not a malefactor, we should not have delivered him to
31 thee. Then said Pilate to them, Take ye him, and judge
him according to your law. The Jews said to him, It is
32 not lawful for us to put any man to death: *So* the
saying of Jesus was fulfilled which he spake, signifying
33 what death he should die. Then Pilate *returned into the*
palace, and called Jesus, and said to him, Art thou the
34 king of the Jews? Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this
35 of thyself? or did others tell it thee of me? Pilate
answered, Am I a Jew? thy own nation, *even* the chief
priests, have delivered thee to me. What hast thou
36 done? Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this
world: if my kingdom were of this world, my servants
would have fought, that I *might* not be delivered to the
37 Jews: but my kingdom is not from hence. Pilate said
to him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou
sayest . . I am a king. To this end was I born, and
for this cause came I into the world, that I *might* bear
witness to the truth. Every *one* that is of the truth,
38 heareth my voice. Pilate saith to him, What is truth?
And *having said* this, he went out again to the Jews, and
39 saith to them, I find no fault in him. . . But ye have a
custom that I should release to you one at the passover:
will ye therefore that I release to you the king of the
40 Jews? Then cried they all again, saying, Not this man,
but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

19 Then Pilate therefore took Jesus and scourged him.
And the soldiers *having* platted a crown of thorns, put
3 it on his head, and put on him a purple robe, And said,

Hail, king of the Jews. And they smote him *on the*
4 *cheeks.* Pilate went *out* again, and saith to them, *Lo,* I
bring him forth to you, that ye may know I find no fault
5 in him. Then Jesus came forth, wearing the crown of
thorns, and the purple robe. And *he* saith to them,
6 Behold the man. *But* when the chief priests and the
officers saw him, they cried out saying, Crucify . . ,
crucify him. Pilate saith to them, Take ye him and
7 crucify him; for I find no fault in him. The Jews
answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought
8 to die, because he made himself the Son of God. When
9 Pilate heard that saying, he was the more afraid, And
returned into the palace, and saith to Jesus, Whence art
10 thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. Then Pilate
saith to him, Speakest thou not to me? Knowest thou
not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to
11 release thee? Jesus answered, Thou couldst have no
power *over* me, *unless* it were given thee from above:
therefore he that delivered me to thee hath the greater
12 sin. *Upon this* Pilate sought to release him: but the
Jews cried out saying, If thou *release* this man, thou art
not a friend to Caesar. Whosoever maketh himself a
13 king, speaketh against Caesar. Pilate *hearing* this say-
ing, brought Jesus forth, and sat on the judgment seat,
in a place called the pavement, but in Hebrew, Gab-
14 batha; (It was the preparation of the passover, and
about the *third* hour) and saith to the Jews, Behold
15 your king. But they cried out, Away with him, away
with him, crucify him. Pilate saith to them, Shall I
crucify your king? The chief priests answered, We have
16 no king but Caesar. Then delivered he him *to* them to
be crucified.
17 And they took Jesus and led him away. And he
bearing his cross, went forth *to the* place called the place
18 of a skull, which is called in Hebrew, Golgotha; Where
they crucified him, and two others with him, *one on each*
19 *side,* and Jesus in the midst. And Pilate wrote an
inscription also, and put it on the cross: and the writing
was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE
20 JEWS. Many of the Jews read this *inscription;* for the
place where Jesus was crucified was *near* the city: and
21 it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin. Then
said the chief priests . . to Pilate, Write not, The king
of the Jews; but that he said I am the king of the Jews.
22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.
23 *And* the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his
garments and made four parts, to every soldier a part,
and also his *vesture:* now the *vesture* was without seam,
24 woven from the top throughout. They said therefore

one to another, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be; that the scripture might be fulfilled which saith, They parted my *garments* among them, and cast lots for my vesture. These things therefore the soldiers did.

25 Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and Mary
26 Magdalene. Jesus therefore *seeing* his mother, and the disciple standing by whom he loved, saith to his mother,
27 Woman, behold thy son. Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that hour *the* disciple took her to his own home.

28 After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled,
29 saith, I thirst. Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar. And *filling* a sponge with vinegar, and putting
30 it on *a stalk of* hyssop, they put it to his mouth. When Jesus had *taken* the vinegar, he said, It is finished, and bowing the head, he *delivered up his spirit.*

31 *Now because* it was the preparation, *lest* the bodies should remain upon the cross on the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was *a great* day) the Jews besought Pilate, that their legs might be broken, and they might be taken
32 away. Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, who was crucified with him.
33 But *coming* to Jesus, *when* they saw he was dead already,
34 they brake not his legs. But one of the soldiers pierced his side with a spear, and forthwith there came out
35 blood and water. And he that saw *hath testified* it, and his *testimony* is true, and he knoweth that he saith true,
36 that ye *also may* believe. For these things were done that the scripture *might* be fulfilled, A bone of *it* shall
37 not be broken. And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they *have* pierced.

38 And after *these things*, Joseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly, for fear of the Jews) *asked* Pilate *leave* to take away the body of Jesus. And Pilate gave him leave. He came therefore and took
39 the body of Jesus. And Nicodemus also came (who at first had come to Jesus by night) *bringing* a mixture of
40 myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds. So they took the body of Jesus, and *wrapped* it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.
41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, in which no
42 man *had ever been* laid. There therefore they laid Jesus, because of the preparation day of the Jews; for the sepulchre was nigh.

20 The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene
early, while it was yet dark, to the sepulchre, and
2 seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. Then
she runneth and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the
other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith to them,
They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre,
3 and we know not where they have laid him. Then
Peter went *out* and the other disciple, and came to the
4 sepulchre. They both ran together, *but* the other disciple
5 outran Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. And
stooping down . . he seeth the linen clothes lying: yet
6 went he not in. Then cometh Simon Peter following
him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen
7 clothes lie, And the napkin that *had been* about his head,
not lying with the linen clothes, but *folded up* in a place
8 by itself. Then the other disciple who came first to the
9 sepulchre, went in; and he saw and believed. *For* as
yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again
10 from the dead. Then the disciples *went home again.*
11 But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping.
12 And as she wept, she stooped down . . into the sepulchre,
and seeth two angels in white sitting, where the body of
13 Jesus had laid, one at the head, and one at the feet. And
they say to her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith
to them, They have taken away my Lord, and I know
14 not where they have laid him. And *having said this*
she turned herself back, and seeth Jesus standing, but
15 knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus saith to her, Woman,
why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou? She sup-
posing him to be the gardener, saith to him, Sir, if thou
hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him,
16 and I will take him away. Jesus saith to her, Mary!
She turning . . , saith to him, Rabboni; *that is,* Master.
17 Jesus saith to her, Touch me not; for I am not yet
ascended to my Father. But go to my brethren, and say
to them, I ascend to my Father and your Father, and to
18 my God, and your God. Mary Magdalene *cometh* and
telleth the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that
he had spoken these things to her.
19 The same day, . . the first day of the week, at
evening, *the doors being shut,* where the disciples were
assembled for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in
20 the midst, and saith to them, Peace be unto you. And
having said this he showed them his hands and his side.
Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.
21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you. As
22 the Father hath sent me, even so send I you. And
having said this, he breathed on them, and saith to them,
23 Receive ye the Holy Ghost. Whose soever sins ye

remit, they are remitted to them; and whose soever sins
ye retain, they are retained.
24 But Thomas called Didymus, one of the twelve, was
25 not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples
therefore said to him, We have seen the Lord. But he
said to them, *Unless* I see the print of the nails in his
hands, and put my finger into the *place* of the nails,
and . . my hand into his side, I will not believe.
26 And after eight days his disciples were again within,
and Thomas with them. Jesus cometh, the doors being
shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto
27 you. Then said he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger,
and behold my hands, and reach hither thy hand, and
put it upon my side, and be not faithless, but believing.
28 And Thomas answered and said to him, My Lord, and
29 my God. Jesus saith to him, Thomas, because thou
hast seen me, thou hast believed: *happy* are they that
have not seen, and yet have believed.
30 And Jesus *wrought* many other *miracles* also, in the
presence of his disciples, which are not written in this
31 book. But these are written, that ye may believe that
Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing
ye *may* have life through his name.

21 After these things Jesus *manifested* himself again
to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; *he manifested*
2 *himself thus;* There were together Simon Peter, and
Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in
Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his
3 disciples. Simon Peter saith to them, I go a fishing.
They say to him, We also go with thee. They went
out and entered into the *vessel, but* caught nothing that
4 night. When the morning was come, Jesus stood on
the shore; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.
5 Then said Jesus to them, Children, have ye any meat?
6 They answered him, No. And he said to them, Cast
your net on the right side of the *vessel,* and ye shall find.
They cast, therefore, and now they were not able to
7 draw it, for the multitude of fishes. *Then* the disciple
whom Jesus loved saith to Peter, It is the Lord. Simon
Peter *hearing* that it was the Lord, girt *on his upper*
coat (for he was *stript*) and *threw* himself into the sea.
8 And the other disciples came in the *vessel* (for they were
not far from land, *about* two hundred cubits) *drawing*
9 the net *full of* fishes. *When* they came to land they
see a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.
10 Jesus saith to them, Bring of the fishes which ye have
11 *taken* now. Simon Peter went on *board,* and drew the
net to land, full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty

and three: and *though* there were so many, the net was
12 not broken. Jesus saith to them, Come *ye* and dine.
And none of the disciples *presumed* to ask him, Who
13 art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. Jesus then
cometh and taketh bread, and giveth *to* them, and fish
14 likewise. This *was* the third time that Jesus showed
himself to his disciples, after he was risen from the dead.
15 When they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter,
Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me more than these *do?*
He saith to him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love
16 thee. He saith to him, Feed my lambs. He saith to
him again, the second time, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest
thou me? He saith to him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest
17 that I love thee. He saith to him, Feed my sheep. He
saith to him the third time, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest
thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said to him
the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said to him,
Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love
18 thee. Jesus saith to him, Feed my sheep: Verily, verily
I say unto thee, when thou wast young, thou *didst gird*
thyself, and walk whither thou wouldest: but when
thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch *out* thy hands, and
another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou
19 wouldest not. This *he said*, signifying by what death
he should glorify God. And having *said this*, he saith
20 to him, Follow me. Peter turning about, seeth the
disciple whom Jesus loved following, who also leaned on
his breast at supper, and said, Lord, who is he that
21 betrayeth thee? Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord,
22 and what shall this man do? Jesus saith to him, If I
will that he tarry till I come, what is *it* to thee? Follow
23 thou me. Then went this saying abroad among the
brethren, that that disciple should not die. Yet Jesus
did not say to him, *That he should* not die: but, If I will
that he tarry till I come, what is *it* to thee?
24 This is the disciple who testifieth of these things, and
wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is
25 true. And there are also many other things which Jesus
did, which, if they *were to* be written *particularly*, I
suppose that even the world itself would not contain the
books that were written.

THE
ACTS of the APOSTLES

THIS Book, in which St. Luke records the actions of the apostles, particularly of St. Peter and St. Paul (whose companion in travel he was) is as it were the centre between the gospels and the epistles. It contains, after a very brief recapitulation of the evangelical history, a continuation of the history of Christ, the event of his predictions, and a kind of supplement to what he before spake to his disciples by the Holy Ghost now given unto them. It contains also the seeds and first stamina of all those things, which are enlarged upon in the epistles.

The gospels treat of Christ the head: the Acts shew, That the same things befall his body; which is animated by his Spirit, persecuted by the world, defended and exalted by God.

In this book is shewn the Christian doctrine, and the method of applying it to Jews, Heathens, and Believers; that is, to those who are to be converted, and those who are converted: the hindrances of it in particular men, in several kinds of men, in different ranks and nations: the propagation of the gospel, and that grand revolution among both Jews and Heathens: the victory thereof, in spite of all opposition, from all the power, malice, and wisdom of the whole world, from one chamber into temples, houses, streets, markets; fields, inns, prisons, camps, courts; chariots, ships, villages, cities, islands: to Jews, Heathens, magistrates, generals, soldiers, eunuchs, captives, slaves, women, children, sailors: to Athens, and at length to Rome.

THE ACTS

CHAPTER I

1 The former treatise have I *composed*, O Theophilus,
of all *things which* Jesus began both to do and *to* teach,
2 Until the day . . he was taken up, after . . *having*
through the Holy Ghost given *commandment* to the
3 apostles whom he had chosen: To whom also he *pre-*
sented himself alive, after his passion, by many infallible
proofs, being seen *by* them forty days, and speaking of
4 the things pertaining to the kingdom of God. And
having assembled . . *them* together, he commanded them
not to depart from Jerusalem, but *to* wait for the promise
of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard *from* me.
5 For John *indeed* baptized with water; but ye shall be
baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.
6 *And* when they . . were come together, they asked . .
him, saying, Lord, *dost* thou at this time restore . . the
7 kingdom to Israel? But he said to them, It is not for
you to know the times or the seasons which the Father
8 hath put in his own power. But ye shall receive power,
. . the Holy Ghost *being* come upon you, and shall be
witnesses *to* me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea,
and . . Samaria, and *to* the uttermost part of the earth.
9 And *having* spoken these things, while they beheld, he
was taken up, and a cloud received him *from* their
10 sight. And while they *were steadfastly looking up to*
heaven, as he went up, behold two men, *in white apparel,*
11 *stood by them, Who* also said, Ye men of Galilee, why
stand ye gazing . . into heaven? This . . Jesus *who*
is taken up from you into heaven, shall . . come . .
12 as ye have seen him *going* into heaven. Then *they*
returned to Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet,
which is from Jerusalem a Sabbath-day's journey.
13 And when they were come in, they went up into *the*
upper room, where both Peter and James, and John and
Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew,
James *the son* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and *Jude*
14 *the brother* of James, *tarried.* These all continued with
one accord in prayer and supplication with the women,
and Mary the mother of Jesus, and . . his brethren.
15 And in *these* days, Peter *standing* up in the midst of
the disciples, (the number of *persons* together *was* about

16 *a* hundred and twenty) said, Men, . . brethren, this
scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy
Ghost *spake before, by the mouth of David,* concerning
Judas, *who* was guide to them that *apprehended* Jesus.
17 For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part
18 of this ministry. Now this man purchased a field with
the reward of iniquity, and falling *down on his face,* he
burst asunder in the *middle,* and all his bowels gushed
19 out. And it was known *to* all *that dwell* at Jerusalem,
so that that field is called, in their *own* tongue, *Akeldama,*
20 that *is,* The field of blood. For it is written in the book
of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no
man dwell therein: and, His bishopric let another take.
21 Wherefore of these men *who* have *been* with us all the
time that the Lord Jesus *was going* in and out *over* us,
22 Beginning from the baptism of John, *till the* . . day he
was taken up from us, *one must* be . . a witness with us
23 of his resurrection. And they appointed two, Joseph
called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and
24 Matthias. And they prayed and said, Thou, Lord, *who*
knowest the hearts of all . . , show *which* of these two
25 thou hast chosen, *To* take part of this ministry and
apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, *to*
26 go to his own place. And they gave forth their lots,
and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered
with the eleven apostles.

2 And when the day of pentecost was . . come, they
were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly
2 there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing *violent*
wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.
3 And there appeared *to* them *distinct* tongues, *as* of fire;
4 and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled
with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other
5 tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. And there
were dwelling *in* Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of
6 every nation under heaven. *And* when this was noised
abroad, the multitude came together, and were con-
founded, *because* every man heard them speaking in
7 his own language. And they were . . amazed, and
marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all
8 these *who are speaking* Galileans? And how hear we
9 every *one,* in *our* own *native language,* Parthians, and
Medes, and Elamites, and . . dwellers in Mesopotamia,
and . . Judea, and Cappadocia, . . Pontus and Asia,
10 Phrygia and Pamphylia, . . Egypt, and . . the parts
of *Africa* about Cyrene, and *Roman sojourners,* (Jews and
11 proselytes) *Cretans* and Arabians, we *hear* them *speaking*
12 in our tongues the wonderful works of God? And they

were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to
13 another, What *can this mean?* *But* others mocking,
said, *They* are full of *sweet wine.*
14 *Then* Peter standing up with the eleven, lifted up his
voice, and said *to* them, . . Men of Judea, and all ye
that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known *to* you, and
15 hearken to my words. . . These are not drunken, as ye
16 suppose: *for* it is but the third hour of the day. But
17 this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Joel, And
it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will
pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and
your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men
shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:
18 And *in those days I will pour out of my Spirit upon my*
servants and upon my handmaids, and they shall proph-
19 esy. And I will show *prodigies* in heaven above, and
signs *on* earth beneath, blood, and fire, and vapour of
20 smoke. The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the
moon into blood, before the *day of the Lord, the great*
21 *and illustrious day,* come. *But* it shall come to pass,
that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord, shall
22 be saved. . . Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus of
Nazareth, a man *pointed out to you of God,* by miracles,
and wonders, and signs, which God *wrought* by him in
23 the midst of you, as . . yourselves also know; Him,
being delivered by the determinate counsel and fore-
knowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands
24 have crucified and slain: whom God hath raised up,
having loosed the pains of death, *as* it was not possible
25 that he should be *held under* it. For David speaketh
concerning him, I *have seen* the Lord always before my
face, for he is on my right hand, that I *may* not be
26 moved. Therefore my heart *is glad,* and my tongue
27 *exulteth; yea, and* my flesh shall rest in hope. For thou
wilt not leave my soul in *hades,* neither wilt thou suffer
28 *thy* Holy One to see corruption. Thou hast made
known to me the ways of life; thou *wilt fill* me *with* joy
29 *by* thy countenance. Men and brethren, *I may say to*
you freely of the patriarch David, that he is both dead
and buried, and his sepulchre is *among* us *to* this day.
30 Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had
sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins
31 *one should* sit on his throne; He *foreseeing* this, spake of
the resurrection of Christ, That his soul was not left in
32 *hades,* neither did his flesh see corruption. This Jesus
33 God hath raised up, whereof *all we* are witnesses. *Being*
therefore exalted by the right hand of God, and having
received *from* the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost,
he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear.

34 For David is not ascended into the heavens; but he
saith himself, The Lord said *to* my Lord, Sit thou on my
35 right hand, Until I make thine *enemies* thy footstool.
36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that
God hath made *this* Jesus whom ye crucified both Lord
and Christ.
37 *And hearing* this, they were *pierced to the* heart, and
said *to* Peter and . . the rest of the apostles, . . Breth-
38 ren, what shall we do? *And* Peter said, . . Repent, and
be baptized every one of you, in the name of Jesus . . ,
for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of
39 the Holy Ghost. For the promise is *to* you and to your
children, and to all that are afar off, *whomsoever* the
40 Lord our God shall call. And with many other words
did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from
41 this *perverse* generation. Then they, gladly *receiving*
his word, were baptized; and there were added *to* them
42 *that* day about three thousand souls. And they con-
tinued *steadfast* in the *teaching* of the apostles, and *the*
fellowship, and *the* breaking of bread, and *the* prayers.
43 And fear came upon every soul, and many wonders and
44 signs were *wrought* by the apostles. And all that believed
45 were together, and had all things common. And sold
their possessions and goods, and *divided* them to *all*, as
46 *any one* had need. And continuing daily with one
accord in the temple, and breaking *the* bread *at home*,
they *partook of* their *food* with gladness and singleness
47 of heart, Praising God, and having favour with all the
people. And the Lord added *daily to the Church those
who were saved.*

3 Now Peter and John went up together into the
temple, at the hour of prayer, . . the ninth hour. And
2 a certain man, lame from his mother's womb, was carried,
whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple . . , called
Beautiful, to ask alms of them that *were entering* into
3 the temple. Who seeing Peter and John about to go
4 into the temple, asked an alms. And Peter *looking*
5 *steadfastly* upon him, with John, said, Look on us. And
he gave heed *to* them, expecting to receive something of
6 them. Then *said Peter*, Silver and gold have I none;
but *what* I have, *I give* thee: in the name of Jesus Christ
7 of Nazareth, rise up and walk. And *taking* him by the
right hand he lifted *him* up, and immediately his feet
8 and ankle bones *were strengthened*, And *leaping up*, *he*
stood and walked and *went* with them into the temple,
9 walking, and leaping, and praising God. And all the
10 people saw him walking and praising God. And they
knew him, that *this* was he *who had* sat for alms at the

Beautiful gate of the temple, and were filled with wonder
and amazement at that which had *befallen* him.
11 And as *he* held Peter and John, all the people ran
together *to* them, in the *portico* that is called Solomon's,
12 greatly wondering. And Peter *seeing* it, answered . .
the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this?
Or why *do* ye *fix your eyes* on us as *if* by our own power
13 or *piety* we had made this man to walk? The God of
Abraham, and . . Isaac, and . . Jacob, the God of our
fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus, whom ye delivered
up, and *renounced* him in the presence of Pilate, when
14 he was determined to *release* him. But ye *renounced* the
Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be
15 granted . . you, And killed the Prince of life, whom
God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.
16 And his name, through faith in his name, hath *strengthened* this man, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith
which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundness,
17 in the presence of you all. And now, brethren, I *know*
that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.
18 But God hath *thus* fulfilled *the* things which *he foretold*
by the mouth of all *the* prophets, that *his* Christ should
19 suffer. Repent ye therefore and be converted, that
your sins may be blotted out, *that* the times of refreshing
20 *may* come from the presence of the Lord, And he *may*
send *to* you Jesus Christ, who was before *appointed*,
21 Whom heaven must receive, *till* the times of *the* restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth
22 of . . his holy prophets . . . For Moses truly said *to*
the fathers, *The Lord your God shall raise . . you up a prophet* of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye
23 hear in all things, whatsoever he shall say *to* you. And
it shall come to pass that every soul *who* will not hear
that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.
24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and *them* that
followed, whosoever have spoken, have *also* foretold *these*
25 days. Ye are the *sons* of the prophets and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying *to* Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the *families* of the earth
26 be blessed. *God having raised up his Son . . , hath* sent
him *to you first*, to bless you, *by* turning . . every one
of you from *your* iniquities.

4 And as they *were speaking to* the people, the priests,
and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came
2 *upon* them, Being grieved that they taught the people,
and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the
3 dead. And they laid hands on them, and put them in
4 hold *till* the next day: for it was now *evening*. *But*

many of them *who had* heard the word, believed: and
5 the number of the men was about five thousand. And
. . on the morrow *were gathered together at Jerusalem*
6 their rulers, and elders, and scribes, And Annas the high
priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander and as
7 many as were of the kindred of the high priest. And *hav-*
ing set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or
8 by what name, have ye done this? Then Peter, filled
with the Holy Ghost said *to* them, Ye rulers of the people,
9 and elders of Israel, If we *are* examined this day of the
benefit done to the impotent man, by what means he is
10 *healed*, Be it known *to* you all, and to all the people of
Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth,
whom ye crucified, whom God *hath* raised from the
dead, . . by him doth this man stand before you whole.
11 This is the stone which was set at nought *by* you builders,
12 which is become the head of the corner. *And* there
is salvation in *no* other; for there is *no* other name
under heaven given among men, whereby we must be
saved.
13 *And seeing* the boldness of Peter and John, and
understanding that they were *illiterate* and *uneducated*
men, they marvelled, and . . took knowledge of them,
14 that they had been with Jesus. And beholding the
man *who had been* healed standing with them, they *had*
15 nothing *to* say against it. But *having ordered* them to
go out of the council, they conferred among themselves,
16 saying, What shall we do to these men? For that
indeed a *signal* miracle *hath* been *wrought* by them, is
manifest to *all* that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot
17 deny it. Yet that it spread no *farther* among the people,
let us *severely* threaten them, that they speak *no more*
18 to *any* man in this name. And *having* called them, they
charged them, not to speak at all, nor teach in the name
19 of Jesus. But Peter and John *answering*, said to them,
Whether it be *just* in the sight of God, to *obey* you
20 rather than God, judge ye. For we cannot but speak
21 the things which we have seen and heard. *And having*
threatened them *again*, they let them go, finding nothing
how they might punish them, because of the people: for
22 *they* all glorified God for that which was done. For the
man *on whom this miracle of healing had been wrought,*
was above forty years old.
23 And being let go, they went to their own company,
and *related* all that the chief priests and elders had said
24 *to* them, And *having heard it*, they lifted up their voice
to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art *the* God
who madest heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that
25 in them is: Who *saidst by the mouth of thy servant David,*

Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain
26 things? The kings of the earth *set themselves in array*,
and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord
27 and against his Christ. For of a truth, *both Herod and
Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel,
were gathered together against thy holy child Jesus, whom*
28 *thou hast anointed.* . . To do whatsoever thy hand and
29 thy counsel *before determined* to be done. And now,
Lord, behold their threatenings, and *give* . . thy serv-
30 ants *to speak thy word with all boldness, While* thou
stretchest forth *thy* hand to heal, and signs and wonders
31 *are* done *through* the name of thy holy child Jesus. And
while they *were praying*, the place *in which they were
assembled* . . *was shaken*, and they were all filled with
the Holy Ghost, and . . spake the word of God with
boldness.

32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one
heart, and of one soul: *and not so much as one* said that
aught of the things which he *had* was his own, but they
33 had all things common. And *the apostles gave forth their
testimony of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus with great*
34 *power*, and great grace was upon them all. *For* neither
was there any *one* among them that *wanted:* for *whoso-
ever* were possessors of *houses* or *lands* sold them, and
35 brought the prices of the things that were sold, And laid
them down at the *feet of the apostles*, and distribution
was made *to* every one according as *any* had need.

36 And Joses, . . by the apostles . . surnamed Barna-
bas, . . which is, being interpreted *a* son of consolation,
37 . . a Levite, . . *a Cyprian by birth*, Having *an estate*,
sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the *feet
of the apostles.*

5 But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira
his wife, sold a possession, And kept back part of the
2 price, his wife also being privy to it, and *bringing* a
3 certain part, laid it at the *feet of the apostles.* But Peter
said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled *thy* heart, to lie
to the Holy Ghost? And to keep back part of the price
4 of the land? *While* it remained, *did* it not *remain thine?*
And *when* it was sold was it not in *thy* power? Why hast
thou conceived this thing in *thy* heart? Thou hast not
5 lied *to* men but *to* God. And Ananias hearing these
words, fell down and *expired;* and great fear came on
6 all that heard these things. And the young men *rising
up*, wound him up, and *carrying* him out, buried him.
7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when
8 his wife, not knowing what was done, came in. And
Peter *said to* her, Tell me, *if* ye sold the land for so much?

9 And she said, Yea, for so much. *And* Peter said *to* her, *Why have* ye agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? Behold, the feet of them that have buried thy
10 husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out. *And immediately she fell* . . at his feet and *expired;* and the young men *coming* in, found her dead, and carrying her
11 *out,* buried her by her husband. And great fear came upon all the Church, and upon *all that* heard these things.
12 And *many signs and wonders were wrought among the people by the hands of the apostles:* (and they were all
13 with one accord in Solomon's *portico:* And *none* of the rest durst join *themselves* to them; but the people magni-
14 fied them, And *the more were multitudes, both of men and*
15 *women believing, added to the Lord;*) *So* that they brought *out* the sick *along* the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that *even* the shadow of Peter *coming* by, might
16 overshadow some of them. And *multitudes* also of the cities round about came *together to* Jerusalem, bringing *persons* sick and *troubled by* unclean spirits, and they were *all* healed.
17 *But* the high priest *arising,* and all *that* were with him, which *was* the sect of the Sadducees, were filled with
18 *zeal,* And laid their hands on the apostles, and put them
19 *into* the common prison. But *an* angel of the Lord *opened the prison doors by night,* and *leading* them *out,*
20 said, Go, stand and speak in the temple . . the words
21 of this life. And *hearing this,* they *went* into the temple early in the morning and taught. But the high priest *being come* and they that were with him, called *together the council, even* the *whole* senate of the children of Israel,
22 and sent to the prison to have them brought. But when the officers came, they found them not in the
23 prison; and *returning* they *said, Truly we found the prison* shut with all safety, and the keepers standing . . before the doors; but *having* opened *them,* we found no
24 man within. When the captain of the temple and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them,
25 *what* this *should be.* Then came one and told them, . . Behold, the men whom ye put in prison are standing
26 in the temple, and teaching the people. Then the captain *going* with the officers brought them, *not with* violence, for they feared the people lest they should *be*
27 stoned. And *having* brought them, they set them before
28 the council. And the high priest asked them, . . Did not we *strictly* command you, not *to teach* in this name? And *lo,* ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and
29 *would* bring *the blood of this man upon us.* Then Peter and the other apostles *answering* said, We ought to
30 obey God rather than men. The God of our fathers

hath raised up Jesus, whom ye slew, *hanging him* on
31 a tree. Him hath God exalted, . . *a Prince and a*
Saviour, with his right hand, . . to give repentance to
32 Israel, and forgiveness of sins. And we are . . witnesses
of these things, and . . also the Holy Ghost, whom God
33 hath given to them that obey him. When they heard
this, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to
34 slay them. *But* a *certain* Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a
doctor of the law, had in *honour by* all the people, *rising*
up in the council, *ordered* to put the *men out* a little
35 space: And said *to* them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to
yourselves, what ye *are about* to do, . . touching these
36 men. For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting
himself to be somebody, to whom *was joined a number*
of men, about four hundred, who was slain, and all who
hearkened to him were scattered and *came* to *nothing.*
37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the days of
the *enrolment,* and drew away much people after him;
he also perished, and all *who had hearkened unto* him were
38 dispersed. And now I say *to* you, Refrain from these
men, and let them alone; for if this counsel or this work
39 be of men, it will come to nought, But if it be of God, ye
cannot overthrow it, *and take heed* lest . . ye be found
40 even *fighting* against God. And to him they agreed.
And *having* called the apostles, and *scourged* them, they
charged them not *to speak* in the name of Jesus, and
41 *dismissed* them. And they departed from the presence
of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy
42 to suffer shame for his name. And *they ceased not to*
teach and preach Jesus Christ daily, in the temple, and
from house to house.

6 *Now* in *these* days, the . . disciples *multiplying,* there
arose a murmuring of the *Hellenists* against the Hebrews,
because their widows were neglected in the daily minis-
2 tration. Then the twelve *calling* the multitude of the
disciples *together,* said, It is not *right* that we should
3 leave the word of God, and serve tables. *Therefore,*
brethren, look . . out *from* among you seven men of
good report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom
4 we *will set* over this business. But we will *constantly*
5 *attend* to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And
the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose
Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and
Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and
6 Parmenas, and Nicholas, a proselyte of Antioch; Whom
they set before the apostles, and *having* prayed, they
7 laid their hands *upon* them. And the word of God
grew, and the number of . . disciples *was* multiplied in

Jerusalem greatly: and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

8 And Stephen, full of *grace* and power, did great
9 wonders and miracles among the people. *But* there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called *that* of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia and . . Asia, disputing with Stephen.
10 And they were not able to *withstand* the wisdom and
11 the spirit by which he spake. Then they suborned men *who* said, We have heard him *speaking* blasphemous
12 words against Moses and against God. And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and *coming* upon him, *dragged* him *away*, and brought
13 him to the council, And set up false witnesses, *who* said, This man ceaseth not to speak . . words against this
14 holy place and the law. For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth *will* destroy this place, and
15 . . change the *rites* which Moses delivered us. And all that *were sitting* in the council, looking steadfastly on him, saw his face as . . the face of an angel.

7 Then said the high priest, Are these things so? And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken. The
2 God of glory appeared *to* our father Abraham, *being* in
3 Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Haran, And said *to* him, *Come* out of thy country, and from thy kindred,
4 and come into *a* land which I *will* show thee. *And coming* out of the land of the Chaldeans, he dwelt in *Haran*. And from thence, *after* his father was dead, he
5 removed him into this land, wherein ye now dwell. And he gave him *no* inheritance in it, no not . . to set his foot on; yet he promised *to* give it *him* for a possession, *even* to his seed after him, when . . he had no child.
6 And God spake *thus:* That his seed should sojourn in a strange land (and they *will enslave* them and *treat* them
7 evil) four hundred years. And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God. And after that, they shall come forth, and serve me in this
8 place. And he gave him the covenant of circumcision, and so *he* begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day, and Isaac . . Jacob, and Jacob . . the twelve
9 patriarchs. And the patriarchs moved with envy, sold
10 Joseph into Egypt; but God was with him, And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and he *appointed* him governor over Egypt and all his house.
11 Now there came a *famine* over *all* the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no
12 sustenance. But Jacob *hearing* there was corn in Egypt,

13 *sent* our fathers first. And . . the second time, Joseph
was made known to his brethren, and Joseph's kindred
14 was made known *to* Pharaoh. Then Joseph *sending*,
called *thither* his father Jacob and all his kindred, *seventy-*
15 *five* souls. So Jacob went down into Egypt, and died,
16 he and our fathers, And *were* carried over *to Shechem*,
and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a
sum of money, of the sons of *Hamor*, the father of
17 *Shechem*. *And* when the time of the promise *which God*
had sworn to Abraham drew near, the people *increased*
18 and multiplied in Egypt. Till another king arose, *who*
19 *had* not *known* Joseph. *He dealing* subtilly with our
kindred, evil entreated our fathers, *by causing* their
20 *male infants to be exposed, that* they might not live. In
which time Moses was born, and was exceeding *beautiful*,
21 *who was nursed* three months in his father's house. And
when he was *exposed*, Pharaoh's daughter took him up,
22 and *brought* him *up* for her own son. And Moses was
educated in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was
23 mighty in words and in deeds. *But* when he was full
forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren
24 the children of Israel. And seeing one . . *wronged*, he
defended . . and avenged him that was oppressed, . .
25 *smiting* the Egyptian. *For* he supposed his brethren
would have understood, . . that God *would deliver them*
26 *by his hand;* but they understood *it* not. And the next
day he showed himself to them as they *were quarrelling*,
and would have *persuaded* them *to peace*, saying, *Men*,
ye are brethren: why do ye wrong one . . another?
27 But he that *wronged* his neighbour thrust him away,
saying, Who *appointed* thee a *prince* and a judge over us?
28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?
29 *And Moses fled* at *that* saying, and was a *sojourner* in
30 the land of *Midian*, where he begat two sons. And
forty years *being* expired, *the angel of the Lord appeared*
to him in the wilderness, . . in a flame of fire in a bush.
31 *And* Moses *seeing* it, wondered at the sight. *But* as
he drew near to behold it, the voice of the Lord came *to*
32 him, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham,
and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. *And*
33 Moses trembled, and durst not behold. Then said the
Lord to him, *Loose* thy shoes from thy feet: for the place
34 where thou standest is holy ground. I have *surely* seen
the *evil treatment* of my people which is in Egypt, and . .
have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver
them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.
35 This Moses, whom they refused, saying, Who *appointed*
thee a *prince* and a judge, the same did God send to be
a ruler and a deliverer, by the hand of the angel, *who*

36 appeared to him in the bush. He brought them out,
doing wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in
the Red Sea, and in the wilderness forty years.
37 This is that Moses *who* said *to* the children of Israel,
The Lord your God will raise . . you up out of your
38 *brethren, a prophet* like . . me: him shall ye hear. This
is he that was in the Church in the wilderness, with the
angel *who spoke* to him in . . Mount *Sinai* and with
our fathers; who received the *living* oracles to give *to* us:
39 . . Whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him
from them, and in their hearts turned back . . into
40 Egypt, Saying *to* Aaron, Make us gods to go before us;
for . . this Moses, *who* brought us out of the land of
41 Egypt, we *know* not what is become of him. And
they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice
to the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their . .
hands.
42 *And* God turned and gave them up, to worship the
host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the
prophets, *Have ye offered victims and sacrifices to me for*
43 *forty years in the wilderness, O . . house of Israel?* Yea,
ye took up the *shrine* of Moloch, and the star of your god
Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and
44 I will carry you away beyond Babylon. Our fathers
had the tabernacle of the *testimony* in the wilderness, as
he had appointed *who spake* to Moses, *to* make it accord-
45 ing to the *model* which he had seen: Which also our
fathers *having received*, brought in with *Joshua* into the
possession of the Gentiles, whom God *drove* out *from* the
46 face of our fathers, *till* the days of David: Who found
favour *in the sight of* God, and *petitioned* to find a
47 *habitation* for the God of Jacob. But Solomon built
48 him *a* house. *Yet* the Most High dwelleth not in temples
49 made with hands, as saith the prophet, Heaven is my
throne, and earth . . my footstool. What house will
ye build me, saith the Lord; or what is the place of my
50 rest? Hath not my hand made all these things?
51 Ye stiff necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears,
ye . . always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers, . .
52 so do ye. Which of the prophets have not your fathers
persecuted? And they have slain them *that foretold* the
coming of the Just One, of whom ye have now been
53 the betrayers and murderers: Who have received the
law by the *administration* of angels, and have not kept it.
54 *And hearing* these things, they were cut to the heart,
55 and . . gnashed their *teeth upon him.* But he being
full of the Holy Ghost, *looking* steadfastly up *to* heaven,
saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right
56 hand of God: And said, Behold, I see the heavens

opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand
57 of God. Then they cried with a loud voice, and stopped
58 their ears, and *rushed* upon him with one accord; And
casting him out of the city, stoned him: and the witnesses
laid down their clothes at *the feet of a young man*, whose
59 name was Saul. And they stoned Stephen, *invoking* . .
60 and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. And *kneeling*
down he cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin
to their charge. And *having* said this, he fell asleep;
and Saul was consenting to his death.

8 And at that time there *arose* a great persecution
against the Church which was *in* Jerusalem. And they
were all *dispersed through* the *countries* of Judea and
2 Samaria, except the apostles. And devout men *buried*
3 Stephen, and made lamentation over him. *But* Saul . .
made havoc of the Church, entering into every house,
and *hauling* men and women, committed them to prison.
4 Therefore they that were *dispersed* went every where,
preaching the word.
5 *And* Philip *coming* down to *a* city of Samaria, preached
6 Christ *to* them. And the people with one accord gave
heed *to the* things which Philip *spoke*, hearing and seeing
7 the miracles which he did. For unclean spirits, crying
with *a* loud voice, came out of many that *had* them,
and many *sick of the palsy* and . . lame were healed.
8 And there was great joy in that city. But . . a certain
man, *named* Simon, had been *before* in the city, *using*
magic, and *astonishing* the *Samaritans*, *saying* that *he*
10 was some great one. To whom they all gave heed, from
the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great
11 power of God. *They gave heed* to him, because he had . .
12 a long time *astonished* them with *witchcraft*. But when
they believed Philip, preaching the things *of* the kingdom
of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were bap-
13 tized, both men and women. *And* Simon himself
believed also: and *being* baptized, he continued with
Philip, and *was astonished*, beholding the *signs* and
14 *mighty miracles* which were done. *And* the apostles
who were at Jerusalem, *hearing* that Samaria had received
15 the word of God, sent to them Peter and John: Who
being come down, prayed for them, that they might
16 receive the Holy Ghost. . . For as yet he was fallen
upon none of them: only they *had been* baptized in the
17 name of the Lord Jesus. . . Then *they laid* . . hands
18 on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. And
Simon *seeing* that through laying on of the *hands of the*
apostles the Holy Ghost was given, offered them money,
19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I

20 lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter
said *to* him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou
hast thought *to purchase* the gift of God with money.
21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy
22 heart is not right in the sight of God. Repent therefore
of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the
23 thought of *thy* heart may be forgiven thee. For I *see*
thou art in the gall of bitterness, and . . the bond of
24 iniquity. *And* Simon *answering* said, Pray ye to the
Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have
25 spoken *may* come upon me. . . They *then having* testified
and *spoken* the word of the Lord, returned *toward*
Jerusalem, and preached the Gospel in many villages of
the Samaritans.
26 And *an* angel of the Lord spake *to* Philip, saying, Arise,
and go toward the south *by* the way *leading* down from
27 Jerusalem to Gaza, which is desert. And he arose and
went. And *lo!* an *Ethiopian*, an eunuch of great authority
under Candace, queen of the Ethiopians, who *was over*
all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem . . to
28 worship, Was returning, and sitting in his chariot, read
29 the Prophet *Isaiah*. Then the Spirit said *to* Philip, Go
30 near and join thyself to this chariot. And Philip *running*
to him, . . heard him read the Prophet *Isaiah*, and said,
31 Understandest thou what thou readest? And he said,
How can I, *unless* some *one* . . guide me? And he
32 desired Philip *to* come up, and sit with him. The
portion of . . Scripture which he *was reading* was this,
He was led as a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lamb
dumb before his shearer, so *he opened* not his mouth.
33 In his humiliation his judgment was taken away; and
who shall declare his generation? For his life is taken
34 from the earth. And the eunuch *answering* Philip, said,
I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? Of
35 himself, or of some other man? Then Philip *opening*
his mouth, and *beginning* from this scripture, preached
36 Jesus *to* him. And as they went on *the* way, they came
to a certain water. And the eunuch said, *Behold* water:
37 what *hindereth* me to be baptized? And Philip said, If
thou believest with all *thy* heart thou mayest. And he
answered and said, I believe that Jesus . . is the Son of
38 God. And he commanded the chariot to *stop*, and they
both went down into the water, both Philip and the
39 eunuch; and he baptized him. And when they were
come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught
away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more; and he
40 went on his way rejoicing. But Philip was found at
Azotus; and passing through, he preached in all the
cities till he came to Caesarea.

9 *But* Saul, *still* breathing threatening and slaughter
against the disciples of the Lord, *going* to the high priest,
2 desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues,
that if he found any of this way, *he might bring both men*
3 *and women* bound *to* Jerusalem. And as he journeyed,
he *drew* near Damascus; and suddenly there *shone* about
4 him a light from heaven. And *falling* to the earth he
heard a voice saying *to* him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest
5 thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the
Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. It is
6 hard for thee to kick against the *goads*. And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have
me to do? And the Lord said to him, Arise, and go
into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must
7 do. And the men *that* journeyed with him stood *aston-*
8 *ished*, hearing the *noise*, but seeing no man. And Saul
arose from the earth; and his eyes *being* opened, he saw
no man; but they led him by the hand, and brought him
9 into Damascus. And he was three days without sight,
10 and neither *ate* nor *drank*. And there was a certain
disciple at Damascus, named Ananias. And *the Lord*
said to him in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold,
11 I am here, Lord. And the Lord said *to* him, Arise, . .
go into the street called Straight, and inquire in the
house of Judas for one named Saul of Tarsus; for behold,
12 he *is praying*. And he hath seen in a vision a man
named Ananias, coming in, and putting his hand on him,
13 that he *may recover* his sight. *But* Ananias answered,
Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much
14 evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem. And here
also he hath authority *from* the chief priests to bind all
15 that call on thy name. But the Lord said unto him,
Go . . : for he is a chosen vessel *to* me, to bear my
name before *nations* and kings, and the children of Israel.
16 For I will show him how great things he must suffer for
17 my name's sake. And Ananias went . . and entered
into the house, and putting his hands on him, said,
Brother Saul, the Lord *hath sent me*, . . *Jesus who*
appeared to thee in the way . . *thou camest*, that thou
mayest recover thy sight, and be filled with the Holy
18 Ghost. And immediately *as it were scales fell from his*
eyes, and he *recovered his* sight, . . and arose and was
19 baptized. And *having received food* he was strengthened.
20 *And he* was certain days with the disciples . . *in*
Damascus: And straightway he preached *Jesus* in the
21 synagogues, that he is the Son of God. But all that
heard . . were amazed, and said, Is not this he *who*
destroyed *those that call* on this name in Jerusalem? And
came hither for *this* intent, that he might bring them

22 bound *to* the chief priests? But Saul increased the more
in strength, and confounded the Jews *who* dwelt at
23 Damascus, proving that this is *the* . . Christ. And
when many days were fulfilled, the Jews *consulted*
24 *together* to kill him. But their *lying* in wait was known
by Saul: and they *guarded* the gates day and night to
25 kill him. Then the disciples *taking* him by night, let
26 him down . . the wall in a basket. And . . *coming*
to Jerusalem, he *endeavoured* to join himself to the disciples; but they were all afraid of him, not *believing*
27 that he was a disciple. But Barnabas *taking* him,
brought him to the apostles, and declared *to* them, how
he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken
to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus
28 in the name of Jesus: And he was with them, coming
29 in and going out at Jerusalem. And *preaching boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, he spake* and disputed
30 *with* the *Hellenists;* but they *attempted* to *kill* him:
Which the brethren *knowing,* brought him down
31 to Caesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus. Then
the Church through all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria had peace: and *being built up,* and walking in the
fear of *God,* and the comfort of the Holy Ghost, *was multiplied.*
32 And . . as Peter passed *through* all parts, he came
33 down also to the saints *that* dwelt at Lydda. And *he found there* a certain man named Eneas, *who* had kept
34 his bed eight years, *being ill* of *a* palsy. And Peter said
to him, Eneas, Jesus Christ *healeth* thee. Arise and make
35 thy bed. And he arose immediately: And all that
dwelt *in* Lydda and Sharon saw him, and turned to the
Lord.
36 Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named
Tabitha, which *is by interpretation* . . Dorcas; this
woman was full of good works and alms deeds which
37 she did. And . . in those days she was sick and died;
whom *having* washed, they laid in an upper chamber.
38 And Lydda *being* near Joppa, the disciples *hearing* . .
Peter was there, sent *to* him two men, desiring . . that
39 he would not delay to come to them. Then Peter arose
and went with them; whom *being* come, they brought
into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by
him weeping, and showing the coats and garments which
40 Dorcas *had* made, while she was with them. But Peter
having put them all *out,* . . kneeled down and prayed;
and turning . . to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And
41 she opened her eyes, and *seeing* Peter, . . sat up. And
giving her his hand, he lifted her up, and *having* called
42 the saints and widows, he presented her alive. And it

was known *through* all Joppa, and many believed *on* the
43 Lord. And . . he tarried many days in Joppa, with
one Simon, a tanner.

10 And there was a certain man in Caesarea, named
Cornelius, a centurion of *that* called the Italian band,
2 A devout man, and *fearing* God with all his house, *who*
gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God
3 *always*. He saw *plainly* in a vision, about the ninth
hour of the day, an angel of *God* coming in to him, and
4 saying *to* him, Cornelius. And *looking steadfastly* on
him, and *being affrighted*, he said, What is it, *sir?* And
he said *to* him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up
5 for a memorial before God. And now send men to
Joppa, and *call hither* Simon, who *is surnamed* Peter.
6 He lodgeth with one Simon, a tanner, whose house is
7 by the sea . . . And when the angel *who* spake to
him was departed, he called two of his household serv-
ants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him
8 continually: And *having* declared all things *to* them, he
9 sent them to Joppa. On the morrow, as they *journeyed*
and drew nigh *to* the city, Peter went up *on* the housetop
10 to pray, about the sixth hour. And he became very
hungry, and would have eaten; but while they made
11 ready, he fell into a trance, And saw heaven opened,
and a certain vessel *like a great sheet, tied at the four*
corners, descending . . and let down *on* the earth:
12 Wherein were all . . four-footed *creatures*, . . and creep-
13 ing things *of the earth*, and fowls of the air. And *a voice*
14 *came* to him, Rise Peter, kill and eat. But Peter said,
In nowise, Lord: for I have never eaten any thing . . com-
15 mon or unclean. And the voice came *to* him again, the
second time, What God hath *purified*, . . call not thou
16 common. This was done thrice, and the vessel was
17 *taken* up again to heaven. Now while Peter doubted
in himself what *the* vision . . he had seen should mean,
behold the men . . sent *by* Cornelius, *having inquired*
18 *out* Simon's house, stood at the gate, And *calling* asked,
whether Simon, . . surnamed Peter, . . lodged there?
19 While Peter *was musing* on the vision, the Spirit said *to*
20 him, Behold, three men seek thee. Arise therefore and
go down, and go with them, doubting nothing; for I
21 have sent them. Then Peter *going* down to the men,
. . said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: *for what cause*
22 are *ye* come? And they said, Cornelius, *a* centurion,
a just man, and . . *fearing* God, and of good report
among all the nation of the Jews, was warned *of* God
by *a* holy angel, to send for thee *to* his house, and to
23 hear words *from* thee. *And* he *invited* them in and

lodged them. And *the next day, rising up, he* went
away with them; and certain brethren from Joppa *went*
24 *with* him. And the *day following* they entered into
Caesarea: and Cornelius *was waiting* for them, *having*
25 called together his kinsmen and near friends: And as
Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and *falling*
26 down at his feet, worshipped him: But Peter *raised*
27 him up, saying, *Arise:* I myself also am a man: And as
he talked with him, he went in and found many . .
28 come together: And he said *to* them, Ye know . . it is
. . unlawful . . for . . a Jew to *join with* or come *to*
one of another nation; but God hath *showed* me *to call*
29 *no* man common or unclean: Therefore *being* sent for,
I *came* . . without gainsaying: I ask, therefore, for
30 what intent ye have sent for me? And Cornelius said,
Four days ago I was fasting *till* this hour, and at the
ninth hour I *was praying* in my house, and behold a
31 man stood before me in bright clothing, And said,
Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are
32 *remembered before* God. Send therefore to Joppa, and
call hither Simon, who *is surnamed* Peter; he *lodgeth* in
the house of . . Simon a tanner by the sea . . , who
33 *being come* shall speak *to* thee. Immediately therefore
I sent to thee, and thou hast *done well in coming:* now
therefore *we are* all . . present before God, to hear all
things that are commanded thee *by* God.
34 Then Peter *opening* his mouth, said, I perceive of a
35 truth that God is *not a* respecter of persons: But in
every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh right-
36 eousness, is accepted *by* him. *This is* the word which
he sent *to* the children of Israel, preaching *the glad tidings*
of peace through Jesus Christ: . . he is Lord of all . . .
37 *Ye know the word* . . which was published *through* all
Judea, *beginning* from Galilee, after the baptism which
38 John preached: How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth
with the Holy Ghost and with power, who went about
doing good, and healing all that were oppressed *by* the
39 devil; for God was with him. And we *are* witnesses of
all things which he did, both in the land of the Jews and
in Jerusalem: whom *yet* they slew, *having hanged him*
40 on a tree: Him God raised up the third day, and showed
41 him openly; (Not to all the people, but *to* witnesses,
chosen before of God, even to us, who did eat and drink
42 with him) after he rose from the dead. And he com-
manded us to *proclaim to* the people, and to testify, that
it is he *who is* ordained *by* God . . the Judge of *the*
43 *living*, and *the* dead. To him give all the prophets
witness, that *every one who* believeth in him, *receiveth*
forgiveness of sins *through his name.*

44 While Peter *was* yet *speaking* these words, the Holy
45 Ghost fell on all . . *that were hearing* the word. And
the believers of the circumcision, as many as came with
Peter, *were amazed*, . . that the gift of the Holy Ghost
46 *was poured out on the Gentiles also.* For they heard
them *speaking* with tongues and *magnifying* God. Then
47 Peter *answered*, Can any man forbid water, that these
should not be baptized, *who* have received the Holy
48 Ghost, *even* as we? And he commanded them to be
baptized in the name of the Lord. Then *they* prayed
him to tarry certain days.

11 *Now* the apostles and brethren *who* were in Judea
heard that the Gentiles also *had* received the word of
2 God. And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they
3 . . of the circumcision *debated* with him, saying, Thou
wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with
4 them. *Then* Peter . . *beginning, laid all things before*
5 *them in* order, saying, I was *praying* in the city of Joppa,
and *being* in a trance, I saw a vision, a certain vessel
descending, as it *were* a great sheet, let down from heaven
6 by the four corners, and it came even to me: *On* . .
which *looking steadfastly*, I *observed* and saw four-footed
creatures of the earth, . . and creeping things, and
7 fowls of the air. And I heard a voice saying *to* me,
8 *Rise*, Peter, *kill* and eat. But I said, *In nowise* Lord;
for nothing common or unclean hath *ever* entered into
9 my mouth. *And* the voice *from heaven* answered me
again, What God hath *purified*, . . call not thou
10 common. This was done *thrice*, and all were drawn up
11 again into heaven. And behold immediately . . three
men *stood at* the house where I was, sent from Caesarea
12 *to* me. And the Spirit bade me go with them, *doubting*
nothing: . . these six brethren *also went with* me, and
13 we entered into the man's house. And he *told* us how
he had seen an angel *standing* in his house, and *saying*
to him, Send men to Joppa, and call *hither* Simon, *sur-*
14 *named* Peter, Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou
15 and all thy *family may* be saved. And as I began
to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, *even* as on us
16 at the beginning. Then *I remembered* the word of
the Lord, how . . he said, John indeed baptized with
water, but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.
17 *If* then God gave *to* them the *same* gift as *even* to
us, *when* we believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, *who* was
18 I that could withstand God? When they heard these
things, they *were quiet*, and glorified God, saying,
Then God hath *given* to the Gentiles *also* repentance
unto life.

19 Now they *who had been dispersed* by the *distress* which
arose about Stephen, travelled as far as *Phenicia*, and
Cyprus, and Antioch, *speaking* the word to none but
20 . . Jews only. And some of them were men of Cyprus
and Cyrene, *who coming into* Antioch, spake *to* the *Greeks*,
21 preaching the Lord Jesus. And the hand of the Lord
was with them; and a great number believed and turned
22 *to* the Lord. *And* tidings of these things came *to* the
ears of the Church *that* was in Jerusalem, and they sent
23 forth Barnabas *to* go as far as Antioch: Who *coming* and
seeing the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all
24 *to cleave unto the Lord with full purpose of heart.* For he
was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and . .
faith. And *a considerable multitude* was added *to* the
25 Lord. Then *went he* to Tarsus . . to seek Saul, and
having found him, he brought him *to* Antioch. And a
whole year they assembled themselves with the Church,
and taught *a considerable multitude:* and the disciples
were *first called Christians* at Antioch.
27 In *those* days *prophets came* from Jerusalem *to* Antioch.
28 And one of them, named Agabus, *rising up*, signified
by the Spirit that there *would* be *a* great *famine through*
all the world; which *also* came to pass *under* Claudius
29 Caesar. Then the disciples determined to send relief,
every one according to his ability, to the brethren *who*
30 dwelt in Judea: Which also they did, *sending it* to the
elders by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

12 . . About that time Herod the king stretched forth
his hands to *afflict* certain of the Church. And he
3 *slew* James the brother of John with the sword. And
perceiving it pleased the Jews, he proceeded . . to take
Peter also: (Then were the days of unleavened bread.)
4 *Whom having* apprehended, he put him in prison, . .
delivering him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep
him, intending to bring him forth to the people *after*
5 *the passover. So* Peter was kept in *the* prison; but *con-
tinual* prayer was made *to* God *by the Church* for him.
6 And when Herod *was about to bring* him forth, the
same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers,
bound with two chains and the *guards* before the door
7 *were keeping* the prison. And behold, *an* angel of the
Lord *stood over* him, and . . light shined in the *house:*
and *smiting* Peter on the side he *waked* him, saying,
Rise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.
8 And the angel said *to* him, Gird thyself, and bind on
thy sandals; and *he did so.* And he *said* to him, *Throw*
9 thy garment about thee, and follow me. And *going*
out, he followed him. And *he knew* not that it was *real*

which was done by the angel, but thought he saw a
10 vision. When they *had* passed *through* the first and *the* second ward, they came *to* the iron gate that leadeth *to* the city, which opened to them of *its* own accord: and *going* out, *they went* on through one street; and *immedi-*
11 *ately* the angel departed from him. And . . Peter *coming* to himself, said, Now I know of a *truth*, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and . . delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the
12 people of the Jews. And *having considered*, . . he *went* to the house of Mary, the mother of John, *surnamed* Mark, where many were gathered together praying.
13 And as *he* knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel
14 came to hearken, named Rhoda. And *knowing* Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for *joy*, but *running* in,
15 told *them that* Peter stood before the gate. And they said *to* her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed
16 . . it was . . so. Then they said, It is his angel. But Peter continued knocking. And *opening* the door they
17 saw him, and were astonished. But he beckoning *to* them with *his* hand to *be silent*, declared *to* them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, . . Show these things *to* James and to the brethren.
18 And *going out* he went to another place. Now when it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers,
19 what was become of Peter. And Herod *having sought* for him, and not found him, examined the keepers, and commanded *them to* be put to death. And *going* down
20 from Judea to Caesarea, he *abode there.* And *he* was highly *incensed against* them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having *gained* Blastus, the king's chamberlain, *sued for* peace; because their country was nourished by the king's country.
21 And *on* a set day, Herod, arrayed in royal apparel,
22 *and sitting* on his throne, made an oration to them. And the people *shouted*, It is the voice of a god, and not of
23 a man. And immediately *an* angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not *glory to God;* and *being* eaten
24 *by* worms, he *expired.* But the word of God grew and multiplied.
25 And Barnabas and Saul, *having fulfilled their service*, returned from Jerusalem, *taking* with them John, *surnamed* Mark.

13 Now there were in the Church that was at Antioch, . . prophets and teachers, . . Barnabas, and Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, *who* had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

2 *And* as they *were ministering* to the Lord and *fasting,*
the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul
3 for the work *to which* I have called them. Then *having*
fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they
4 sent them away. So being sent forth by the Holy
Ghost, *they went down to* Seleucia, and from thence . .
5 sailed to Cyprus. And *being* at Salamis, they preached
the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews; and
6 they had also John *for* their *attendant.* And *having* gone
through the *whole* isle *as far as* Paphos, they found a
certain *magician,* a false prophet, a Jew, whose name
7 was Bar-jesus, *Who* was with the *proconsul* . . , Sergius
Paulus, a prudent man. *He calling to him* Barnabas
8 and Saul, desired to hear the word of God. But Elymas
the *magician* (. . so is his name by interpretation) with-
stood them, seeking to turn away the *proconsul* from the
9 faith. Then Saul, (who *is* also *called* Paul,) filled with
10 the Holy Ghost, *fixing* his eyes upon him, said, O full
of all *guile* and *of* all mischief, thou *son* of the devil,
thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to
11 pervert the right ways of the Lord? And now behold
the hand of the Lord is upon thee; and thou shalt be
blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately
a mist and darkness fell upon him, and *going* about, *he*
12 *sought* some to lead him. . . Then the *proconsul, seeing*
what was done, believed, being astonished at the doc-
trine of the Lord.
13 *And* Paul and those *with him loosing* from Paphos,
came to Perga in Pamphylia; *but* John *withdrawing*
14 from them, returned to Jerusalem. *And departing* from
Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia; and *going* into
15 the synagogue on the Sabbath day, *they* sat down. And
after the reading of the law and the prophets, the *chief*
of the synagogue sent *to* them, saying, . . *Brethren, if ye*
16 have any word of exhortation to the people, *speak.* Then
Paul *standing,* and *waving* . . his hand, said, *Ye* men
17 of Israel, and ye that fear God, *hearken.* The God of
this people . . chose our fathers, and *raised* the people,
while sojourning in the land of Egypt, and *brought them*
18 *out of it with an uplifted arm.* And *he suffered their*
manners in the wilderness about the space of forty years.
19 And *having* destroyed seven nations in the land of
Canaan, he divided their land to them by lot, *about* . .
20 *four hundred and fifty years.* And after that, he gave
21 *them* judges; until Samuel the prophet. And afterward
they desired a king: and God gave . . them Saul the
son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, . . forty
22 years. And *having* removed him, he raised up *to* them
David *for* their king, to whom also *bearing witness he*

said, I have found David, the son of Jesse, a man after *my* own heart, *who will do* all my will.
23 Of this man's seed hath God, according to his promise,
24 raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus; John *having* first preached before his coming, the baptism of repentance
25 to all the people of Israel. And as John *was fulfilling* his course, he said, Whom think ye that I am? I am not he. But behold *one cometh* after me, *the shoes of whose feet* I am not worthy to loose.
26 Men, . . brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and *those* among you *who fear* God, to you is the word
27 of this salvation sent. *For* they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, *neither knowing* him, nor . . the *sayings* of the prophets, which are read every Sabbath day, . .
28 have fulfilled them, in condemning him. And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they
29 Pilate, that he *might* be *put to death.* And when they had fulfilled all *things* that *were* written of him, *taking*
30 him down from the tree *they* laid him in a sepulchre. But
31 God raised him from the dead. And he was seen many days *by* them *who* came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses *to* the people.
32 And we declare *to* you glad tidings, . . that the
33 promise which was made *to* the fathers, God hath fulfilled *this to* us their children, in *raising* up Jesus . . : as it *was written also* in the second Psalm, Thou art my Son,
34 this day have I begotten thee. And *because* he raised him up from the dead, . . no more to return to corruption, he *spake thus,* I will give you the sure mercies
35 of David. Wherefore he saith also in another Psalm, Thou *wilt* not suffer *thy* Holy One to see corruption.
36 *Now* David *having* served *the will of God in his .. generation,* fell *asleep,* and was *added to* his fathers, and saw corrup-
37 tion. But he whom God raised . . *did not see* corruption.
38 Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached *to* you the forgiveness of
39 sins. And by him *every one that believeth is* justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by
40 the law of Moses. Beware therefore, lest that come
41 upon you, which is spoken . . in the prophets, Behold, ye despisers, and wonder and perish, for I work a work in your days, a work which ye *will* in nowise believe, though a man declare it unto you.
42 And when the Jews were *going* out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought *them,* that these words might be
43 *spoken on* the Sabbath *between. And* when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 And the next Sabbath almost *the whole city was*
45 *gathered together* to hear the word of God. But the Jews
seeing the multitudes, were filled with *zeal*, and spake
against *the* things . . spoken by Paul, contradicting and
46 blaspheming. Then Paul and Barnabas *speaking boldly*,
said, It was necessary that the word of God *should be*
spoken to you *first;* but seeing ye *thrust* it from you,
and judge yourselves unworthy of *eternal* life, *behold!*
47 we turn to the Gentiles. For so hath the Lord com-
manded us, saying, I have set thee *for* a light of the
Gentiles, *so* that thou *mightest* be for salvation *to* the
48 ends of the earth. And the Gentiles *hearing it* were
glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many
49 as were ordained to eternal life believed. And the word
of the Lord was published through all *that country.*
50 But the Jews stirred up the devout . . honourable
women, and the chief men of the city, and raised *a*
persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and *cast* them
51 out of their coasts. *And* they shook off the dust of
52 their feet against them, and *went to* Iconium. And the
disciples were filled with joy and with the Holy Ghost.

14 And . . in Iconium they went . . together into
the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake that a great
2 multitude both of the Jews and Greeks believed. But
the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made
3 their minds evil affected against the brethren. *Yet they*
abode a long time speaking boldly in the Lord, *who bare*
witness to the word of his grace, and granted signs and
4 wonders to be done by their hands. But the multitude
of the city was divided: and part held with the Jews,
5 and part with the apostles. And when there was an
assault . . both of the Gentiles and . . Jews with their
6 rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them, *Being*
aware of it, *they* fled *to* Lystra and Derbe, cities of
7 Lycaonia, and . . the *country* round about, And *preached*
the Gospel there.
8 And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in
his feet, *having been* a cripple from his mother's womb,
9 who *had never* walked. *This man* heard Paul *speaking;*
who *fixing his eyes upon* him, and perceiving that he
10 had faith to be healed, Said with a loud voice, Stand
11 upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked. *But*
the multitude, seeing what Paul had done, . . lifted up
their voices, saying, in the *Lycaonian language*, The gods
12 are come down to us in the likeness of men. And they
called Barnabas Jupiter, and Paul Mercurius, because he
13 was the chief speaker. Then the priest of Jupiter, which
was before their city, brought *bulls* and garlands *to* the

14 gates, and *with the multitude would have sacrificed. But*
when the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent
their clothes, and *sprang* in among the people, crying
15 out, and saying, *Men,* why do ye these things? We
also are men of like passions with you, and preach *to*
you, *to* turn from these vanities unto the living God,
who made *the* heaven and *the* earth, the sea, and all
16 things that are therein: Who in times past suffered all
17 nations to walk in their own ways: *Yet* he left not
himself without witness, in that he did good, *giving* rain
from heaven and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with
18 food and gladness. And with these sayings scarce
restrained they the *multitude from sacrificing to* them.
19 *But* there came thither Jews from Antioch and Ico-
nium, who persuaded the *multitude,* and having stoned
Paul, *dragged* him out of the city, supposing he had been
20 dead. *But* as the disciples stood round about him, he
rose and *went* into the city; and the next day he departed
21 with Barnabas to Derbe. And *having* preached the
Gospel to that city, and *made many disciples,* they
returned to Lystra, and . . Iconium, and Antioch:
22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them
to continue in the faith; and that we must through
23 *many tribulations* enter into the kingdom of God. And
when they had ordained them *presbyters* in every Church,
and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to
24 the Lord, on whom they *had* believed. And *having*
25 passed *through* Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia, And
having spoken the word in Perga, they went down to
26 Attalia, And thence sailed *back* to Antioch, from whence
they had been recommended to the grace of God, for
27 the work which they *had* fulfilled. And *being* come,
and *having* gathered the Church together, they *related*
all that God had done with them and *that* he had opened
28 the door of faith *to* the Gentiles. And *they abode there a*
long time with the disciples.

15 *But* certain men *coming* down from Judea taught
the brethren, Except ye be circumcised after the
2 manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved. When therefore
Paul and Barnabas had had no small *contention* and
debate with them, they determined that Paul and
Barnabas, and certain *others* of them, should go up *to*
the apostles and elders at Jerusalem about this question.
3 And being brought on their way by the Church, they
passed through *Phenicia* and Samaria, declaring the
conversion of the Gentiles; and they caused great joy
4 *to all* the brethren. And *being* come to Jerusalem, they
were received *by* the Church, and . . the apostles and

elders; and they declared all things *which* God had done
5 with them. But there rose up, *said they,* certain of the
sect of the Pharisees, *who* believed, saying, That *we*
ought to circumcise them, and . . command them to
6 keep the law of Moses. And the apostles and elders
came together . . to consider of this matter.
7 And *after* much *debate,* Peter rose up and said *to* them,
. . Brethren, ye know *that God long ago* made choice
among us, that the Gentiles *should by my mouth hear*
8 the word of the Gospel and believe. And God *who*
knoweth the *heart* bare them witness, giving *the Holy*
9 *Ghost to them also,* even as . . *to* us; And put no dif-
ference between us and them, purifying their hearts by
10 faith. Now therefore why tempt ye God to put a yoke
on the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers
11 nor we were able to bear? But we believe, that through
the grace of the Lord Jesus . . , we shall be saved even
as they.
12 Then all the multitude kept silence, and *hearkened* to
Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders
13 God had wrought *by them among the Gentiles.* And *when*
they . . held their peace, James answered, saying, . .
14 Brethren, hearken *to* me. *Simon* hath declared, how
God at first *visited* the Gentiles, to take out of them a
15 people for his name. And to this agree the words of the
16 prophets, as it is written, After this I will return and . .
build again the *fallen tabernacle of David; . .* I will build
17 again the ruins thereof, and . . will set it up, That the
residue of men *may* seek . . the Lord, and all the
Gentiles *on* whom my name is called, saith the Lord, who
18 *doth* . . these things. Known unto God are all his
19 works from *eternity.* Wherefore *I judge,* that we trouble
20 not them *who* from among the Gentiles *turn* to God. But
that we write *to* them, *to* abstain from *things offered to*
idols, and . . fornication, and . . things strangled, and
21 . . blood. For Moses *hath of old time them that preach*
him in every city, being read in the synagogues every
Sabbath day.
22 Then *it seemed good to* the apostles and elders with
the whole Church, to send chosen men *from among them*
to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas, . . Judas, sur-
named Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the
23 brethren, *Writing thus by their hand:* The apostles, and
elders, and *the* brethren, *salute* the brethren *who* are of
24 the Gentiles, in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia. Foras-
much as we have heard that *some who came* from us
have troubled you with words, *unsettling* your *minds,*
saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law, . .
25 whom we *commanded not;* It seemed good to us, being

assembled with one accord, to send *to you chosen men,*
26 with our beloved Barnabas and Paul; Men that have
hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus
27 Christ. We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who
28 *will* also tell you the same things by mouth. For it
seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us, *that no farther*
burden be laid upon you than these necessary things,
29 *To* abstain from meats offered to idols, and . . blood,
and . . things strangled, and . . fornication; from which
keeping yourselves ye *will* do well. Fare ye well.
30 So *being* dismissed, they came to Antioch, and *having*
assembled the multitude . . , they delivered the epistle:
31 *Which having* read, they rejoiced for the consolation.
32 And Judas and Silas, being *themselves also prophets,*
exhorted *and confirmed the brethren with many words.*
33 And after they had tarried . . a space, they were *dis-*
34 *missed with* peace *by* the brethren *to* the apostles. *But*
35 it *seemed good to Silas to remain there.* Paul also and
Barnabas *abode* in Antioch, teaching and preaching *with*
many others also the word of the Lord.
36 And *after certain days* Paul said *to* Barnabas, Let us
go again and visit *the* brethren in every city where we
have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they
37 do. And Barnabas *counselled* to take with them John,
38 *surnamed* Mark. But Paul thought *it not right* to take
with them him who *had* departed from them from Pam-
39 phylia, and went not with them to the work. And *there*
was a sharp contention, so that they parted from each
other; and . . Barnabas *taking* Mark *with him, sailed*
40 *away to* Cyprus; *But* Paul *having chosen* Silas, . .
departed; being recommended by the brethren *to* the
41 grace of God. And he went through Syria and Cilicia
confirming the Churches.

16 *And he came down* to Derbe and Lystra. And
behold a certain disciple was there, named Timotheus,
the son of a certain *Jewess that* believed; but his father
2 was a Greek: *Who* was well reported of by the brethren
3 . . *in* Lystra and Iconium. Him Paul would have to
go forth with him; and *he* took and circumcised him,
because of the Jews *who* were in those *places;* for they
4 *all knew his father that he* was a Greek. And as they
went through the cities they *gave* them the decrees,
which were made by the apostles and elders that were at
5 *Jerusalem, to keep.* And . . *the Churches were* established
in the faith, and increased in number daily.
6 *And having* gone *through* Phrygia and the region of
Galatia, *being forbid by* the Holy Ghost to preach the
7 word in Asia, *Coming* to Mysia, they *attempted* to go to

8 Bithynia; but the Spirit suffered them not. And . .
9 passing by Mysia, *they* came down to Troas. And a vision appeared to Paul *by* night: *a man of Macedonia stood* and *entreated* him, saying, Come over into Mace-
10 donia, and help us. And *as soon as* he had seen the vision, immediately we *sought* to go into Macedonia, assuredly *inferring* that the Lord . . called us . . to
11 preach the Gospel *to* them. *Sailing therefore* from Troas, we ran with a straight course to Samothracia, and the
12 next day to Neapolis: And from thence to Philippi, which is the *first* city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony.
13 And we *abode in that city* certain days. And on the Sabbath we went out *of the gate*, by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made; and *sitting* down, *we* spake
14 *to* the women *who were come together.* And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, *a worshipper of* God, heard . . ; whose heart the Lord opened *to attend to* the things which were
15 spoken *by* Paul. And when she was baptized and her *family*, she *entreated* us, saying, *Since* ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house and abide
16 there. And she constrained us. And . . as we *were going* to prayer, a certain damsel possessed *by* a spirit of divination met us, *who* brought her masters much
17 gain by *divining. She following after* Paul and us, . . cried *out*, saying, These men are servants of the most high God, *who declare to you* the way of salvation.
18 And this *she did for* many days. But Paul being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ, to come out of her. And he came
19 out the same hour. *But* when her masters saw that the hope of their *gain* was gone, *laying hold of* Paul and Silas, . . *they dragged* them into the market place *to* the
20 *magistrates.* And *having* brought them to the *pretors, they said*, These men, being Jews, . . exceedingly trouble
21 our city, And teach customs, which *it is* not lawful for
22 us, *being Romans, to receive, neither to observe.* And the multitude rose up together against them; and the *pretors tearing* off *their garments*, . . commanded to beat them
23 *with rods.* And when they had laid many stripes upon them they cast them into prison, charging the jailer to
24 keep them safely; Who having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and *secured* their feet
25 . . in the stocks. *But* at midnight Paul and Silas *having* prayed, . . *sung a hymn to* God and the prisoners heard
26 them. And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's

27 bands were loosed. And the *jailer* awaking out of his
sleep, and seeing the *doors of the prison* opened, . .
drew . . his sword, and *was going to kill* himself, sup-
28 posing . . the prisoners *were* fled. But Paul cried with
a loud voice, saying, Do thyself no harm; for we are
29 all here. Then he called for *lights*, and sprang in, and
30 . . trembling, . . fell down before Paul and Silas. And
having brought them out *he* said, Sirs, what must I do
31 to be saved? And they said, Believe *in* the Lord Jesus
32 Christ, and thou shalt be saved and thy *household*. And
they spake *the word of the Lord to him* and to all that
33 were in his house. And *taking* them *that very* hour of
the night, . . *he* washed their stripes, and was *im-*
34 *mediately baptized, he and all his household.* And *having*
brought them *up* into his house, he set *a table* before
them, and rejoiced, believing in God with *his whole family.*
35 And when it was day, the *pretors* sent the *sergeant,*
36 saying, Let those men go. And the *jailer* told . . Paul,
The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore
37 depart, and go in peace. But Paul said *to* them, They
have beaten us *publicly* uncondemned, and *have cast us*
into prison, who are Romans: and *do they now* thrust us
out *privately?* Nay verily: but let them come them-
38 selves and *conduct* us out. And the sergeants *reported*
these words *to* the *pretors;* and they *were afraid* when
39 they heard that they were Romans. And they came
and *comforted* them: and *conducting* them out, . .
40 *requested* that they *would* depart *from* the city. And
coming out of the prison, *they* entered into the house of
Lydia: and when they had seen the brethren, they
comforted them and departed.

17 *And having journeyed* through Amphipolis and
Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where *there*
2 was a synagogue of the Jews. And Paul, *according to*
his custom, went in *to* them, and three Sabbath days
3 *discoursed* with them *from* the Scriptures; Opening *them*
and *evincing*, That Christ *ought to suffer*, and *to rise* . .
from the dead, and that this *is the Christ, even Jesus,*
4 whom I *declare* unto you. And some of them believed,
and *were joined to* Paul and Silas, and *a great number of*
the devout Greeks, and not a few of the principal women.
5 But the Jews *who* believed not, *filled with zeal, taking to*
them *some of the mean and profligate fellows*, and *making*
a mob, set all the city *in* an uproar; *and assaulting* the
house of Jason, sought to bring them out to the people.
6 *But not finding them*, they *dragged* Jason and certain
brethren *to* the rulers of the city, crying *aloud*, These
men, that have turned the world upside down, are come

7 hither also: Whom Jason hath *privately* received: and
all these men act contrary to the decrees of Caesar, saying,
8 That there is another king, one Jesus. And they
alarmed the *multitude* and the rulers of the city, when
9 they heard these things. *However, having* taken security
of Jason, and of the *rest*, they let them go.
10 *But* the brethren immediately sent away Paul and
Silas by night *to* Berea, who coming thither, went into
11 the synagogue of the Jews. These were more *ingenuous*
than those of Thessalonica, *receiving* the word with all
readiness of mind, and daily *searching* the Scriptures,
12 whether those things were so. Therefore many of them
believed, *and* of *the Grecian women of considerable rank,*
13 and of *the* men not a few. But when the Jews of Thessa-
lonica *knew* that the word of God was preached *by* Paul
at Berea *also, they came thither likewise,* and stirred up
14 the *multitude. . .* Then *the brethren sent away Paul*
immediately, to go as it were to the sea; but Silas and
15 *Timothy continued there. . .* And they that conducted
Paul, brought him *as far as* Athens, and *having received*
an order to Silas and *Timothy, . .* to come to him with
all speed, they departed.
16 Now, while Paul *was waiting* for them at Athens, his
spirit was *provoked within* him, *seeing* the city wholly
17 given to idolatry. *He therefore discoursed* in the syna-
gogue *to* the Jews and the devout persons, and in the
18 market *place* daily *to those whom he* met with. Then
some of the Epicurean and . . Stoic philosophers en-
countered him: and some said, What *would* this babbler
say? Others, . . He seemeth to be a *proclaimer* of
strange gods; because he preached *to* them Jesus, and
19 the resurrection. And they took him and brought him
to the Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new
20 doctrine *is, which is spoken by thee?* For thou bringest
certain strange things to our ears; we would *therefore*
21 *know* what these things mean: (For all the Athenians,
and the strangers *sojourning* there, spent their time
in nothing else but . . *telling* or *hearing* some new
thing.)
22 Then Paul *standing* in the midst of *the Areopagus,*
said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that . . ye are
23 greatly *addicted to the worship of invisible powers.* For
as I passed *along* and beheld *the objects of your worship,*
I found an altar, *on which was inscribed,* TO THE
UNKNOWN GOD: *him therefore whom* ye *worship*
24 *without knowing him, I proclaim* unto you. God *who*
made the world and all things therein, *being the* Lord of
heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with
25 hands: Neither is *he served by* men's hands, as though

he needed any thing, . . he *himself giving* to all life,
26 and breath, and all things. And he hath made of one
blood *the whole nation* of men, . . to dwell on all the
face of the earth, *having* determined the times before
27 appointed, and the bounds of their habitation: That
they *might* seek *God*, if haply they might feel after him
and find him, though he be not far from every one of us.
28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as
certain *likewise* of your own poets have said, For we
29 *are also* his offspring. *Being* then the offspring of God,
we ought not to think the Godhead is like . . gold or
silver, or stone graven by art and *contrivance of man.*
30 The times of . . ignorance, *indeed*, God *overlooked;* but
he now commandeth all men every where to repent.
31 Because he hath appointed a day in . . which he will
judge the world *righteously*, by *the* man whom he hath
ordained, whereof he hath given assurance to all men,
32 in that he hath raised him from the dead. And when
they heard of the resurrection *from* the dead, some
mocked; *but* others said, We will hear thee again *con-*
33 *cerning this.* So Paul departed from among them.
34 Howbeit *some* . . clave *to* him and believed; among
whom was *even* Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman
named Damaris, and others with them.

18 After these things, Paul *departing* from Athens, . .
came to Corinth. And *finding* a certain Jew named
2 Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy with
Priscilla his wife, (because . . Claudius had commanded
all *the* Jews to depart from Rome,) *he went to* them.
3 And *as* he was of the same *trade*, he abode with them and
4 wrought, for *they were tent makers by trade.* And he
discoursed in the synagogue every Sabbath, and per-
suaded the Jews and . . Greeks.
5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Mace-
donia, Paul was pressed in . . spirit, and testified to
6 the Jews that Jesus was *the* Christ. But when they
set themselves in opposition and blasphemed, he shook
his raiment and said *to* them, Your blood *is* upon your
own *head;* I am *pure:* from henceforth I *will* go *to* the
7 Gentiles. And *going* thence *he went* into *the house of*
one named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose
8 house *was adjoining* . . to the synagogue. And Crispus,
the . . ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord
with all his house, and many of the Corinthians hearing,
9 believed and were baptized. Then *the Lord said* to
Paul *by a vision, in the night, Fear* not, but speak and
10 hold not thy peace: For I am with thee, and no man
shall set on thee to hurt thee; for I have much people

11 in this city. And he continued there a year and six
months, teaching the word of God *among* them.
12 *But* when Gallio was *proconsul* of Achaia, the Jews
made *an assault* with one *consent upon* Paul, and brought
13 him to the judgment seat, saying, This fellow persuadeth
14 men to worship God contrary to the law. And when
Paul was . . about to open his mouth, Gallio said *to*
the Jews, If it were an *act* of *injustice*, or wicked *licentiousness*, O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear
15 with you. But if it be a question of words and names,
and of your law, look ye to it; for I will be no judge of
16 *these* matters. And he *drove* them *away* from the judg-
17 ment seat. Then *they* all took Sosthenes, the . . ruler of
the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment seat.
And Gallio cared for none of these things.
18 And Paul . . *still continued many days;* and then
taking . . leave of the brethren, sailed thence *for* Syria,
and with him Priscilla and Aquila, having *shaved* his
19 head at Cenchrea; for he had a vow. And he came to
Ephesus and left them there; but he himself *going* into
20 the synagogue, reasoned with the Jews. *But though*
they *entreated* him to tarry longer with them, he con-
21 sented not. But *took his leave of them*, saying, I must
by all means keep *the approaching* feast *at* Jerusalem,
but I will return *to* you *again*, if God will. And he *set*
22 *sail* from Ephesus. And *landing* at Caesarea, *he went*
up and saluted the Church, and went down to Antioch.
23 And *having* spent some time there, he departed and
went *through* the country of Galatia and Phrygia in
order, *confirming* all the disciples.
24 *Now* a certain Jew, *Apollos by name*, born at Alex-
andria, an eloquent man, . . mighty in the Scriptures,
25 came to Ephesus. This man *had been* instructed in the
way of the Lord, and being fervent in . . spirit he spake
and taught diligently the things of *Jesus*, knowing only
26 the baptism of John. And he . . *spake* boldly in the
synagogue. *And* Aquila and Priscilla *hearing him*, took
him *to their house*, and explained to him the way of God
27 more perfectly. And when he was *desirous* to *go over to*
Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to
receive him; who *being* come *thither, greatly helped*
28 *through grace them that had believed.* For he *earnestly*
debated with the Jews *in public*, showing by the Scriptures that Jesus was *the* Christ.

19 *Now* . . while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having
passed through the upper *parts*, came to Ephesus;
2 and finding certain disciples, He said *to* them, Have
ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And

they said *to* him, *Nay*, we have not so much as heard,
3 whether there be any Holy Ghost. He said to them,
Into what then were ye baptized? And they said, *Into*
4 John's baptism. *And Paul said*, John . . baptized
with the baptism of repentance, *telling* . . the people *to*
believe on him *that was to* come after him, that is, on . .
5 Jesus. *And hearing* this, they were baptized in the name
6 of the Lord Jesus. And Paul *laying* his hands on them,
the Holy Ghost came *upon* them, and they spake with
7 tongues and prophesied. And *they were in all about*
8 *twelve men.* And *going* into the synagogue, *he* spake
boldly, for . . three months *discoursing* and persuading
9 the things concerning the kingdom of God. But when
some were hardened and believed not, but spake *re-*
proachfully of *the* way before the multitude, he departed
from them, and separated the disciples, *discoursing* daily
10 in the school of one Tyrannus. And this *was done for*
the space of two years, so that all *the inhabitants of* Asia,
both Jews and Greeks, heard the word of the Lord. . .
11 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of
12 Paul, So that *handkerchiefs or aprons were carried from*
his body to the sick, and the diseases departed from them,
13 and the evil spirits *came* out of them. And *some* of the
vagabond Jews, exorcists, *undertook* to *name the name*
of the Lord Jesus over those who had evil spirits, saying,
14 We adjure you by Jesus, whom Paul preacheth. And
there were seven sons of one Sceva a *Jewish chief priest,*
15 *who* did *this. But* the evil spirit *answering* said, Jesus
16 I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the
man in whom the evil spirit was, *leaping upon* them,
and *getting the mastery of* them, . . prevailed against
them, so that they fled out of that house naked and
17 wounded. And this was known to all, *both* . . Jews
and Greeks, . . dwelling at Ephesus, and fear fell on
them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.
18 And many *of those who* believed came . . *confessing and*
19 *openly declaring* their deeds. Many *also of those* who
had *practised* curious arts, *bringing* their books together,
. . burned them before all men, and they *computed* the
value of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.
20 So *powerfully did* the word of God *grow* and *prevail.*
21 After these things were ended, Paul purposed in . .
spirit, *having* passed through Macedonia and Achaia,
to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there,
22 I must *see Rome also. And having* sent two of *those who*
ministered *to* him, Timotheus and Erastus *to Macedonia,*
23 . . he himself stayed in Asia for a season. And *about*
that time there arose no small *tumult concerning the* way.
24 For a . . man named Demetrius, a silversmith, *who*

made silver shrines for Diana, *procured* no small gain *to*
25 the *artificers:* Whom *having gathered* together with the
workmen *employed in such things,* he said, Sirs, ye know
26 that *our maintenance arises from this occupation. But*
ye see and hear, that not *at Ephesus only,* but *almost*
through all Asia, this Paul hath persuaded and turned
aside much people: saying, that they *are not* gods which
27 are made with hands: So that *there is danger not only*
that this our craft should come into disgrace, but also that
the temple of the great goddess Diana should be de-
spised, and her *majesty* . . destroyed, whom all Asia
28 and the world worshippeth. And *hearing this,* they were
filled with rage, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of
29 the Ephesians, And the whole city was filled with con-
fusion: and they rushed with one accord into the
theatre, *dragging with them* Gaius and Aristarchus, men
30 of Macedonia, Paul's fellow travellers. And when Paul
would have *gone* in *to* the people, the disciples *would not*
31 *suffer* him. And *some also* of the *principal officers* of
Asia, *being* his friends, sent *to* him, *and desired* that he
32 would not *venture* himself into the theatre. Some there-
fore cried one thing, and some another; for the assembly
was confused, and the *greater* part *did* not *know for*
33 *what* they were come together. And they *thrust* Alex-
ander *forward from among* the multitude, the Jews
pushing him *on;* and Alexander *waving* with his hand,
34 would have made *a* defence *to* the people: But when
they knew that he was a Jew, *one voice arose from them*
all, crying out for about . . two hours, Great is Diana
35 of the Ephesians. *But* the *register, having pacified* the
people, said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there *who*
knoweth not, . . that the city of the Ephesians is a
worshipper of the great . . Diana, and of the image
36 which fell down from Jupiter? Seeing then . . these
things cannot be *denied,* ye ought to be quiet, and
37 to do nothing rashly. For ye have brought . . these
men, who are neither robbers of *temples,* nor . . blas-
38 phemers of your goddess. *If then* Demetrius and the
artificers that are with him have a *charge* against any
one, the *courts are held,* and there are *proconsuls;* let
39 them implead one another. But if ye inquire any thing
concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a
40 lawful assembly. *And indeed* we are in danger to be
questioned for sedition concerning this day; there being
no cause, whereby we *can account for* this concourse.
41 And *having said these things,* he dismissed the assembly.

20 And after the *tumult* was ceased, Paul *having* called
the disciples to him, and *exhorted* them, . . departed

2 . . to go into Macedonia. And *having gone through*
those parts, and *exhorted them with much discourse,* he
3 came into Greece. And *having abode there* three months,
an ambush being laid for him by the Jews, as he was about
to sail into Syria, he *determined* to return through
4 Macedonia. And there accompanied him *to* Asia,
Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus
and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe and Timotheus; and
5 of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus. These going before,
6 *stayed* for us at Troas. And we *set sail* for Philippi after
the days of unleavened bread, and came *to* them *at*
7 Troas in five days, where we abode seven days. And
on the first day of the week, when *we were met* together
to break bread, Paul *being to depart on the morrow,*
preached to them, and continued his *discourse till* mid-
8 night. And there were many *lamps* in the upper *room*
9 where they were *assembled.* . . And *a certain young man,*
named Eutychus, sitting in the window fell into a deep
sleep: and as Paul *still continued his discourse, being*
overpowered with sleep, he fell down from the third *story,*
10 and was taken up dead. And Paul went down and fell on
him; and *taking him in his arms,* said, *Be not troubled;* for
11 his life is in him. And *going up* again, and *having* broken
bread, . . *he conversed long with them,* even till break of day,
12 *and* so . . departed. And they brought the young man
13 alive, and were not a little comforted. *But we going*
before *into the* ship . . sailed *to* Assos, *where we were to*
take up Paul; for so he had appointed, *being* himself to
14 go *on foot.* And when he met . . us at Assos, we took
15 him *up* and came to Mitylene. And *sailing* thence, . .
we came the *following* day over against Chios, and the
next day we *touched* at Samos, and *having* tarried at
16 Trogyllium . . *the day after* . . came to Miletus. For
Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, *that he might*
not spend *any* time in Asia; for he hasted if it were
possible . . , to be at Jerusalem *on* the day of pentecost.
17 And *sending to Ephesus from Miletus, he* called *thither*
18 the elders of the Church. And when they were come
to him, he said *to* them, Ye know *in what manner I have*
conversed among you all the time from the first day I came
19 *into Asia,* Serving the Lord with all humility . . , and
with tears, and *trials,* which befell me *through the am-*
20 *bushes* of the Jews: And *that I have withheld* nothing
which was profitable . . , but have *preached to* you, and
. . taught you, publicly and from house to house:
21 Testifying both to . . Jews and . . Greeks repentance
toward God and faith *in the* Lord Jesus Christ.
22 And now *being bound by the Spirit, I go to* Jerusalem,
23 not knowing the things that shall befall me there: Save

that the Holy Ghost *testifieth to me* in every city, saying
24 that bonds and afflictions *await* me. But none of these
things move me; *nor do I count* my life *precious to* myself,
so . . I *may* finish my course with joy, and the ministry
which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the
25 Gospel of the grace of God. And now . . I know that
ye all among whom I *have conversed, proclaiming* the
26 kingdom of God shall see my face no more. Wherefore
I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the
27 blood of all men: For I have not shunned to declare
28 unto you all the counsel of God. Take heed therefore
to yourselves, and to *the whole* flock over . . which the
Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the Church
of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.
29 For I know this, that after my *departure, grievous*
wolves will enter in among you, not sparing the flock.
30 *Yea, from among* yourselves *men will* arise, speaking
perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.
31 Therefore watch, . . *remembering* that *for three years*
I ceased not to warn every one, night and day, with
tears.
32 And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to
the word of his grace, *who* is able to build you up, and
to give you an inheritance among all them *that* are
33 sanctified. I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or
34 apparel. Yea, *you* yourselves know that these hands
have ministered *to* my necessities and to them that were
35 with me. I have showed you all things, . . that *thus*
labouring ye ought to *help* the weak, and to remember
the *word* of the Lord Jesus, *that he himself* said, It is
36 *happier* to give than to receive. And *having said these*
37 *things*, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all. And
they all wept sore, and *falling* on Paul's neck, . . kissed
38 him; Sorrowing most . . for *that word* which he spake,
that they should see his face no more. And they *conducted* him *to* the ship.

21 *And when* we were *torn away* from them, and had
set sail, we *ran* with a straight course *to* Coos, . .
2 *next* day *to* Rhodes, and from thence *to* Patara. And
finding a ship *passing* over *to* Phenicia, we went aboard
3 and set *sail*. *And coming within sight of* Cyprus, *and*
leaving it on the left hand, . . *we set sail to* Syria, and
landed at Tyre; for there the ship was to *unload* her
4 burden. And finding disciples, we tarried there seven
days, who *told* . . Paul *by* the Spirit *not to* go up to
5 Jerusalem. *But* when we had *finished these* days, we
departed and went our way; and they all *attended us*
out of the city, with their wives and children: and *kneeling*

6 down on the *sea* shore we prayed. And *having embraced*
each other, we took ship, and they returned home. . .
7 And *having* finished our *voyage, we came from Tyre to*
Ptolemais, and *saluting* the brethren, *we* abode with
8 them one day. And the next day we . . departed and
came *to* Caesarea; and *entering* into the house of Philip
the evangelist, *who* was one of the seven, *we* abode with
9 him. And *he* had four daughters, virgins, *who were*
10 *prophetesses.* And as we tarried . . many days *a certain*
11 *prophet named Agabus came down from Judea.* And
coming to us, he took *up* Paul's girdle, and *binding* his
own *feet and hands*, . . said, Thus saith the Holy Ghost,
So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man *whose*
girdle this is, and . . deliver him into the hands of the
12 Gentiles. And when we heard these things, both we,
and they of *the* place, besought him not to go up to
13 Jerusalem. *But* Paul answered, What mean ye, *weeping*
and *breaking my* heart? . . I am ready not *only to be*
bound, but also to die at Jerusalem, for the name of the
14 Lord Jesus. And when he would not be persuaded, we
ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.
15 And after *these* days we took up our carriages, and went
16 up to Jerusalem, *And some of the disciples also from*
Caesarea went with us, and brought *us to* one Mnason, *a*
Cyprian, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.
17 And when we were come *up* to Jerusalem, the brethren
18 received us gladly. And the *next day* Paul went in
19 with us *to* James, and all the elders were present. And
having saluted them, he *gave them a particular account of*
those things which God had *done* among the Gentiles by
20 his ministry. And *having* heard it, they glorified *God*,
and said *to* him, Thou seest, brother, how many thou-
sands *of believing Jews there are*, and they are all zealous
21 *for* the law. But they *have been* informed *concerning*
thee, that thou teachest . . the Jews *who* are among
the Gentiles, to *apostatize from* Moses, *telling them not to*
circumcise their children, *nor* to walk after the customs.
22 What is it therefore? The multitude must needs come
23 together; for they will hear that thou art come. *There-*
fore do this that we say to thee: *there are with us* four
24 men, *who* have a vow on them: *Take them* and purify
thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that
they may shave their heads: and all *will* know, that *there*
is nothing of those things which they have heard of thee;
but that thou thyself . . walkest orderly, . . *keeping*
25 the law. As touching the Gentiles *that* believe, we have
written and *determined*, that they *should* observe no
such thing; save only that they keep themselves from
what is offered to idols, and from blood, and from *what is*

26 strangled, and from fornication. Then Paul took the
men, and the next day purifying himself with them,
entered into the temple, *declaring* the accomplishment
of the days of purification, *till the* offering should be
27 offered for every one of them. And when the seven
days were *about to be accomplished*, the Jews *that* were
from Asia *seeing* him in the temple, stirred up all the
28 *multitude;* and laid hands on him, Crying out, Men of
Israel, help! This is the man that teacheth all men
every where against the people, and the law, and this
place: yea, and *hath even* brought Greeks . . into the
29 temple, and . . polluted this holy place. . . For they
had *before seen Trophimus the Ephesian with him in the
city*, whom they supposed . . Paul had brought into the
30 temple. . . And *the whole* city was moved, and the people
ran together: and *laying hold on* Paul, *they dragged* him
out of the temple: and *immediately* the *gates* were shut.
31 And as they went about to kill him, *word* came *to* the
tribune of the cohort, that all Jerusalem was in an uproar.
32 Who immediately took soldiers and centurions, and ran
down *to him;* and when they saw the *tribune* and . .
33 soldiers, they *ceased from* beating Paul. Then *the tribune*
came near, and took him, and commanded him to be
bound with two chains, and *inquired* who he was, and
34 what he had done? *But* some *among the multitude cried
out one thing, some another;* and when he could not
know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him
35 to be carried into the castle. *But* when he came upon
the stairs, . . he was borne of the soldiers, *through* the
36 violence of the *multitude.* For the *throng* of . . people
37 followed after, crying, Away with him. And as Paul
was *about* to be *brought* into the castle, he said *to the
tribune*, May I speak *to* thee? Who said, Canst thou
38 speak Greek? Art *not thou* that Egyptian, *who* before
these days madest an uproar, and leddest out *four thou-
39 sand murderers into the wilderness?* But Paul said, I am
a man *who* am a Jew of Tarsus . . in Cilicia, a citizen
of no mean city: and I beseech thee *give me leave* to
40 speak *to* the people. And when he had given him *leave*,
Paul *standing* on the stairs . . *waved* . . *his* hand *to* the
people: and *a great silence being made*, he spake *to* them
in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

22 . . Brethren, and fathers, hear ye *now my defence* unto
you. (And when they heard that he *addressed them
2 in the Hebrew tongue*, they kept the more silence: and
3 he saith) I am verily . . a Jew, born *at* Tarsus . . in
Cilicia, *but* brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel,
. . *accurately instructed in* the law of *our* fathers, and

4 was zealous toward God, as ye *are all* this day. And I
persecuted this way *to* the death, binding and delivering
5 *into* prisons both men and women: As *likewise* the high
priest *is my* witness, and all the estate of the elders:
from whom also I received letters *to* the brethren, and
went to Damascus; to bring them *who* were there bound
6 *to* Jerusalem . . to be punished. *But* as I *journeyed* and
drew near to Damascus, about noon suddenly there shone
7 from heaven a great light round about me. And I fell
to the ground, and heard a voice saying *to* me, Saul,
8 Saul, why persecutest thou me? And I answered, Who
art thou, Lord? And he said *to* me, I am Jesus of
9 Nazareth, whom thou persecutest. And they that were
with me saw the light, and were *terrified;* but they *did*
10 *not hear* the voice of him that spake to me. And I
said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said *to* me,
Rise and go into Damascus, and there it shall be told
thee of all things which are appointed . . thee to do.
11 And *as* I could not see for the glory of that light, being
led by the hand *by* them that were with me, I came into
12 Damascus. And one Ananias, a devout man according
to the law, *well reported of by* all the Jews *that* dwelt
13 there, *Coming to* me, . . stood and said *to* me, Brother
Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked
14 *up* upon him: And he said, The God of our fathers hath
chosen thee, *to* know his will, and see that Just One,
15 and . . hear the voice of his mouth. For thou shalt be his
witness *to* all men, of what thou hast seen and heard.
16 And now why tarriest thou? Arise and be baptized,
and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.
17 And . . when I was *returned* to Jerusalem, *and was*
18 *praying* in the temple, I was in a trance; And saw him
saying *to* me, Make haste, and *depart* quickly out of
Jerusalem; for they will not receive thy testimony con-
19 cerning me. And I said, Lord, they know that I
imprisoned, and beat in every synagogue them that
20 believed on thee. And when the blood of thy martyr
Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consent-
ing . . , and kept the *garments* of them that slew him.
21 *But* he said *to* me, Depart: for I will send thee far *off*
to the Gentiles.
22 And they *heard* him *to* this word, and then lifted up
their *voice* and said, Away with such a fellow from the
23 earth; for it is not fit that he should live. And as
they cried out, and *rent* their garments, and *cast* dust
24 into the air, The *tribune* commanded him to be brought
into the castle, and *ordered him to* be examined by scourg-
ing, that he might know *for what cause* they cried so
25 against him. And as they *were binding* him with thongs,

Paul said *to* the centurion that stood by, Is it lawful for
26 you to scourge *a Roman even uncondemned?* . . The centurion *hearing it,* . . went and told the *tribune,* saying, *Consider* what thou *art about to do;* for this man is a
27 Roman. Then the *tribune* came and said *to* him, Tell
28 me, art thou a Roman? He said, Yea. And the *tribune* answered, *I purchased this freedom with a great sum of*
29 *money.* And Paul said, But I was free born. Then *they who were going to examine him, immediately departed from him:* and the *tribune* . . was afraid, after he knew . . he was a Roman, . . because he had bound him.

30 And on the morrow, . . *desiring to know* the certainty, *what* he was accused of *by* the Jews, he loosed him from his *bonds,* and commanded the chief priests and all *the* council to *come;* and *bringing* Paul down, . . set him before them.

23 And Paul earnestly beholding the council, said, . . Brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before
2 God *till* this day. And *Ananias the high priest* commanded them that stood by . . to smite him on the
3 mouth. Then said Paul *to* him, God *is about to* smite thee, thou whited wall. For sittest thou to judge me *according to* the law, and commandest me to be smitten
4 contrary to the law? *But* they that stood by, said,
5 Revilest thou God's high priest? Then said Paul, I *was* not *aware,* brethren, that it was the high priest, for it is written, Thou shalt not *revile* the ruler of thy
6 people. But Paul *perceiving* that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, . . cried out in the council, . . Brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee; *for* the hope *of the* resurrection of the dead
7 am I called in question. And when he had said *this,* there arose a *contention* between the Pharisees and the
8 Sadducees; and the multitude was divided. For the Sadducees say . . there is no resurrection, neither angel
9 nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess both. And there *was* a great *clamour:* and the scribes . . of the Pharisees' *side arising,* . . *contended,* saying, We find no evil in this man: *but* if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him,
10 let us not fight against God. And *as a great disturbance arose,* the *tribune* fearing lest Paul should be *torn* in pieces *by* them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and *pluck* . . him from among them, and bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord *standing* by him, . . said, Be of good *courage,* Paul: for as thou hast testified *the things concerning me at* Jerusalem, so *thou*

12 *must testify* at *Rome also.* And when it was day, *some*
of the Jews *entering into a conspiracy* . . bound them-
selves *by* a curse, saying, that they would neither eat
13 nor drink till they had killed Paul. And they were
14 more than forty *who had* made this *confederacy.* And
they came to the chief priests and elders, and said,
We have bound ourselves *by a solemn* curse, *not to taste*
15 *any thing till* we have *killed* Paul. Now therefore ye
with the council signify to the *tribune,* that he bring him
down *to* you to-morrow, as though ye would *more accu-*
rately know the things concerning him: and we, *before* . .
16 he come near, are ready to kill him. *But* Paul's sister's
son, *hearing* of their lying in wait, . . *came,* and *entering*
17 into the castle, . . told Paul. *And* Paul *calling to him*
one of the centurions, . . said, *Conduct* this young man
18 *to* the *tribune;* for he hath *something* to tell him. So he
took . . and brought him to the *tribune,* and said, Paul
the prisoner *calling* me *to* him, . . *desired* me to bring
this young man *to* thee, who hath something to *tell*
19 thee. *And* the *tribune taking* him by the hand, and
going aside privately, . . asked, What is *it* that thou
20 hast to tell me? And he said, The Jews have agreed
to *ask* thee *to* bring down Paul to-morrow *to* the council,
as *if* they would inquire *something concerning* him more
21 *accurately.* But do not yield *to* them; for there are
more than forty of them lie in wait, who have bound them-
selves with a *curse, neither to* eat nor drink till they
have killed him: and now are they ready, *expecting* a
22 promise from thee. So the *tribune dismissed* the
young man, *having* charged him, . . Tell no man that
23 thou hast *discovered* these things to me. And *having*
called *to* him two *of* the centurions, *he said,* . . *Prepare*
two hundred soldiers to go to Caesarea, and *seventy horse-*
men, and *two hundred spearmen, by* the third hour of
24 the night. And provide . . beasts, *to* set Paul *upon,*
25 and *conduct* him safe *to* Felix the governor. And he
26 wrote a letter after this manner, Claudius Lysias *to* the
27 most excellent Governor Felix, . . greeting. *As* this
man was *seized by* the Jews, and *about to be* killed *by*
them, *I came* with *the soldiery* and rescued him, having
28 *learned* that he was a Roman. And *desiring to know* the
crime of which they accused him, I brought him *before*
29 their council: Whom I *found* to be accused *concerning*
questions of their law, but to *be charged with* nothing
30 worthy of death or of bonds. And when it was *shown*
me, . . *that an ambush was about to be laid for the man*
by the Jews, I *immediately* sent *him* to thee, *commanding*
his accusers also to say before thee what they *have*
against him. Farewell.

31 The soldiers *therefore taking* Paul, as it was commanded
32 them, brought him by night to Antipatris. On the
morrow they *returned to the castle, leaving* the horsemen
33 to go with him: Who *entering into* Caesarea, and *deliver-
ing* the *letter* to the governor, presented Paul also before
34 him, And . . *having* read *it*, he asked of what province
he was? And *being informed* that he was of Cilicia,
35 I will *give* thee, said he, *a thorough hearing*, when thy
accusers *also are* come. And he commanded him to be
kept in Herod's *palace.*

24 And after five days, Ananias the high priest *came
down* with the elders, and . . a certain orator, named
Tertullus; who *appeared before* the governor against
2 Paul. And he *being* called, . . Tertullus began to
accuse him, saying, Seeing *we enjoy great peace through
thee*, and that very worthy deeds are done *to* this nation
3 by thy *prudence always, and in all places*, We accept it,
4 most *excellent* Felix, with all thankfulness. *But* that I
may not *trouble* . . thee farther, I *beseech* thee *of thy*
5 *clemency to hear us* a few words. For we have found
this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition
among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ring-
6 leader of the sect of the Nazarenes: Who *hath also
attempted* to profane the temple; whom we *seized* and
7 would have judged according to our law. But *Lysias
the tribune coming* upon us, . . with great violence took
8 him *away* out of our hands, Commanding his accusers
to come *to* thee, *whereby thou mayest thyself, on exami-
nation*, take knowledge of all these things, *of which* we
9 accuse him. And the Jews also assented, saying that
these things were so.
10 Then Paul, after . . the governor had *made a sign
to* him to speak, answered, . . *Knowing* . . thou hast
been *for several* years a judge *to* this nation, I . . cheer-
11 fully answer for myself: *As* thou mayest *know* that *it is*
. . but twelve days since I went up . . *to worship at
12 Jerusalem.* And they neither found me *disputing with
any man in the temple, nor making any insurrection among
the multitude either* in the synagogues *or* in the city.
13 *Nor* can they prove the things whereof they now accuse
14 me. But this I confess unto thee, that after the way
which they call heresy, so worship I the God of my
fathers, believing all things which are written in the law
15 and in the prophets: *Having* hope *in* God *that there shall
be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and of the
16 unjust, which they themselves also expect.* And *for this
cause* do I *also* exercise myself to have always a con-
science void of offence toward God and toward men.

17 Now after *several* years I came to bring alms to my
18 nation and offerings. Whereupon certain Jews from
Asia found me *purifying* in the temple, neither with
19 multitude, nor with tumult: Who ought to have been
present before thee, and to *accuse me*, if they had *any*
20 *thing* against me. Or . . let these *themselves* say . .
what crime they found in me *when* I stood before the
21 council. *Unless* it be *concerning* this one *word*, that I
cried, standing among them, Touching the resurrection
of the dead, I am called in question by you this day.
22 And when Felix heard these things, *he put them off*,
. . *saying, After I have been more accurately informed*
concerning this way, when Lysias the *tribune cometh*
23 down, I will *take full cognizance* of your affair. And he
commanded the centurion to keep *him*, and . . let him
have liberty, and *to hinder* none of his *friends from*
ministering . . to him.
24 And after *some* days, Felix *coming* with *Drusilla, his*
wife, who was a Jewess, . . sent for Paul, and heard
25 him concerning the faith in Christ. And as he reasoned
concerning justice, temperance, and *the* judgment to
come, Felix *being terrified*, . . answered, Go thy way
for this time: when I have a convenient season I will
26 *afterward* call for thee. And he hoped also that money
would have been given him *by* Paul: *therefore* he sent
27 for him the oftener, and *discoursed* with him. *And*
after two years *Felix was succeeded by Portius Festus:*
and Felix *desiring* to *gratify* the Jews, left Paul bound.

25 Now when Festus was come into the province,
after three days he *went up* from Caesarea to Jerusalem.
2 Then the high priest and the chief of the Jews *appeared*
3 *before* him against Paul, and besought him, . . *Begging*
favour against him, that he would send for him to Jeru-
4 salem, *lying in* wait *to kill him by the way*. But Festus
answered, That Paul *was* . . kept at Caesarea, and that
5 he himself would depart *thither shortly*. *Therefore let*
those of you, said he, *who* are able, go down with me and
6 accuse the man, if there be any wickedness in him. And
having tarried among them *not* more than *eight or* ten
days, he went down *to* Caesarea; and the next day, sitting
on the judgment seat, *he* commanded Paul to be brought.
7 And when he was come, the Jews *who had come* down
from Jerusalem stood round about him, . . *bringing* many
and *heavy accusations* against Paul, which they *were not*
8 *able* to prove: While he answered for himself, Neither
against the law of the Jews, *nor* against the temple,
9 nor . . against Caesar, have I offended . . at all. But
Festus, *desiring* to *gratify* the Jews, answered Paul, and

said, *Art* thou *willing* to go up to Jerusalem, and there
10 be judged *before me concerning these things?* Then said
Paul, I *am standing* at Caesar's judgment seat, where I
ought to be judged: *I have done no wrong to the Jews,*
11 as thou *also* very well knowest. For if *indeed* I *have*
done wrong, and have committed any thing worthy of
death, I refuse not to die; but if there *is nothing* of
the things whereof these accuse me, no man *can give*
12 me *up to* them. I appeal *to* Caesar. Then Festus,
having conferred with the council, answered, Hast thou
appealed *to* Caesar? *To* Caesar *shalt thou* go.
13 And after certain days, King Agrippa and Bernice
14 came *to* Caesarea, to salute Festus. And when they had
been there many days, Festus declared *the cause of Paul*
to the king, saying, There is a certain man left *prisoner*
15 by Felix: About whom when I was at Jerusalem, the
chief priests and elders of the Jews *appeared before* me,
16 desiring . . judgment against him. To whom I an-
swered, It is not the *custom* of the Romans to *give up*
any man, . . *till* he *that* is accused have the accusers
face to face, and . . *liberty* to *make his defence* . . *touch-*
17 *ing* the crime laid *to his charge. When therefore* they
were come hither, *I without any delay* sat on the judg-
ment seat *the next day,* and commanded the man to be
18 brought forth. Against whom when the accusers stood
up, they brought *no* accusation of such things as I
19 supposed; But had certain questions against him,
relating to their own *religious worship,* and *about* one Jesus
20 *that* was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive. And
as I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked . .
if he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged *con-*
21 *cerning* these matters. But Paul *appealing* to be *kept*
for the hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be
22 kept till I *could* send him to Caesar. Then Agrippa said
to Festus, I would also hear the man myself. And
he said, To-morrow thou shalt hear him.
23 And on the morrow, when Agrippa was come and
Bernice with great pomp, and *were* entered into the
place of *audience* with the *tribunes* and principal men of
the city, at *the command of* Festus, Paul was brought
24 forth. And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all *ye who*
are . . present with us, ye see this man, about whom
all the multitude of the Jews have *pleaded* with me,
both at Jerusalem and . . here, crying *out,* that he
25 ought not to live any longer. But when I found that
he had committed nothing worthy of death, and . . he
had himself appealed to *the emperor,* I . . determined to
26 send him: Of whom I have *nothing* certain to write *to*
my lord: *therefore* I have brought him . . before you,

and especially before thee, O King Agrippa, that after
27 examination *taken*, I *may* have somewhat to write. For
it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and
not to signify *also* the crimes *alleged* against him.

26 Then Agrippa said *to* Paul, *It is* permitted *thee* to
speak for thyself. *And* Paul, *stretching* forth *his*
2 hand, . . *made his defence.* I think myself happy, King
Agrippa, *that I am this day to make my defence* before
thee, *concerning* all *those* things whereof I am accused
3 *by* the Jews, . . *Who art accurately acquainted with* all
the customs and questions which are among the Jews:
wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.
4 *The manner of my life* from my youth, which was
from the beginning among *my* own nation at Jerusalem
5 *all the Jews know. Who* knew me from the first, (if
they would testify,) that *I lived a Pharisee, after the* . .
6 *strictest sect of our religion.* And now I stand *in judgment*
for the hope of the promise made *by* God *to* our fathers:
7 *To* which our twelve tribes, *worshipping continually*
night and day, hope to *attain: concerning* which *hope* . . ,
8 King Agrippa, I am accused *by* the Jews. *What! Is it*
judged by you an incredible thing, that God should raise
9 the dead? I *indeed* thought . . myself, that I ought
to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of
10 Nazareth: Which . . *also I* did in Jerusalem; *and hav-*
ing received authority from the chief priests, I shut up
many of the saints in prisons, and when they were *killed*,
11 I gave my *vote* against them. And *frequently punishing*
them in all the synagogues, . . *I* compelled them to
blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I
12 persecuted them even *to foreign* cities. Whereupon as I
was going to Damascus, with authority and commission
13 from the chief priests, At mid day, O king, I saw in the
way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the
sun shining round . . me and them *that* journeyed with
14 me. And when we were all fallen *down* to the earth, I
heard a voice *saying to* me . . in the Hebrew tongue,
Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? *It* is hard for
15 thee to kick against the *goads.* And I said, Who art
thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou
16 persecutest. But rise and stand upon thy feet; for I
have appeared *to* thee for this purpose, to *ordain* thee a
minister and a witness, both of *the* things which thou
hast seen, and of those . . in . . which I will appear *to*
17 thee, Delivering thee from the people, and . . the Gentiles
18 *to* whom *I now* send thee, To open their eyes, . . *that*
they may turn from darkness to light, and from the power
of Satan *to* God; that they may receive *through faith*

which is in me, forgiveness of sins, and an inheritance
19 *among them that are sanctified. From that time,* O King
Agrippa, I was not disobedient *to* the heavenly vision,
20 But . . first *to* them at Damascus and at Jerusalem,
and *through* all the *country* of Judea, and then to the
Gentiles, *I declared,* that they should repent and turn to
21 God, . . *doing* works *worthy of* repentance. For these
things the Jews *seizing* me in the temple, . . *attempted*
22 to kill me *with their own hands. But* having . . obtained
help *from* God, I continue *till* this day, *testifying* both to
small and great, saying *nothing but what both* the prophets
23 and Moses *have declared* should *be,* That Christ *having*
suffered, and *being* the first *who rose* from the dead,
24 should show light *to* the people and to the Gentiles. And
as he *was* thus *making his defence,* Festus said with a
loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thyself, much learning
25 doth make thee mad. But he said, I am not mad, most
excellent Festus, but *utter* the words of truth and *sobriety.*
26 For the king knoweth of these things; *to* whom also I
speak *with freedom;* for I am persuaded . . none of
these things are hidden from him, for this was not done
27 in a corner. King Agrippa, believest thou the proph-
28 ets? I know that thou believest. Then Agrippa
said unto Paul, Almost thou persuadest me to be a
29 Christian. And Paul said, I would to God, that not
only thou, but *likewise* all that hear me, *were this day*
both almost and altogether such as I am, except these
bonds.
30 And *as* he *said this,* the king rose up, and the governor,
31 and Bernice, and they that sat with them. And *as* they
were *going away,* they *spake one to another,* saying, This
32 man *doth* nothing worthy of death, or of bonds. *And*
Agrippa said unto Festus, This man might have been
set at liberty if he had not appealed unto Caesar.

27 And when it was determined *to* sail into Italy, they
delivered Paul, and certain other prisoners, *to a*
2 *centurion named Julius* of *the Augustan cohort.* And
going aboard a ship of Adramyttium, *that was to sail by*
the coasts of Asia, we set sail, . . Aristarchus, a Mace-
3 donian of Thessalonica, being with us. And the next
day we *reached* . . Sidon. And Julius *treating Paul*
courteously, permitted him to go *to* his friends *to take*
4 *refreshment.* And *setting sail* from thence, we sailed
5 under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary. And
having sailed *through* the sea of Cilicia, and Pamphylia,
6 we came to Myra, a city of Lycia. And *the centurion*
finding a ship of Alexandria there, bound for Italy, . .
7 put us *on board of it.* And when we had sailed slowly

many days, and *were scarce come* over against Cnidus,
the wind not suffering us, we sailed under Crete, over
8 against Salmone. And *passing it with difficulty*, we
came *to* a *certain* place . . called the Fair Havens, *near*
9 *which* was the city . . Lasea. And *as* much time was
spent, and sailing was now dangerous, because the fast
10 was already past, Paul *exhorted* them, *Saying* to them,
Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with *injury* and
much damage, not only *to* the lading *and* the ship, but
11 also *to* our lives. *But* the centurion *regarded* the master
and the owner of the *vessel* more than *the* things which
12 were spoken by Paul. And *as* the haven was not *con-*
venient to winter in, the *greater* part advised to *set sail*
from thence also, if by any means they might *reach* . .
Phenice, . . *to winter there*, which is *a* haven of Crete . .
looking to the *southwest* and *northwest*.
13 And *as* the south wind blew *gently*, supposing they
had obtained their purpose, *they weighed anchor, and*
14 sailed *on* close by Crete. But not long after there arose
15 against it a tempestuous wind *named* Euroclydon. And
the ship being caught, and *not able to* bear up against the
16 wind, we let her drive. And running under a certain
island . . called Clauda, we *were hardly able to get*
17 *master of* the boat: Which *having* taken up, they used
helps, undergirding the ship, and fearing lest they should
fall into the quicksands, *they struck* sail, and so were
18 driven. And *as we were in an exceeding great storm*, the
19 next day they lightened the ship. And the third day
we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.
20 And *as* neither sun nor stars *appeared for many days*,
and no small tempest lay on us, all hope *of our being*
saved was *now* taken away.
21 But after long abstinence, Paul *standing in* the midst
of them, said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened *to* me, and
not have loosed from Crete, and *so have avoided this*
22 *injury* and loss. *Yet* now I exhort you to be of good
courage; for there shall be no loss of any . . life among
23 you, but of the ship *only*. For there stood by me this
night *an* angel of *the* God whose I am, and whom I serve,
24 Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be *presented* before
Caesar: and lo, God hath given thee all them that sail
25 with thee. Wherefore, sirs, *take courage:* for *I trust in*
God, that it shall be even as it *hath been spoken to* me.
26 *But* we must be cast *on* a certain island. *And* when
the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up
and down in *the Adriatic sea*, about midnight the *sailors*
28 *suspected* that they drew *nigh* . . some land. And
sounding, . . *they* found . . twenty fathoms; and *hav-*
ing gone a little *farther*, . . *sounding* again, *they* found

29 . . fifteen fathoms. *And* fearing lest we should fall
upon *rough places,* they cast four anchors out of the
30 stern, and wished for the day. *But when the sailors*
were attempting to flee out of the ship, *and had* let down
the boat into the sea, under *pretence . . that* they *were*
31 *going to carry out* anchors out of the foreship, Paul said to
the centurion and . . the soldiers, Unless these abide
32 in the ship, ye cannot be saved. Then the soldiers cut
33 off the ropes of the boat, and let *it* fall off. And while
the day was coming on, Paul *exhorted* them all to take
food, saying, This day is the fourteenth . . that ye have
tarried and continued fasting, having taken nothing.
34 Therefore I *exhort* you to take *food:* for this is for your
preservation; for there shall not a hair fall from the head
35 of any of you. And *having spoken thus,* he took bread,
and gave thanks to God *before* them all; and *having*
36 broken it, he began to eat. Then *were they* all *encouraged,*
37 and they also took . . meat. And we were *in the ship,*
38 *in all* two hundred *and seventy-six souls.* And when
they *were satisfied with food,* they lightened the ship, . .
39 *casting* out the wheat into the sea. And when it was
day, they *did not know* the land: but they *observed* a
certain creek *having* a shore, into . . which they were
40 minded if . . possible to thrust . . the ship: And *having*
taken up the anchors, they committed it *to* the sea, *at*
the same time loosing the rudder bands, and *hoisting* up
41 the *stay* sail to the wind, *they* made *for the* shore. *But*
falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the
ship aground; and the fore part *sticking* fast, . . re-
mained *immovable,* but the hinder part was broken by
42 the *force* of the waves. And the *counsel of the soldiers*
was to kill the prisoners, lest any *one* should swim *away*
43 and escape. But the centurion, *being desirous* to save
Paul, *hindered* them from their purpose, and commanded
those that could swim, *throwing themselves into the sea,*
44 *first* . . to get *away* to land. And the rest, some on
boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship; and so
it came to pass, that they *all escaped* safe to land.

28 And *being* escaped, *we then* knew, that the island
was called Melita. And the *barbarians* showed us
2 *uncommon* kindness; for *having* kindled a fire, *they*
brought us all to it, because of the present rain, and
3 because of the cold. *Now as* Paul *was gathering* a bundle
of sticks, and *laying* them on the fire, *a viper coming*
4 *from* the heat . . fastened *upon* his hand. And when
the barbarians saw the venomous *animal hanging* on his
hand, they said *one to another, Doubtless* this man is a
murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, . .

5 vengeance *hath not suffered* to live. *But having shaken*
off the venomous animal into the fire, . . *he suffered* no
6 harm. *However*, they *expected that* he *would* have swol-
len, or *suddenly fallen down dead:* but after . . *having*
waited a considerable time, seeing no mischief befall him,
they changed their minds, and said . . he was a god.
7 *And near that place was the estate* of *a* chief man of
the island, *named* Publius, who *receiving us into his*
8 *house, entertained us courteously three days. Now* . . the
father of Publius lay sick of a fever and . . bloody flux;
to whom Paul *went* in, and *having* prayed laid his hands
9 on him and healed him. *And* when this was done, *the*
rest also in the island, who had disorders, came and were
10 healed, Who *likewise* honoured us with many honours,
and when we departed, . . *put on board* such things as
were necessary.
11 And after three months we *sailed* in a ship of Alex-
andria, which had wintered in the *island,* whose sign
12 was Castor and Pollux. And *arriving* at Syracuse, we
13 tarried there three days, *Whence coasting round, we* came
to Rhegium, *and the south wind rising after one day,* . .
14 we came the next . . to Puteoli: Where *finding* brethren,
we were entreated to tarry with them seven days, and
15 so we went toward Rome. And *the brethren having*
heard of us, came out thence to meet us, *some* as far as
Appii-Forum, and *others to* the Three Taverns, whom,
when Paul saw, he thanked God and took courage.
16 And when we *were come* to Rome, the centurion de-
livered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but
Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with *the* soldier
17 that kept him. And . . after three days *he* called the
chief of the Jews together. And when they were come
together, he said *to* them, . . Brethren, though I have
done nothing against the people, or *the* customs of our
fathers, yet *have I been* delivered *a* prisoner from Jerusa-
18 lem into the hands of the Romans: Who *having* ex-
amined me, *were willing to have released me,* because there
19 was no cause of death in me. But when the Jews
opposed it, I was constrained to appeal *to* Caesar; not
20 that I had *any thing* to accuse my nation of. For this
cause therefore *have I entreated* to see . . and . . speak
with you: *for it is on account of* the hope of Israel, *that*
21 I am bound with this chain. And they said to him,
We *have* neither received letters from . . Judea con-
cerning thee, *nor hath* any of the brethren *coming hither,*
22 *related or spoken* any *evil* of thee. But we desire to
hear of thee what thou thinkest; for . . concerning this
sect, we know that *it is every where* spoken against.
23 And *having* appointed him a day, *many came to* him

at his lodging, to whom he expounded, . . *testifying* the kingdom of God, *and* persuading them concerning Jesus, both *from* the law of Moses and . . the prophets, from
24 morning till evening. And some believed the things
25 that were spoken, and some believed not. And *not agreeing with each other, they brake up the assembly,* after . . Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the Holy
26 Ghost by *the Prophet Isaiah to your* fathers, Saying, Go *to* this people and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand, and seeing ye shall see, and *shall* not
27 perceive. For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and *with* their ears *they hear heavily,* and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their *hearts,*
28 and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God
29 is sent *to* the Gentiles, *and* they will hear. . . And when he had said these *things,* the Jews departed, . . *having* great *debating with each other.*
30 And *he continued* two whole years in his own hired
31 house, and received all that came . . *to* him, Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching *the* things *that relate to* the Lord Jesus Christ, with all *freedom of speech,* no man forbidding him.

ST. PAUL'S Epistle to the ROMANS

MANY of the writings of the New Testament are written in the form of epistles. Such are not only those of St. Paul, James, Peter, Jude, but also both the treatises of St. Luke, and all the writings of St. John. Nay, we have seven epistles herein, which the Lord Jesus himself sent by the hand of John to the seven churches: yea, the whole Revelation is no other than an epistle from him.

Concerning the epistles of St. Paul, we may observe he writes in a very different manner, to those churches which he had planted himself, and to those who had not seen his face in the flesh. In his letters to the former, a loving or sharp familiarity appears, as their behaviour was more or less suitable to the gospel. To the latter, he proposes the pure, unmixed gospel, in a more general and abstract manner.

As to the time wherein he wrote his epistles, it is probable he wrote about the year of Christ according to the common reckoning,

48 from Corinth	the epistle to the Thessalonians:
49 from Phrygia	to the Galatians:
52 from Ephesus	the first to the Corinthians:
from Troas	the epistle to Timothy:
from Macedonia	the second to the Corinthians, and that to Titus:
from Corinth	to the Romans:
57 from Rome	to the Philippians, to Philemon, to the Ephesians, and Colossians:
58 from Italy	to the Hebrews:
66 from Rome	the second to Timothy:

As to the general epistles, it seems St. James wrote a little before his death, which was A. D. 63. St. Peter, who was martyr'd in the year 67, wrote his latter epistle a little before his death, and not long after his former. St. Jude wrote after him, when the mystery of iniquity was gaining ground swiftly. St. John is believed to have written all his epistles a little before his departure. The Revelation he wrote A. D. 96.

That St. Paul wrote this epistle from Corinth we may learn, from his commending to the Romans Phebe, a servant of the church of Cenchrea (ch. xvi. 1), a port of Corinth, and from his mentioning the salutations of Caius and Erastus (ch. xvi. 23), who were both Corinthians. Those to whom he wrote seem to have been chiefly foreigners, both Jews and Gentiles whom business drew from other provinces; as appears, both by his writing in Greek, and by his salutations of several former acquaintances.

His chief design herein is to shew, 1. That neither the Gentiles by the law of nature, nor the Jews by the law of Moses, could obtain justification before God: and that therefore it was necessary for both to seek it from the free mercy of God by faith. 2. That God has an absolute right, to shew mercy on what terms he pleases, and to withhold it from those who will not accept it on his own terms.

ROMANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an
2 apostle, separated *to* the Gospel of God, Which he had promised *before* by his prophets in the holy Scriptures;
3 Concerning his Son, Jesus Christ our Lord, *who* was . .
4 of the seed of David according to the flesh. *But* declared . . the Son of God with power, according to the
5 Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead; By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for
6 obedience to the faith *in* all nations for his name, Among

7 whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ: To all that
are in Rome, *who are* beloved of God, called . . *and*
holy, Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and
the Lord Jesus Christ.
8 First, I thank my God, through Jesus Christ, for you
all, that your faith is spoken of *through* the whole world.
9 For God *whom I serve* with my spirit in the Gospel of
his Son, *is my witness, how incessantly* I make mention
10 of you, Always *requesting in my prayers to come unto you,*
if by any means now at length I may have a prosperous
11 journey *by the will of God.* For I long to see you, that
I may impart *to* you some spiritual gift, *that* ye may be
12 established, That is, *to be* comforted together with you,
13 by the mutual faith both of you and me. Now I would
not have you ignorant, brethren, that *I have often pur-*
posed to come *to* you, (*though I have been hindered* hitherto,)
that I might have some fruit among you also, even as
14 among *the* other Gentiles. I am *a* debtor both to the
Greeks and . . the Barbarians, both to the wise and to
15 the unwise. *Therefore*, as much as in me is, I am ready
16 to preach the Gospel to you *also who* are at Rome. For
I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ; for it is the
power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth,
17 *both* to the Jew and to the *Gentile.* For *the righteousness*
of God is revealed therein from faith to faith; as it is writ-
ten, The just shall live by faith.
18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against
all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who *detain*
19 the truth in unrighteousness. *For what is to* be known
of God is manifest in them; for God hath showed it *to*
20 them. For *those* things of him *which are invisible*, both
his eternal power and Godhead, are clearly seen from the
creation of the world, being understood by the things
21 *which* are made, so that they are without excuse: Because
knowing God, they *did not glorify him* as God, neither
were thankful, but became vain in their *reasonings*, and
22 their foolish heart was darkened. Professing . . to be wise,
23 they became fools, And changed the glory of the *incor-*
ruptible God into an image *in the likeness* of corruptible
man, and *of* birds, and *of* four-footed *creatures*, and
24 *reptiles.* Wherefore God *also* gave them up to uncleanness through the *desires* of their hearts, to dishonour
25 their . . bodies *among* themselves, Who changed the
truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the
creature *above* the Creator, who is blessed for ever!
26 Amen. *Therefore* God gave them up *to* vile affections;
for even their women *changed* the natural use *to* that
27 which is against nature; And likewise also men, leaving
the natural use of the *women*, burned in their lust

toward each other, men with men working *filthiness*, and
receiving in themselves *the just* recompense of their
28 error. . . And . . as they did not like to retain God
in their knowledge, God gave them *up* to an *undiscerning*
29 mind, to do *the* things which *were* not *expedient*, Filled
with all *injustice*, fornication, *maliciousness*, covetous-
ness, wickedness: full of envy, murder, *contention*,
30 deceit, malignity: Whisperers, backbiters; haters of God,
violent, proud: boasters, inventors of evil things: dis-
31 obedient to parents, Without understanding, covenant
breakers, without natural affection, implacable, un-
32 merciful. Who knowing the *righteous* judgment of God,
that they *who practise* such things are worthy of death,
not only do the same, but have pleasure in *those* that
practise them.

2 Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever
thou art that judgest; for *in that* thou judgest *the other*,
thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest *prac-*
2 *tisest* the same things. *For* we *know* that the judgment of
God is according to truth, against them *who practise*
3 such things. And thinkest thou this, O man, *who*
judgest them *that practise* such things, and *dost* the
4 same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? Or
despisest thou the riches of his goodness, and forbear-
ance, and long-suffering, not knowing that the goodness
5 of God leadeth thee to repentance? But after thy
hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up *to* thyself
wrath *in* the day of wrath, and revelation, *and* righteous
6 judgment of God? Who will render to every one
7 according to his *works:* To them *that* by patient con-
tinuance in well-doing seek for glory, and honour, and
8 immortality, eternal life. But *to* them that are con-
tentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unright-
9 eousness, *shall be* indignation, and wrath, tribulation and
anguish, *Even* upon every soul of man *who worketh* evil,
10 of the Jew first, and also the Gentile: But glory, *and*
honour, and peace *shall be* to every *one who* worketh
good, to the Jew first and also to the Gentile.
11 For there is no respect of persons with God. For as
many as have sinned without *the* law, shall also perish
without *the* law; and as many as have sinned *under* the
13 law, shall be judged by the law. For not the hearers
of the law are just *with* God, but the doers of the law
14 shall be justified. For when the Gentiles, *who* have not
the law, do by nature the things contained in the law,
15 these *not having* the law, are a law to themselves; *Who*
show the work of the law written *upon* their hearts,
their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts

16 *among themselves,* accusing or *even defending them,* In
the day when God *will* judge the secrets of men by *Christ*
Jesus, according to my Gospel.
17 *But if* thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and
18 *gloriest in* God, And knowest his will, and *discernest* the
19 things that *differ,* being instructed out of the law: And
art confident that thyself art a guide *to* the blind, a
20 light of them *that* are in darkness, An instructor of the
ignorant, a teacher of babes, *having* the form of knowledge
21 and . . truth in the law: Thou *that* teachest another,
dost not teach thyself: thou that *proclaimest,* a man
22 should not steal, dost . . steal: Thou that sayest, A
man should not commit adultery, dost . . commit
adultery: thou that abhorrest idols, *committest* sacrilege.
23 Thou that *gloriest in* the law, *by transgressing* the law
24 dishonourest thou God? For the name of God is blas-
phemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written,
25 . . Circumcision *indeed* profiteth, if thou *keepest* the
law; but if thou *art a transgressor* of the law, thy cir-
26 cumcision is *become* uncircumcision. Therefore if the
uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall
not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?
27 *Yea,* the uncircumcision *that* is by nature, *fulfilling* the
law, *shall* judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision
28 *transgressest* the law. For he is not a Jew, *who* is *an*
outward Jew, neither is that circumcision which is
29 *apparent* in the flesh. But he is a Jew, *who* is one
inwardly, and circumcision is that of the heart, in the
spirit, not in the letter: whose praise is not *from* men,
but *from* God.

3 What *then is the advantage of* the Jew, or what *the*
profit of the circumcision? Much every way; chiefly
3 *in* that *they were entrusted with* the oracles of God. For
what if some *believed not?* Shall their unbelief *disannul*
4 the *faithfulness* of God? God forbid: . . let God be
true, *and* every man a liar; as it is written, That thou
mightest be justified in *the saying,* and mightest over-
5 come when thou art judged. But if our unrighteousness
commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say?
Is *not God unjust,* who taketh vengeance? I speak as a
6 man. God forbid, *otherwise* how *should* God judge the
7 world? *But* if the truth of God *hath* abounded *to his*
glory through my lie, why . . am I *still* judged as a
8 sinner? And *why may we not* (as we *are slandered,* and
as some affirm *us to* say) . . do evil, that good may
come? Whose condemnation is just.
9 What then? Are we better than they? In no wise:
for we have before proved *all,* both Jews and Gentiles,

10 *to be* under sin. As it is written, There is none righteous,
11 no not one. There is none that understandeth; there
12 is none that seeketh after God. They *have all turned aside,* they are together become unprofitable; there is
13 none that doeth good, no not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used
14 deceit; the poison of asps *is* under their lips. Whose
15 mouth is full of cursing and bitterness; Their feet are
16 swift to shed blood; Destruction and misery are . .
17 their ways, *And they have not known the way of peace,*
18 *The fear of God is not before their eyes.* Now we know that *whatsoever* the law saith, it saith to them *that* are under the law; that every mouth may be stopped, and
20 all the world become guilty before God. Therefore *no flesh shall be justified in his sight by the works of the law;* for by the law is the knowledge of sin.
21 But now the righteousness of God *is manifested without the law,* being *attested* by the law and the prophets,
22 Even the righteousness of God, *by the faith* of Jesus Christ, *to* all and *upon* all that believe: for there is no
23 difference: For all have sinned, and are *fallen* short of
24 the glory of God, *And are* justified freely by his grace,
25 through the redemption *which* is in Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth . . a propitiation, through faith in his blood, *for a demonstration of* his righteousness, *by* the remission of *past sins* through the forbearance of
26 God: *For a demonstration, I* say, *of his righteousness in this present time,* that he might be just, and *yet* the justifier of him *that* believeth in Jesus.
27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what
28 law? Of works? Nay, but by the law of faith. We conclude *then,* that a man is justified by faith, without
29 the *works* of the law. Is *God* the God of the Jews only, and . . not also of the Gentiles? *Surely* of the Gentiles
30 also: Seeing it is one God *who* will justify the circumcision by faith, and *the* uncircumcision through *the same*
31 faith. Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

4 What shall we say then, That our father *Abraham* hath found *justification according to* the flesh? If
2 Abraham *was* justified by works, he hath whereof to
3 glory: but *he hath* not *in the sight* of God. For what saith the Scripture? Abraham believed God, *and* it was
4 *imputed to* him for righteousness. Now *to* him that worketh, *the reward is not reckoned of grace, but of debt.*
5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is *imputed to him* for
6 righteousness. *So* David also *affirmeth* the *happiness*

of the man *to* whom God imputeth righteousness without
7 works: *Happy* are they whose iniquities are forgiven,
8 and whose sins are covered; *Happy* is the man to whom
9 the Lord will not impute sin. Cometh this *happiness*
then *on* the circumcision only, or *on* the uncircumcision
also? For we say that faith was *imputed* to Abraham
10 for righteousness. How was it then *imputed?* When
he was in circumcision or in uncircumcision? Not in
11 circumcision, but in uncircumcision. And he received
the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of
the faith, which he had . . *in uncircumcision*, that he
might be the father of all *who* believe *in uncircumcision*,
12 that righteousness *may* be imputed *to* them also. And
the father of *the* circumcision to them, who . . *not only*
are of the circumcision, but also walk in the *footsteps* of
that faith of our father Abraham, which he had *in*
13 *uncircumcision*. For the promise, that he should be the
heir of the world, was not to Abraham or his seed *by*
14 the law, but *by* the righteousness of faith. For if they
who are of the law *are* heirs, faith is made void, and the
15 promise *of no* effect. Because the law worketh wrath:
16 for where no law is, there is no transgression. Therefore
it is of faith, that it might be *of* grace, *that* the promise
might be *firm* to all the seed; not *only to* that *also*
which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith
17 of Abraham, who is the father of us all, (As it is written,
I have *appointed* thee a father of many nations) before
God in whom he believed, *as quickening* the dead, and
18 *calling the* things *that are not*, as though they were: Who
against hope believed in hope, that he *should be* the
father of many nations, according to that which was
19 spoken, So shall thy seed be. And *not being* weak in
faith, he considered not his own body now dead, *being*
about *a* hundred years old, *nor* the deadness of Sarah's
20 womb. He staggered not at the promise of God through
unbelief, but was *strengthened* in faith, giving glory to
21 God, And being fully *assured*, that what he had promised
22 he was able also to perform. And therefore it was
23 imputed to him for righteousness. Now it was not
written *on his account only*, that it was imputed *unto*
24 him, But *on ours* also, to whom it *will* be imputed, if we
believe on him *who* raised up Jesus our Lord from the
25 dead, Who was delivered for our offences, and was
raised . . for our justification.

5 Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with
God, through our Lord Jesus Christ: By whom also we
2 have *had* access *through* faith into this grace wherein
3 we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. And

not only so, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing
4 that tribulation worketh patience, And patience experi-
5 ence, and experience hope; And hope *shameth us not,*
because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by
6 the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. For when we
were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for
7 the ungodly. *Now one will scarce die for a just man;*
yet *perhaps* for *the* good man *one* would even dare to die.
8 But God *recommendeth* his love toward us, in that, while
9 we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more
then being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved
10 from wrath through him. For if, *being* enemies, we
were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much
more being reconciled, we shall be saved *through* his life.
11 And not only so, but we also *glory* in God, through our
Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the
reconciliation.
12 *Therefore* as by one man sin entered into the world,
and death by sin, *even* so death passed *upon* all men,
13 *in* that all . . sinned. For until the law, sin was in
the world: but sin is not imputed, *where* there is no law.
14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even
over them that had not sinned after the *likeness* of
Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was
15 to come. *Yet* not as the offence, so also is the free gift.
For if *by* the offence of one many *died,* much more the
grace of God, and the gift by grace, *that of* one man,
16 Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. And not as
the loss by one that sinned, so *is* the gift; for the *sentence*
was by one *offence* to condemnation; but the free gift
17 is of many offences unto justification. For if *through*
one man's offence, death reigned by one. they *who*
receive the abundance of grace and the gift of righteous-
ness, shall *much more reign* in life by one, *even* Jesus
18 Christ. *As* therefore *by one offence the sentence of death*
came upon all men to condemnation, so *also* by *one*
righteousness the free gift came *upon* all men *to* justifica-
19 tion of life. For as by the *disobedience of one man,*
many were *constituted* sinners, so by the obedience of
20 one, *many shall be constituted* righteous. *But* the law
came in between, that the offence might abound: *yet*
21 where sin *abounded,* grace did much more abound: That
as sin had reigned *through* death, so *grace also might reign*
through righteousness to eternal life, by Jesus Christ
our Lord.

6 What shall we say, then? *We will* continue in sin,
that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we
3 *who* are dead to sin live any longer therein? Know ye

not, that *as* many of us as *have been* baptized *into* Jesus
4 Christ, *have been* baptized into his death? Therefore
we are buried with him *through* baptism into death, that
as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the
5 Father, . . so we also should walk in newness of life. For
if we have been planted together in the likeness of his
death, we shall be also *in the likeness* of his resurrection:
6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him,
that the body of sin might be destroyed, that we might
7 *no longer* serve sin. For he that is dead is free from sin.
8 *And we believe,* that if we *are* dead with Christ, we shall
9 also live with him: Knowing that Christ being raised
from the dead, dieth no more; death no more hath
10 dominion over him. For in that he died, he died *to*
sin once *for all;* but in that he liveth, he liveth unto
11 God. *So* reckon ye yourselves to be dead indeed *to*
sin, but alive *to* God, through Jesus Christ our Lord.
12 *Therefore* let not sin reign in your mortal body, *to obey*
13 it in the *desires* thereof. Neither *present* your members
to sin as instruments of unrighteousness; but *present*
yourselves *to* God, as alive from the dead, and your
14 members *to* God, *as instruments of righteousness:* For
sin shall not have dominion over you; for ye are not
under the law, but under grace.
15 What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under
16 the law, but under grace? God forbid. Know ye not,
that to whom ye *present* yourselves servants to obey,
his servants ye are whom ye obey? Whether of sin
17 unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? But
thanks be to God, that *whereas* ye were the servants of
sin, ye have *now obeyed* from the heart *the* form of doc-
18 trine *into which ye have been delivered.* Being then *set*
free from sin, ye *are become* the servants of righteousness.
19 I speak after the manner of men, because of the *weakness*
of your flesh. As ye have *presented* your members
servants to uncleanness and . . iniquity unto iniquity,
so now *present* your members servants *of* righteousness
20 unto holiness. For when ye were the servants of sin,
21 ye were free from righteousness. What fruit had ye
then *from* those things whereof ye are now ashamed?
22 For the end of those things *is* death. But now being
made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye
have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting
23 life. For *death is the wages of sin; but eternal life is the*
gift of God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

7 Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that
know the law,) *that* the law hath dominion over a man
2 as long as he liveth! For the *married woman is* bound to

her husband *while he is alive;* but if *her* husband be
3 dead, she is *freed* from the law of her husband. *Therefore* if she *marry* another man *while her husband liveth,* she *will* be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law, so *as to be* no adulteress,
4 though she *marry* another man. *Therefore* ye also, *my brethren,* are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye *might* be married to another, even to him who *was* raised from the dead, that we *may* bring
5 forth fruit *to* God. For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, *wrought* in our
6 members, *so as* to bring forth fruit unto death. But now we are *freed* from the law, being dead *unto that whereby* we were held, *so* that we serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.
7 What shall we say then? *That the law is sin?* God forbid. *Yea,* I *should not have known* sin, but *for* the law. I had not known lust, *unless* the law had said, Thou shalt
8 not covet. But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of *desire:* for without
9 the law sin was dead. *And* I was *once* alive without the law; but when the commandment came, sin revived,
10 and I died. And the commandment which was *intended*
11 for life, *this I found unto death.* For sin taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.
12 *So that* the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.
13 Was then that which is good made death *to* me? God forbid. But sin; that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good: *so* that sin might
14 by the commandment *become* exceeding sinful. We know that the law is spiritual; but I am carnal, sold
15 under sin. For that which I do, I *approve* not; for *I do not practise what I would,* but what I hate, *that I do.*
16 If then I do *what* I would not, I consent *to* the law that
17 it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin
18 that dwelleth in me. For I know that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me, but how to perform *what* is good, I find not.
19 For the good that I would, I do not; but the evil which
20 I would not, that I do. Now, if I do that *which* I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in
21 me. I find then a law, that when I would do good, evil
22 is present with me. For I delight in the law of God
23 after the inward man. But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and *captivating* me to the law of sin, which is in my members.
24 O wretched man that I am! Who shall deliver me from
25 the body of this death? I thank God, through Jesus

Christ our Lord. So then *I myself with my mind* serve
the law of God, but with *my* flesh the law of sin.

8 *Therefore there is* now no condemnation *to those that*
are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh but
2 after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in
Christ Jesus hath *freed* me from the law of sin and
3 death. For what the law could not do in that it was
weak through the flesh, God *hath done:* sending his own
Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, *to be a sacrifice for*
4 *sin, he* hath condemned sin in the flesh: That the
righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who
5 walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. They
that are after the flesh, mind the things of the flesh;
but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the
6 Spirit. *Now* to be carnally-minded is death; but to be
7 spiritually-minded is life and peace: Because *to be*
carnally-minded is enmity against God; for it is not
8 subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So
9 then they *who* are in the flesh cannot please God. But
ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if the Spirit of
God dwell in *you. And* if any man have not the Spirit
10 of Christ, he is none of his. *Now* if Christ be in you,
the body *indeed* is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is
11 life because of righteousness. *And* if the Spirit of him
that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that
raised up Christ from the dead, *will* also quicken your
mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.
12 Therefore, brethren, we *are not debtors* to the flesh,
13 to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh,
ye shall die; but if ye through the Spirit . . mortify
14 the deeds of the *flesh,* ye shall live. For as many as are
15 led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For
ye have not received the spirit of bondage again *unto*
fear, but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby
16 we cry Abba, Father. The *same* Spirit beareth witness
17 with our spirits, that we are the children of God. And
if children, then heirs, heirs of God, and joint heirs with
Christ: if we suffer with him, that we *may also* be
18 glorified *with him.* For I reckon that the sufferings of
the present time are not worthy to be compared with
19 the glory which shall be revealed in us. For the earnest
expectation of the *creation* waiteth for the *revelation* of
20 the sons of God. For the *creation* was made subject
to vanity, not willingly, but by *him who subjected* it,
21 In hope *that* the *creation* itself shall be delivered from the
bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the
22 children of God. For we know that the whole creation
groaneth *together* and travaileth together until now.

3 *And* not only they, but *even we ourselves, who* have the
first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within
ourselves, waiting for the adoption, the redemption of
4 our body. For we are saved by hope; but hope that is
seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, *how does* he yet
5 hope for? But if we hope for *what* we see not, *we*
6 *patiently* wait for it. Likewise the Spirit also helpeth
our infirmities; for we know not what we should pray
for as we ought; but the Spirit itself maketh intercession
7 for us, with groanings which cannot be uttered. *But*
he who searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the
mind of the Spirit: *for* he maketh intercession for the
saints according to God.
8 And we know, that all things work together for good
to them that love God, to them *that* are *called* according
9 to his purpose. For whom he *foreknew*, he also *pre-*
destinated, conformable to the image of his Son, that he
10 might be the first-born among many brethren. *And*
whom he *predestinated*, them he also called; and whom
he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified,
11 them he also glorified. What shall we *say then* to these
12 things? if God be for us, who can be against us? He
that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for
us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all
13 things? Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's
14 elect? It is God that justifieth, Who is he that con-
demneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is
risen again, who is *also* at the right hand of God, who
15 *likewise* maketh intercession for us. Who shall separate
us from the love of Christ? Shall *affliction*, or distress,
or persecution, or *hunger*, or nakedness, or peril, or
16 sword? (As it is written, For thy sake we are killed
all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the
17 slaughter.) Nay, in all these things we *more than con-*
18 *quer*, through him *who hath* loved us. For I am per-
suaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor
principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things
19 to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature,
shall be able to separate us from the love of God,
which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

9 I say the truth in Christ, I lie not; my conscience also
bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost, That I have great
3 *sorrow* and continual *anguish* in my heart. For I could
wish that *I* myself were accursed from Christ, for my
4 brethren, my kinsmen *after* the flesh: Who are Israelites,
whose is the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants,
and the giving of the law, and the *worship* of God, and
5 the promises: Whose are the fathers, and *from* whom,

according to the flesh, Christ came, who is over all,
6 God blessed for ever. Not as *if* the word of God *had*
fallen to the ground; for *all are* not Israel, *who* are of
7 Israel. Neither because they are the seed of Abraham,
are they all children, but, In Isaac shall thy seed be
8 called: That is, *not* the children of the flesh are the
children of God, but the children of promise are counted
9 for the seed. For this is the word of *the* promise, At
10 this time *I will* come, and Sarah shall have a son. And
not only this, but when Rebecca also had conceived by
11 one *man,* our father Isaac, The children being not yet
born, neither having done any good or evil, (that the
purpose of God according to election might stand, not
12 of works, but of him that *called,*) It was said *to* her, The
13 elder shall serve the younger. As it is written, *I have*
loved Jacob, *and hated* Esau.
14 What shall we say then? Is there *injustice* with God?
15 God forbid. For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy
on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion
16 on whom I will have compassion. It is not *therefore* of
him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God
17 that showeth mercy. *Moreover,* the Scripture saith *to*
Pharaoh, For *this very thing* have I raised thee up, that
I may show my power in thee, and that my name *may*
18 be declared *through* all the earth. *So then* he hath
mercy on whom he *willeth,* and whom *he willeth he hard-*
19 *eneth. But* thou wilt say *to* me, Why doth he *still* find
20 fault? For who hath resisted his will? Nay, but *who*
art thou, O man, that repliest against God! Shall the
thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou
21 made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the
clay, *out* of the same *mass* to make one vessel *to* honour,
22 and another *to* dishonour? What if God *being* willing
to show his wrath, and to make his power known, *yet*
endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath
23 fitted *for* destruction? And that he might make known
the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, *whom* he
24 had *before* prepared *for* glory? Even us whom he hath
called, not *only of the Jews,* but also of the Gentiles:
25 As he said also in Hosea, I will call them my people,
who were not my people, and her beloved *who* was not
26 beloved. And it shall come to pass, in the place where
it was said *to* them, Ye are not my people, there shall
27 they be called the *sons* of the living God. *But* Isaiah
crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the
children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, *the* remnant
28 *only* shall be saved. For he *is finishing* and *cutting*
short *his account* in righteousness; *for* the *Lord will*
29 *make a short account upon earth.* And as Isaiah *had*

said before, *Unless* the Lord of *hosts* had left us a seed,
we had been as Sodom, and *had* been made like
30 Gomorrah. What shall we say then? That the Gen-
tiles *who* followed not after righteousness, have attained
to righteousness, even the righteousness which is *by*
31 faith: But Israel, *following* after the law of righteousness,
32 hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Where-
fore? because they sought it not by faith but as it were
33 by works; for they stumbled at *the* stumbling-stone; As
it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a *stone of stumbling*,
and *a* rock of offence: and *every one that* believeth shall
not be ashamed.

10 Brethren, *the desire of my heart*, and *my* prayer to
God for Israel is, that they *may* be saved. For I
2 bear them record, that they have a zeal *for* God, but
3 not according to knowledge. For they being ignorant of
the righteousness of God, and *seeking* to establish their
own righteousness, have not submitted *to* the righteous-
4 ness of God. For Christ is the end of the law for right-
5 eousness to every one that believeth. For Moses
describeth the righteousness which is *by* the law, The
6 man *who doth these* things shall live by them. But the
righteousness which is *by* faith speaketh *thus:* Say not
in *thy* heart, who shall ascend into heaven? (that is,
7 to bring Christ down:) Or who shall descend into the
abyss? (that is, to bring Christ *again* from the dead.)
8 But what saith *he?* The word is nigh thee, even in thy
mouth, and in thy heart; that is, the word of faith
9 which we preach: That if thou confess with thy mouth
the Lord Jesus, and believe in *thy* heart that God raised
10 him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the
heart man believeth *to* righteousness, and with the
mouth confession is made *to* salvation.
11 For the Scripture saith, *Every one that* believeth on
12 him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference
between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord *of*
13 all is rich *to* all that call *upon* him. For whosoever shall
14 call *upon* the name of the Lord shall be saved. *But*
how shall they call on him, in whom they have not
believed? And how shall they believe in him, of whom
they have not heard? And how shall they hear without
15 a preacher? *But* how shall they preach, *unless* they be
sent? As it is written, How beautiful are the feet of
them *who bring the good tidings* of peace, *who* bring *the*
glad tidings of good things!
16 But *all have not obeyed* the Gospel. For Isaiah *saith*,
17 Lord, who hath believed our report? *Faith then cometh*
18 *by hearing*, and hearing by the word of God. But I

say, Have they not heard? Yes, verily; their *voice is*
gone into all the earth, and their words *to* the ends of
19 the world. But I say, *Hath* not Israel known? First,
Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them
that are not *a nation;* by a foolish nation I will anger
20 you. But Isaiah is very bold, and saith, I was found
by them that sought me not: I was made manifest *to*
21 them that asked not after me. *Whereas with regard* to
Israel he saith, All *the day have I* stretched forth my
hands to an *unbelieving* and gainsaying people.

11 I say then, Hath God *rejected* his people? God
forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of
2 Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God hath not
rejected his people *whom* he foreknew. *Know* ye not
what the Scripture saith of Elijah? how he *pleadeth with*
3 God against Israel: Lord, they have killed thy prophets,
and digged down thy altars; and I am left alone, and
4 they seek my life. But what saith the answer of God
to him? I have reserved to myself seven thousand men
5 who have not bowed the knee to Baal. *And so likewise*
at *the* present time, there is a remnant, according to
6 the election of grace. *But* if by grace, then it is no more
of works: *else* grace is no *longer* grace. *And* if it be of
works, then it is no more grace; *else* work is no *longer*
7 work. What then? Israel hath not obtained that
which he seeketh, but the election hath obtained, and
8 the rest were blinded: According as it is written, God
hath given them *a* spirit of slumber, eyes that they
should not see, and ears that they should not hear, unto
9 this day. And David saith, Let their table *become* a
snare, and a trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recom-
10 pense *to* them. Let their eyes be darkened that they
11 may not see, and bow down their back alway. I say
then, Have they stumbled *so as to fall?* God forbid.
But *by their fall* salvation is come *to* the Gentiles, to
12 provoke them to jealousy. *But* if *their* fall be the
riches of the world, and *their loss* the riches of the
13 Gentiles, how much more their fulness? For I speak
to you Gentiles, as I am the apostle of the Gentiles.
14 I magnify *my* office: If by any means I may provoke
to *jealousy those who are* my flesh, and save some of
15 them. For if the casting away of them be the *reconciling*
of the world, what *will* the receiving of them be, but
16 life from the dead? For if the first fruits be holy, *so is*
the lump: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.
17 And if some of the branches *were* broken off, and thou
being a wild olive tree wert grafted in among them,
and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the

18 olive tree, Boast not against the branches, but if thou
boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.
19 *Wilt thou* say then, The branches were broken off, that
20 I might be grafted in? Well; they were broken off
for unbelief, and thou standest by faith. Be not high-
21 minded, but fear. For if God *spared* not the natural
22 branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee. Behold
therefore the goodness and *the* severity of God! *Toward*
them that fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if
thou continue in his goodness; *else shalt thou* also be
23 cut off. And they, if they *do not continue* in unbelief,
shall be grafted in; for God is able to graft them in
24 again. For if thou wert cut *off* from the *natural wild*
olive tree, and grafted contrary to nature into a good
olive tree; how much more shall these, *who are* natural
25 branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? *Brethren,*
I would not that ye should be ignorant of this mystery,
(lest ye should be wise in your own conceits,) that *hard-*
ness is in part happened *to* Israel, *till* the fulness of the
26 Gentiles be come in; And so all Israel shall be saved,
as it is written, *The Deliverer shall come* out of Sion, and
27 shall turn away *iniquity* from Jacob. *And* this *is* my
covenant *with* them, when I shall take away their sins.
28 *With regard to* the Gospel, they are enemies for your
sake; but as *for* the election, they are beloved, for *the*
29 *sake of their fathers.* For the gifts and *the* calling of
30 God are without repentance. *As then ye were once*
disobedient to God, but have now obtained mercy through
31 their *disobedience:* So *these also have now been disobedient,*
that through your mercy they may *likewise find* mercy.
32 For God hath *shut up all together in disobedience,* that
33 he might have mercy upon all. O the *depth* of the riches,
and wisdom, and knowledge of God! How unsearchable
34 are his judgments and his ways past *tracing* out! For
who hath known the mind of the Lord? Or who hath
35 been his counsellor? Who hath first given to him, and
36 it shall be *repaid* him again? For of him, and through him,
and to him are all things: to *him be* glory for ever! Amen.

12 I *exhort* you therefore, brethren, by the *tender*
mercies of God, *to* present your bodies *unto God,* a
living sacrifice, holy, acceptable, which is your reasonable
2 service. And be not conformed to this world, but be
ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye
may prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and per-
3 fect will of God. *And I* say, through the grace *which is*
given *to* me, to every *one* that is among you, not to
think of himself *above what* he ought to think, but to
think soberly, according as God hath *distributed* to every

4 *one* the measure of faith. For as *in one body we have*
many members, and all members have not the same office,
5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and every
6 one members *of each other*. Having then gifts differing
according to the grace that is given us, whether *it be*
prophecy, let us prophesy according to the *analogy* of
7 faith: Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or
he that teacheth on teaching; or he that exhorteth, on
8 exhortation. He that *imparteth*, let him do it with
simplicity; he that *presideth*, with diligence; he that
showeth mercy, with cheerfulness.
9 Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which
10 is evil, cleave to that which is good. *In brotherly love*
be full of tender affection toward each other, in honour
11 preferring one another: Not slothful in business, fervent
12 in spirit, serving the Lord: *Rejoice* in hope, *be patient*
13 in tribulation, *continue* instant in prayer. *Communicate*
14 to the necessities of *the* saints, *pursue* hospitality. Bless
15 them *who* persecute you; bless and curse not. Rejoice
with them that rejoice, and weep with them that weep.
16 *Agree in the same affection toward each other.* Mind not
high, but condescend to *low things*. Be not wise in your
17 own conceit. *Render* to no man evil for evil. Provide
18 things honest in the sight of all men. If it be possible,
as much lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.
19 Dearly beloved, *revenge* not yourselves, but rather give
place unto wrath; for it is written, Vengeance is mine;
20 I will repay, saith the Lord. Therefore if *thy* enemy
hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink; for in
21 so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire *upon* his head. Be
not overcome *with* evil, but overcome evil with good.

13 Let every soul be subject *to* the *supreme* powers,
for there is no power but *from* God; the powers that
2 be are *appointed by* God. Whosoever therefore resisteth
the power, resisteth the *appointment* of God; and they
3 that resist shall receive to themselves *condemnation*. For
rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil.
Wouldst thou then not be afraid of the power? Do that
4 which is good, and thou shalt have praise *from it;* For
he is the *servant* of God to thee for good. But if thou
dost that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the
sword in vain; for he is the *servant* of God, *an avenger*
5 *for wrath against* him that *doth* evil. Wherefore ye
must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for
6 conscience sake. For this cause *ye pay* tribute also:
for they are *the ministers of God*, attending continually
7 *on* this very thing. Render therefore to all their dues:
tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom,

8 fear to whom fear, honour to whom honour. Owe no
man any thing, but love one another; for he that loveth
9 another, hath fulfilled the law. For this, Thou shalt
not commit adultery, thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not
steal, thou shalt not bear false witness, thou shalt not
covet, and if there be any other commandment, it is
summed up in this saying, Thou shalt love thy neighbour
10 as thyself. Love worketh no *evil* to his neighbour:
therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.
11 And *do this*, knowing the *season*, that *it is* high time
now to awake out of sleep; for *salvation is nearer to us*
12 *now than when we first believed.* The night is far spent;
the day is at hand; let us therefore *put* off the works of
13 darkness, and put on the armour of light. Let us walk
decently as in the day; not in *banqueting* and *drunken*
entertainments; not in *uncleannesses* and *wantonness*, not
14 in strife and *envy*. But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ,
and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the
desires thereof.

14 Him that is weak in the faith, receive; but not to
doubtful disputations. For one believeth that he may
2 eat all things; another who is weak, eateth herbs.
3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not:
and let not him that eateth not judge him that eateth;
4 for God hath received him. Who art thou that judgest
another's servant? To his own master he standeth or
falleth. Yea, he shall be *upheld;* for God is able to
5 *uphold him.* One man esteemeth one day *above another;*
another esteemeth every day alike; let every man be
6 fully persuaded in his own mind. He that regardeth the
day, regardeth it *to* the Lord; and he that regardeth
not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He
that eateth, eateth to the Lord; for he giveth God
thanks; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth
7 not, and giveth God thanks. For none of us liveth to
himself, and *none* dieth to himself. *But if* we live, we
live unto the Lord; and *if* we die, we die unto the Lord.
8 Whether *therefore we live* or die, we are the Lord's. For
to this end Christ both died and *lived*, that he might be
10 the Lord both of the dead and *of the* living. But why
dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou *despise*
thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment
11 seat of Christ. For it is written, As I live, saith the
Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue
12 shall confess to God. So then every one of us shall
13 give *an* account of himself to God. Let us *therefore no*
longer judge one another; but judge this rather, *not to*
14 *lay* a stumbling-block or a *scandal before* a brother. I

know, and am *assured* by the Lord Jesus, that *nothing is*
unclean of itself; but to him that *accounteth* any thing
15 to be unclean, *it is* unclean. But if thy brother *is*
grieved *by* thy meat, *thou no longer walkest* charitably.
Destroy not him *by* thy meat, for whom Christ died.
16 *Therefore* let not your good be evil spoken of. For the
17 kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness
18 and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. And he that in
these serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved
19 *by* men. Let us therefore *pursue* the things *that tend to*
20 peace, and *to mutual edification.* For meat destroy not
the work of God. All things indeed are pure: but it is
21 evil *to* that man who eateth with offence. It is good
not to eat flesh, *neither to* drink wine, nor *to do any thing*
whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or made
22 weak. Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God.
Happy *is* he that condemneth not himself in that thing
23 which he alloweth. *But* he that doubteth is *condemned*
if he eat, because *it is* not of faith; for whatsoever *is*
not of faith is sin.

15 *Therefore* we *who* are strong ought to bear the
infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves.
2 Let every one of us please his neighbour, for his good to
3 edification. For Christ pleased not himself; but as it
is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee,
4 fell *upon* me. For whatsoever things were written afore-
time, were written for our *instruction,* that we, through
patience and *consolation* of the Scriptures, *may* have
5 hope. Now the God of patience and consolation *give*
you to *think the same thing,* one *with* another, according
6 to Christ Jesus, That ye may with one mind and one
mouth glorify *the* God *and* Father of our Lord Jesus
7 Christ. Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ
8 also *hath* received *you,* to the glory of God. Now I
say, *Christ Jesus* was a *servant* of the circumcision, for
the truth of God, to confirm the promises made *to* the
9 fathers. And that the Gentiles might glorify God for
his mercy, as it is written, For this cause I will confess
10 to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name. And
again he saith, Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people.
11 And again, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laud
12 him, all ye people. And again Isaiah saith, There shall
be *the* root of Jesse, and he that *ariseth to rule* over the
13 Gentiles: in him shall the Gentiles *hope.* Now the God
of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that
ye may abound in hope *by* the power of the Holy Ghost.
14 And I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren,
that ye *likewise* are full of goodness, *being filled* with all

15 knowledge, *and* able to admonish one another. Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly *to*
you in some *respect*, as putting you in mind, because of
16 the grace *which* is given to me of God, That I should
be the *servant* of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering
the Gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles
17 *may* be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost. I
have therefore whereof *to* glory, through Jesus Christ,
18 in *the* things *pertaining* to God. For I will not dare to
speak of *any thing* which Christ hath not wrought by
me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,
19 Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the
Spirit of God, so that *I have fully preached the Gospel of*
Christ, from Jerusalem round about, as far as Illyricum:
20 *Striving so* to preach the Gospel, not where Christ *had*
been named, lest I should build upon another man's
21 foundation. But as it is written, *They* to whom he
was not spoken of, shall see; and they that have not
22 heard shall understand. *Therefore* I was also *long*
23 hindered from coming to you. But now, having no
longer place in these *countries*, and having *had* a great
24 desire for many years to come *to* you, *Whenever I go*
into Spain, *I hope to see you as I pass by*, and to be
brought *forward by you in my way thither*, if first I *may*
be somewhat *satisfied* with your company.
25 But *I am now going to* Jerusalem, *serving* the saints.
26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to
make a contribution for the poor *of the* saints *that* are *in*
27 Jerusalem. It hath pleased them, and *they are their*
debtors. For if the Gentiles have *partaken* of their
spiritual things, *they ought* to minister *to* them in carnal
28 things. When therefore I have performed this, and
sealed to them this fruit, I will *go* by you into Spain.
29 And I *know* that when I come *to* you I shall come in the
30 fulness of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ. Now I
beseech you, brethren, *by* our Lord Jesus Christ, and *by*
the love of the Spirit, *to strive* together with me, in
31 your prayers to God for me, That I may be delivered
from *the unbelievers* in Judea, and that my service *at*
32 *Jerusalem* may be *acceptable to* the saints: That I may
come *to* you with joy by the will of God, and may *be*
33 *refreshed together* with you. Now the God of peace be
with you all.

16 I commend unto you Phebe our sister, *who* is a
servant of the Church in Cenchrea. That ye *may*
2 receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and *help*
her in whatsoever business she *needeth* you: for she
3 hath been a *helper* of many, and of myself also. *Salute*

Priscilla and Aquila, my *fellow labourers* in Christ Jesus:
4 Who *for my life have laid down their own necks; to* whom
not *I alone owe my thanks,* but *likewise* all the Churches
5 of the Gentiles. *Salute also* the Church that is in their
house. Salute my beloved Epenetus, who is the first
6 fruits of Asia unto Christ. *Salute* Mary, who *hath*
7 bestowed much labour on us. Salute Andronicus and
Junius, my kinsmen, and my fellow prisoners, who are
of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ
8 before me. *Salute* Amplias, my beloved in the Lord.
9 Salute Urbanus, our *fellow labourer* in Christ, and *my*
10 *beloved Stachys.* Salute Apelles, approved in Christ.
11 Salute *those* of the family of Aristobulus. Salute *my*
kinsman Herodion. Salute those *of the family* of Nar-
12 cissus, *who* are in the Lord. Salute Tryphena and
Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved
13 Persis, *who* hath laboured much in the Lord. Salute
Rufus, chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.
14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobus, Hermas,
15 and the brethren *who* are with them. Salute Philologus
and Julias, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all
16 the saints *that* are with them. Salute one another with
a holy kiss. The Churches of Christ salute you.
17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them *who* cause
divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which
18 ye have learned, and avoid them. For *such* serve not
the Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly, and by good
words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the *harm-*
19 *less.* For your obedience is come abroad unto all men.
I *rejoice* therefore on your behalf; but I would have
you wise *with regard to* that which is good, and simple
20 *with regard to that which* is evil. And the God of peace
shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace
of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.
21 Timotheus my fellow *labourer,* and Lucius, and Jason,
22 and Sosipater my kinsmen, salute you. I, Tertius, who
23 wrote this epistle salute you in the Lord. Gaius, *my*
host, and of the whole Church, saluteth you. Erastus,
the chamberlain of the city, saluteth you, and Quartus,
24 a brother. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with
you all.
25 Now to him *who is able* to stablish you according to
my Gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, (accord-
ing to the revelation of the mystery kept secret since
26 the world began, But now made manifest and by the
Scriptures of the prophets, according to the command-
ment of the *eternal* God, made known to all nations for
27 the obedience of faith:) To *the only wise God, to him* be
glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen!

ST. PAUL'S
First Epistle to the CORINTHIANS

CORINTH was a city of Achaia, situate on the Isthmus which joins Peloponnesus, now called The Morea, to the rest of Greece. Being so advantageously situated for trade, the inhabitants of it abounded in riches, which, by too natural a consequence, led them into luxury, lewdness, and all manner of vice.

Yet even here St. Paul planted a numerous church, chiefly of heathen converts; to whom, about three years after he had left Corinth, he wrote this epistle from Ephesus: as well to correct various disorders of which they were guilty, as to answer some questions which they had proposed to him.

I. CORINTHIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ, through
2 the will of God, and Sosthenes *the* brother. *To* the Church of God, which is *in* Corinth, to them *who* are sanctified *through* Christ Jesus, called *and holy*, with all that in every place call upon the name of *our Lord*
3 Jesus Christ, both theirs and ours: Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and . . the Lord Jesus Christ.
4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace
5 of God which is given *to* you by *Christ Jesus*. . . That in every thing ye are enriched *through* him, in all
6 utterance and in all knowledge; . . As the testimony of
7 Christ was confirmed *among* you: So that ye *are wanting* in no *good* gift, waiting for the *revelation* of our Lord
8 Jesus Christ, Who *will* also confirm you *to* the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.
9 God is faithful by whom ye were called into the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.
10 Now I *exhort* you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that

there be no *schisms* among you, but that ye be perfectly
joined together, in the same mind and in the same
11 judgment. For it hath been declared *to* me of you, my
brethren, by them . . of the *family* of Chloe, that there
12 are contentions among you. Now this I say, . . every
one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I
13 of Cephas, and I of Christ. Is Christ divided? Was
Paul crucified for you? Or were *you* baptized *into* the
14 name of Paul? I thank God that I baptized none of
15 you but Crispus and Gaius: Lest any should say that I
16 had baptized in *my* own name. . . I baptized also the
house of Stephanas. . . I know not *that* I baptized
any other.
17 For Christ *did not send me* to baptize, but to preach
the Gospel; *but* not with wisdom of *speech*, lest the cross
18 of Christ should be made of none effect. For the
doctrine of the cross is *indeed* to them that perish foolish-
ness: but *to* us *who* are saved, it is the power of God.
19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise,
20 and *abolish* the understanding of the prudent. Where
is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer
of this world? Hath not God made foolish the wisdom
21 of this world? For *since*, in the wisdom of God, the
world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the
22 foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For
whereas the Jews *demand* signs and the Greeks seek . .
23 wisdom, . . We preach Christ crucified, *to* the Jews a
24 stumbling block, and *to* the Greeks foolishness: But *to*
them *that* are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the
25 power of God, and the wisdom of God. Because the
foolishness of God is wiser than men, and the weakness
26 of God is stronger than men. *Behold* your calling,
brethren: . . that not many wise men after the flesh,
27 not many mighty, not many noble, are called. But
God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to *shame*
the wise, and the weak things of the world *hath God*
28 *chosen* to *shame* the things *that* are mighty: And *the*
base things of the world, and things *that* are despised,
hath God chosen; yea, . . things *that* are not, to bring
29 to nought *the* things that are; That no flesh *may* glory
30 *before God*. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who is
made *by God unto us wisdom*, and righteousness, and
31 sanctification, and redemption: That . . as it is written,
He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

2 And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with
loftiness of speech or of wisdom, declaring *to* you the
2 testimony of God. For I determined not to know any
thing among you save Jesus Christ and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in
4 much trembling. And my speech and my preaching
was not with *the persuasive* words of *human* wisdom, but
5 *with the* demonstration of the Spirit and of power; That
your faith *might* not stand in the wisdom of men, but
in the power of God.
6 *Yet* we speak wisdom among *the* perfect; *but* not the
wisdom of this world, nor of the *rulers* of this world,
7 that come to nought: But we speak the *hidden* wisdom
of God in a mystery, . . which God ordained before
8 the world *for* our glory; Which none of the *rulers* of
this world knew; for had they known it, they would
9 not have crucified the Lord of glory. But as it is
written, Eye hath not seen, nor *hath* ear heard, neither
hath it entered into the heart of man, *what* things . .
10 God hath prepared for them that love him. But God
hath revealed them *to* us by his Spirit; for the Spirit
11 searcheth all things, *even* the deep things of God. For
what man knoweth the things of a man, *but* the spirit
of a man which is in him? . . So the things of God *also*
12 knoweth no *one*, but the Spirit of God. Now we have
received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit
which is of God, that we *may* know the things *which*
13 are freely given to us of God. Which . . also we
speak, not in words *taught by human* wisdom, . . but
in those taught by the Spirit, explaining spiritual things
14 *by spiritual words.* But the natural man receiveth not
the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness
to him: neither can he know them, because they are
15 spiritually discerned. But *the spiritual man discerneth*
indeed all things, yet he himself is *discerned by* no man.
16 For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he
may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

3 And I, brethren, could not speak *to* you as unto
spiritual, but as unto carnal . . as unto babes in Christ.
2 I . . fed you with milk, . . not with meat; for . . ye
3 were not able to bear it: *nor are ye now able.* For ye
are *still* carnal: for *while* there is among you *emulation,*
and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk
4 *according to man?* For while one saith, I am of Paul,
and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal?
5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers
by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every
6 man? I . . planted, Apollos watered; but God gave
7 the increase. So then, neither is he that planteth any
thing, *nor* he that watereth; but God that giveth the
8 increase. *But* he that planteth and he that watereth
are one; and every *one* shall receive his own reward,

9 according to his own labour. For we are *fellow* labourers
of God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.
10 According to the grace of God . . given *to* me, as a wise
master builder I have laid the foundation, and another
buildeth thereon; but let every *one* take heed how he
11 buildeth *thereon.* For other foundation can no man lay
12 than *what* is laid, which is Jesus Christ: *And* if any
one build *on* this foundation, gold, silver, *costly* stones;
13 wood, hay, stubble; Every *one's* work shall be made
manifest; for the day shall declare it: *for* it *is* revealed
by fire; *yea,* the fire shall try every *one's* work, of
14 what sort it is. If any *one's* work *which he hath built*
15 *thereon* shall *remain,* he shall receive a reward. If any
one's work shall be *burnt,* he shall suffer loss, but . .
16 himself shall be saved, yet so as *through the* fire. Know
ye not that ye are the temple of God, and . . the Spirit
17 of God dwelleth in you? If any man *destroy* the temple
of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is
18 holy; which temple ye are. Let *none* deceive himself.
If any *one* among you *thinketh himself* to be wise, . . let
him become a fool *in this world,* that he may *become*
19 wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with
God; *as* it is written, He taketh the wise in their own
20 craftiness. And again, The Lord knoweth the *reasonings*
21 of the wise, that they are vain. Therefore let *none* glory
22 in men; for all things are yours: Whether Paul, or
Apollos, or Cephas; or the world, or life, or death, or
23 things present, or things to come, all are yours, And ye
are Christ's, and Christ is God's.

4 Let a man so account . . us, as *servants* of Christ,
and stewards of the mysteries of God. Moreover, it is
2 required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.
3 But it is a very small thing *with me* to be judged *by* you,
or *by any* man's judgment: yea, I judge not *my* . . self.
4 For I *am not conscious to* myself *of any thing,* yet am I
not hereby justified; but he that judgeth me is the
5 Lord. Therefore judge nothing before the time, until
the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden
things of darkness, and . . manifest the counsels of the
hearts. And then shall every man have praise *from* God.
6 . . These things, brethren, I have *by* a figure trans-
ferred to myself and . . Apollos, for your sakes; that
ye *may* learn *by* us not to think of men above *what* is
here written, that *ye may not be* puffed up for one against
7 another. For who maketh thee to differ from another?
And what hast thou *which* thou *hast* not received? *But*
if thou *hast* received it, why dost thou *boast,* as if thou
8 hadst not received it? Now ye are full: now ye are rich:

ye have reigned as kings without us. And I would . .
9 ye did reign, that we also might reign with you. For I
know assuredly, God hath set forth us, the apostles, last,
as . . appointed to death; for we are made a spectacle
10 *to* the world, *both* to angels and to men. We are fools
for Christ's sake; but ye are wise in Christ; we are
weak; but ye are strong; ye are honourable; but we
11 *without honour.* Even *to* this present hour we both
hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and
12 have no certain *abode*, And labour, working with our
own hands: being reviled, we bless: being persecuted
13 we suffer it: Being defamed, we entreat: we are made
as . . the filth of the world, and . . offscouring of all
14 things *to* this day. I *do not write* these things to shame
15 you, but as my beloved *children*, I warn you. For *if*
ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye
not many fathers; for *I have begotten you* in Christ
16 Jesus through the Gospel. I beseech you *therefore*, be
17 ye followers of me. For this cause *I* have sent to you
Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the
Lord, who shall *remind* you of my ways in Christ, as I
18 teach every where in every church. Now some are
19 puffed up, as *if* I would not come to you. But I will
come to you shortly, if the Lord *permit*, and will know,
not the speech of them who are puffed up, but the power.
20 For the kingdom of God is not in *speech*, but in power.
21 What will ye? *That* I come to you with a rod? Or in
love, and . . the spirit of meekness?

5 It is commonly *reported* that there is fornication among
you, and such fornication as is not *even heard of* among
the *heathens*, that one should have his father's wife.
2 *And are ye puffed up? Have ye not rather mourned*, that
he *who* hath done this deed might be taken . . from
3 among you? For I verily, as absent in body, but present
in spirit, have already, as *if* I were present, *judged* . .
4 him who hath so done this . . , In the name of our Lord
Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my
5 spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To
deliver such *a* one *to* Satan, for the destruction of the
flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the
6 Lord Jesus. Your glorying is not good: know ye not,
7 that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge
out . . the old leaven that ye may be a new lump, as
ye are unleavened; for our passover is slain for us,
8 *even Christ:* Therefore let us keep the feast, not with the
old leaven, *nor* with the leaven of wickedness and
malignity, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity
and truth.

9 I wrote *to* you in an epistle, Not to *converse* with *lewd*
10 *persons.* But not altogether with the *lewd persons* of this world, or the covetous, or the *rapacious*, or idolaters,
11 for then *ye must* go . . out of the world. But I have now written unto you, if any *who is named* a brother be *a lewd person*, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or *rapacious, not to converse with such a one,*
12 no, not to eat *with him.* For what have I to do to judge them . . that are without? Do not ye judge
13 them that are within? (But them that are without God *will judge:*) *And ye will take* away from among yourselves *the* wicked person.

6 Dare any of you, having a matter against another, *refer it to* the unjust, and *not to* the saints? *Know ye*
2 *not*, that the saints shall judge the world? And if the world *is* judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the
3 smallest matters? Know ye not that we shall judge angels? How much more things *pertaining* to this life?
4 If then ye have *any controversies* of things pertaining to this life, *do ye* set them to judge who are *of no* esteem in
5 the Church? I speak to your shame. *What, is there not so much as one* wise man among you, that shall be able
6 to judge between his brethren? But brother goeth to
7 law with brother, and *this* before the *infidels. Indeed there is altogether* a fault among you, *that ye have contests with each other.* Why do ye not rather *suffer* wrong?
8 Why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded? Nay, ye do wrong, and defraud *even* your brethren.
9 Know ye not that the *unjust* shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived, neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor the effeminate, nor *Sodom-*
10 *ites*, Nor thieves, nor *the* covetous, nor *revilers*, nor the
11 *rapacious*, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.
12 All things are lawful *for* me; but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me; but I will not
13 be brought under the power of any. Meats *are* for the belly, and the belly for meats; *yet* God *will* destroy both it and them. *But* the body is not for fornication, but
14 for the Lord, and the Lord for the body. And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise us up by
15 his . . power. Know ye not, that your bodies are . . members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of a harlot? God
16 forbid. . . Know ye not, that he *who* is joined to a harlot is one body? For *they* two, saith he, shall be

17 one flesh. But he that is joined *to* the Lord is one
18 spirit. Flee fornication. Every sin that a man *doth*, is
without the body; but he that committeth fornication,
19 sinneth against his own body. . . Know ye not, that
your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost, *who* is
in you, *whom* ye have *from* God? And ye are not
20 your own: For ye are bought with a price: therefore
glorify God *with* your body and your spirit, which are
God's.

7 Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote *to* me,
it is good for a man not to touch a woman. *Yet* to
2 avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife: and
3 let every woman have her own husband. Let the hus-
band render *the debt to* the wife; and *in like manner*
4 the wife *to* the husband. The wife hath not power *over*
her own body, but the husband: and *in like manner* . .
the husband also hath not power over his own body,
5 but the wife. *Withdraw* . . not *from each other, unless*
it be *by* consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves
up to fasting and prayer, and *may* come together again,
6 *lest* Satan tempt you . . *through* your incontinence. But
7 I *say* this by permission . . not *by way of precept.* For
I would that all men were even as . . myself: but every
one hath his proper gift *from* God, one after this manner,
and another after that.
8 *But* to the unmarried and the widows *I say*, It is good
9 for them if they *remain* even as I. But if they *have not*
power over themselves, let them marry; for it is better to
marry than to burn.
10 . . The married I command, yet not I, but the Lord,
11 *That* the wife depart *not* from her husband. But . . if
she depart let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to
her husband. And let not the husband put away his
12 wife. . . To the rest speak I, not the Lord. If any
brother hath an *unbelieving* wife, and she *consent* to dwell
13 with him, let him not put her away. And the *wife who*
hath an *unbelieving* husband, *that consenteth* to *live* with
14 her, let her not *put him away.* For the unbelieving
husband *hath been* sanctified by the wife; and the unbe-
lieving wife *hath been* sanctified by the husband. Else
were your children unclean; but now *they are* holy.
15 But if the *unbeliever* depart, let him depart: a brother
or a sister is not *enslaved* in such cases; but God hath
16 called us to peace. For *how* knowest thou, O wife, *but*
thou *mayest* save thy husband? Or how knowest thou,
17 O *husband, but* thou *mayest* save thy wife? But as God
hath distributed to every *one*, as the Lord hath called
every one, so let him walk. And *thus I ordain* in all *the*

18 Churches. Is any *one* called being circumcised? let him
not become uncircumcised: is any *one* called in uncir-
19 cumcision? let him not be circumcised. Circumcision
is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but keeping
20 the commandments of God. Let every *one in the calling*
21 wherein he *is* called, *therein* abide. *Wast* thou called,
being a *bond man?* care not for it: but if thou *canst* be
22 made free, use *it* rather. For he that is called *by* the
Lord, being a *bond man,* is the Lord's free man; and *in*
the like manner, he that is called being free, is the *bond*
23 *man* of Christ. Ye are bought with a price; *do not*
24 *become* the *bond slaves* of men. Brethren, let every *one*
wherein he is called, therein abide with God.
25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment
from the Lord; *but* I give my judgment as one *who*
26 hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful. I
apprehend, therefore, that this is good for the present
distress, . . that it *is* good for a man *to continue as*
27 *he is.* Art thou bound *to* a wife? seek not to be loosed:
28 art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife. *Yet* . .
if thou *dost* marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin
marry, she hath not sinned. Nevertheless, such *will*
29 have trouble in the flesh; but I spare you. But this
I say, brethren, the time is short: it remaineth, that
30 *even* they that have wives, be as *if* they had none: And
they that weep, as *if* they wept not; and they that
rejoice, as *if* they rejoiced not, and they that buy, as
31 *if* they possessed not; And they that use this world,
as not abusing it; for the fashion of this world passeth
32 away: *Now* I would have you without carefulness.
The unmarried man careth for the things *of* the Lord,
33 how he may please the Lord. But *the married* careth
for the things . . of the world, how he may please his
34 wife. There is *a* difference also between a wife and a
virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things
of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and . .
spirit: but *the married* careth for the things of the
35 world, how she may please her husband. And this I
say for your own profit, not that I may cast a snare
upon you, but . . that *ye may decently wait* upon the
36 Lord, *and* without distraction. But if any . . think
that he *acteth indecently* toward his virgin, if she *be*
above age, and need so require, let him do what he will,
37 he sinneth not: let them marry. Nevertheless, he that
standeth steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but
having power over his own will, and hath *determined this*
38 in his heart, *to* keep his virgin, *doth* well. So then he *also*
that giveth . . in marriage, *doth* well, but he that giveth
. . not in marriage, *doth* better.

39 The wife is bound . . as long as her husband liveth;
but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to *marry* . .
40 whom she will; only in the Lord. But she is happier
if she *continue as she is*, in my judgment; and I think
that I also have the Spirit of God.

8 Now as *to* things *sacrificed to* idols, we know: *for* all
of us have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but *love*
2 edifieth. And if any *one* think . . he knoweth any
thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.
3 But if any *one* love God, *he* is known *by* him. *I say,*
4 as *to* the eating of . . things, *sacrificed to* idols, we know
that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is
5 *no* God but one. For though there be that are called
gods, whether in heaven or *on* earth, (as there *are many*
6 *gods and many lords,*) *Yet* to us there is but one God,
the Father, *from* whom are all things, and we *for* him;
and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom *are* all things,
7 and we by him. *But* there is not in *all* men *this* knowl-
edge; for some *do even until now*, with *consciousness* of
the idol, eat it as *sacrificed to the* idol; and their con-
science, being weak, is defiled.
8 But meat commendeth us not to God; for neither
if we eat, are we the better, *nor* if we eat not, are we
9 the worse. But take heed, lest by any means this *your*
10 liberty become a stumbling block to the weak. For if
any *one* see thee, *who* hast knowledge, *sitting* at meat
in *an idol* temple, *will* not the conscience of him *that* is
weak be *encouraged* to eat *of the* things *sacrificed* to *the*
11 *idol?* And through thy knowledge shall the weak
12 brother perish, for whom Christ died. But when
ye sin *thus* against *your* brethren, and wound their
13 weak conscience, ye sin against Christ. Wherefore if
meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh
while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to
offend.

9 *Am I not free? Am I not an apostle?* Have I not
seen Jesus Christ our Lord? Are not ye my work in
2 the Lord? If I *am* not an apostle *to* others, yet . . I
3 am to you; for *ye are the seal* of my apostleship. . . *My*
4 answer to them *who* examine me is this: Have we not
5 power to eat and to drink? Have we not power to lead
about a sister, a wife, as well as *the* other apostles, and
6 brethren of the Lord, and *Peter?* Or I only and Barna-
7 bas, have *we not* power to forbear working? Who *ever*
serveth as a soldier at his own *charge?* Who planteth a
vineyard, and *doth not eat* its fruit . . ? Or who feedeth

8 a flock, and *doth not eat* of the milk of the flock? *Do I*
speak these things as a man? *Doth* not the law also
9 *speak* the same? For it is written in the law of Moses,
Thou shalt not muzzle the . . ox that *treadeth* out the
10 corn. Doth God take care for oxen? Or *speaketh* he
. . altogether for our sakes? for our sakes . . *it was*
written: *for* he *who* plougheth *ought* to plough in hope,
and he that thresheth in hope *ought to* be *a* partaker of
11 his hope. If we have sown unto you spiritual things,
is it a great *matter*, if we shall reap your carnal things?
12 If others *partake* of this power over you, *do* not we rather?
Yet we have not used this power: but *we* suffer all things
lest we should *give any hinderance to* the Gospel of Christ.
13 *Know* ye not that they *who are employed* about holy
things, *are fed out* of the temple? And they *who* wait
14 at the altar, are partakers with the altar? So *also* hath
the Lord ordained, that they *who* preach the Gospel
15 should live of the Gospel. But I have used none of
these things; *nor* have I written *thus*, that it *might* be
done so unto me: for it were better for me to die, than
16 that any man should make *this* my glorying void. For
if I preach the Gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for
a necessity *lieth* upon me, *and* wo . . *to* me if I preach
17 not the Gospel. If *indeed* I do this willingly, I have a
reward; but if *unwillingly*, *yet* a dispensation is *entrusted*
18 to me. What *then is* my reward? . . that when I
preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel . . without
19 charge, that I abuse not my power in the Gospel. For
though I *am* free from all men, . . I made myself *the*
20 servant *of* all, that I might gain the more. *To* the Jews
I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews: to them
that are under the law, as under the law, that I might
21 gain them that are under the law: To them that are
without *the* law, as without *the* law, (being not without
the law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I
22 might gain them that are without *the* law. To the
weak *I became* as weak, that I might gain the weak:
I *became* all things to all men, that *by all means* I might
23 save some. And this I do for the Gospel's sake, that
24 I *may* be partaker thereof with you. Know ye not,
that they *who* run in *the* race, *all run:* but one receiveth
25 the prize? So run that ye may obtain. And every *one*
that *contendeth*, . . is temperate in all things: *and* they
indeed, to obtain a corruptible crown, but we an incor-
26 ruptible. I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; *I so*
27 fight, not as one that beateth the air. But I keep under
my body, and bring it *into* subjection, lest by any
means, *after having* preached to others, I myself should
become a *reprobate.*

10 *Now* I would not *have you* ignorant, *brethren*, . . that . . our fathers were *all* under the cloud, and all
2 passed through the sea. And were all baptized unto
3 Moses, in the cloud and in the sea, And all *ate* the same
4 spiritual meat, And . . all *drank* the same spiritual drink (for they drank *out* of the spiritual rock which
5 followed them; and that rock was Christ.) Yet with *the most* of them God was not well pleased; *for* they
6 were overthrown in the wilderness. Now these things were our examples, *that we might not desire* evil things,
7 as they *desired.* Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them, as it is written, The people sat down to eat
8 and drink, and rose up to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one
9 day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were de-
10 stroyed *by* serpents. Neither murmur ye, as some of them . . murmured, and were destroyed *by* the de-
11 stroyer. Now all these things happened *to* them for *examples* and they *were* written for our admonition, *on*
12 whom the *ends of the ages* are come. *Therefore* let him
13 that *most assuredly standeth*, take heed lest he fall. There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to man; *and* God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above *your ability*, but will with the temptation *make also* a way to escape, that ye may be able to
14 bear it. Wherefore, my . . beloved, flee from idolatry.
15 I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break,
17 is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we, being many, are one bread, and one body; for we are
18 all partakers of *the* one bread. *Consider* Israel after the flesh. Are not they *who* eat of the sacrifices, partakers
19 of the altar? What say I then? That *a thing* sacrificed
20 to idols is any thing? Or that an idol is any thing? But . . *that what* the *heathens* sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God. *Now* I would not that ye should
21 *be partakers* with devils. Ye cannot drink . . the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils; ye cannot be partakers of *the table of the Lord*, and . . the table of devils.
22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger
23 than he? All things are lawful for me; but all things are not expedient; all things are lawful for me; but all
24 things edify not. Let no *one* seek his own, but every
25 *one* another's *welfare.* *Whatever* is sold in the shambles
26 . . eat, asking no questions for conscience' sake. For
27 the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof. And if any of the *unbelievers invite* you, and ye are disposed

to go, *eat whatever is set before you,* asking no questions
28 for conscience' sake. But if any *one* say *to* you, This
hath been sacrificed to an idol, eat not, for his sake that
29 *showed thee,* and for conscience' sake. Conscience I say,
not thy own, but *that* of the other: for why is my liberty
30 judged *by another's* conscience? For if I by grace *am* a
partaker, why am I *blamed* for that for which I give
31 thanks? *Therefore whether* ye eat or drink, or whatso-
32 ever ye do, do all to the glory of God. Give *no* offence
either to the Jews, *or* to the Gentiles, *or* to the Church
33 of God: Even as I please all men in all things, not
seeking *my* own profit, but *that* of many, that they may
be saved.

11 Be ye followers of me, . . as I also am of Christ.
Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me
2 in all things, and keep the *orders,* as I delivered them
3 to you. But I would have you know that the head of
every man is Christ, and the head of the woman *is* the
4 man, and the head of Christ is God. Every man praying
or prophesying *with* his head covered, dishonoureth his
5 head. But every woman *praying* or *prophesying* with
her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head; for *it* is the
6 *same* as if she were *shaved. Therefore* if a woman *is* not
covered, let her also be *shaved:* but if it be . . shameful
for a woman *to have her hair* shaved *off,* or *cut short,* let
7 her be covered. . . A man indeed ought not to *have* his
head *covered, being* the image and glory of God; but the
8 woman is the glory of the man. For the man is not
9 of the woman, but the woman of the man. Neither was
the man created for the *sake of the* woman, but the
10 woman for *the sake of* the man. For this cause *also* the
woman ought to have *a veil upon* her head, because of
11 the angels: Nevertheless, neither is the man without
the woman, *nor* the woman without the man, in the
12 Lord. *And* as the woman *was* of the man, . . so *also*
the man *is* by the woman; but all things *are* of God.
13 Judge *of* yourselves: is it *decent* for a woman to pray
14 to God uncovered? Doth not nature itself teach you,
that *for* a man *to* have long hair, is a *disgrace* to him?
15 *Whereas for* a woman to have long hair, is a glory to her;
16 for her hair *was* given her *instead of a veil.* But if any
one be *resolved to be* contentious, we have no such
custom, neither the Churches of God.
17 *But* in this which I declare, . . I praise you not, that
ye come together not for the better, but for the worse.
18 For first, . . when ye come together in the Church,
I hear there *are schisms* among you (and I partly
19 believe it. For there must be heresies *also* among you,

20 that *the approved among you may be manifest*). *Therefore*
when ye come together into one place, *it* is not *eating*
21 the Lord's Supper. For in eating every one taketh
before *another* his own supper, and one is hungry, another
22 *drinks largely*. What! have ye not houses to eat and
drink in? or *do* ye despise the Church of God, and
shame them that have not? What shall I say to you?
23 shall I praise you in this? I praise you not. For I . .
received *from* the Lord *what* I also delivered *to* you, that
the Lord Jesus, the night in which he was betrayed,
24 took bread, And when he had given thanks he brake it,
and said, . . This is my body, which is broken for you;
25 *do this* in remembrance of me. *In like* manner also he
took the cup *after* he had supped, saying, This cup is
the new *covenant* in my blood: *do this* as *often* as ye drink
26 it, in remembrance of me. For as often as ye eat this
bread, and drink this cup, ye show *forth* the Lord's
27 death till he come. *So that* whosoever *eateth* the bread
and *drinketh* the cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be
28 guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a
man examine himself, and so let him eat of *the* bread
29 and drink of *the* cup. For he that eateth and drinketh
unworthily, eateth and drinketh *judgment* to himself,
30 not *distinguishing* the Lord's body. For this cause
many are *sick and weak* among you, and many sleep.
31 For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be
32 judged. But when we are judged, we are chastened *by*
the Lord, that we *may* not be condemned with the world.
33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat,
34 *wait* one for another. And if any *one be hungry*, let him
eat at home, that ye come not together *to* condemnation.
And the rest I will set in order when I come.

12 Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would
not have you ignorant. Ye know that *when* ye were
2 *heathens*, *ye* were carried away *after* . . dumb idols, *as*
3 ye were led. *Therefore* I give you to *know*, that *as no*
one speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus accursed;
so no one can say, . . Jesus is the Lord, but by the
4 Holy Ghost. Now there are diversities of gifts, but the
5 same Spirit. And there are *diversities* of *ministrations*,
6 but the same Lord: And there are diversities of opera-
tions, but it is the same God *who* worketh all in all.
7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to *each*,
8 to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit,
the word of wisdom, to another *by the same Spirit*, the
9 word of knowledge; To another faith by the same Spirit;
10 to another the gift of healing by the same Spirit; To
another the working of miracles; to another prophecy;

to another *the* discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of
11 tongues. *But one and the . . same Spirit worketh all these,* dividing to every *one* severally as he willeth.
12 For as the body is one, and *yet* hath many members, *but* all the members of the *body,* many *as they are,* are
13 one body, so *is* Christ. For we *were* all *baptized by one Spirit into one body,* whether we *are* Jews or Gentiles, whether *slaves* or *freemen:* and *we have all drank of* one
14 Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many.
15 If the foot *should* say, Because I am not . . the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?
16 And if the ear *should* say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?
17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?
18 But now hath God set the members, every one in the
19 body as it hath pleased him. And if all were one mem-
20 ber, where were the body? *Whereas* now there are
21 *indeed* many members, yet but one body. And the eye cannot say *to* the hand, I have no need of thee; *or*
22 again, the head to the feet, I have no need of you. *Yea, the* members of the body, which *appear* to be *weaker,* are
23 *much more* necessary. And those *which* we think to be the less honourable *parts of the body,* . . these we *surround with* more abundant honour, and our uncomely
24 parts have more abundant comeliness. For our comely parts have no need; but God hath tempered the body together, *giving* more abundant honour to that . . which
25 lacked: That there *might* be no schism in the body, but that the members *might* have the same care *for* each
26 other; And whether one member suffer, all the members *might* suffer with it, or one member be honoured, all
27 the members *might* rejoice with it. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.
28 And God hath set in the Church, first, apostles, *secondly,* prophets, thirdly, teachers; afterward miracles, then gifts of healing, helps, governments, *different kinds*
29 of tongues. Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are
30 all teachers? *Have all miraculous powers?* Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? Do all
31 interpret? *Yet* covet earnestly the best gifts. But I show unto you a more excellent way.

13 Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not *love,* I am become as sounding
2 brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so *as to* remove

3 mountains, and have not *love*, I am nothing. And
though I *give* all my goods to feed the poor, and *deliver*
up my body to be burned, and have not *love*, it profiteth
4 me nothing. *Love* suffereth long and is kind; *love*
envieth not; *love acteth not rashly*, is not puffed up:
5 Doth not behave *indecently*, seeketh not her own, is
6 not . . provoked, thinketh no evil; Rejoiceth not in
7 iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth: *Covereth* all things,
believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all
8 things. *Love* never faileth: but whether there be
prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues,
they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall
9 vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy
10 in part. *And* when that which is perfect is come, then
11 that which is in part shall *vanish* away. When I was
a child I *talked* as a child; I understood as a child, I
reasoned as a child; but when I became a man, I put
12 away childish things. *And* now we see *by means of* a
glass *obscurely;* but then face to face: now I know in
part, but then *I shall* know, even as also I am known.
13 And now abide *these three*, faith, hope, *love;* but the
greatest of these is *love*.

14 Follow after *love:* and desire spiritual gifts; but
especially that ye may prophesy. For he that speaketh
2 in an unknown tongue, speaketh not *to* men, but *to*
God; for no *one* understandeth him, *though by* the Spirit
3 he speaketh mysteries: *Whereas* he that prophesieth,
speaketh *to* men to edification, and exhortation, and
4 comfort. He that speaketh in an unknown tongue,
edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth, edifieth the
5 Church. I would that ye all spake with tongues, but
rather that ye prophesied; for *he that prophesieth is*
greater than he that speaketh with tongues, *unless* he
6 interpret, that the Church may receive *edification*. Now,
brethren, if I come *to* you speaking with tongues, what
shall I profit you, *unless* I . . speak to you, either by
revelation or by knowledge, or by *prophecy*, or by doc-
7 trine? So *inanimate* things *which give a* sound, whether
pipe or harp, *unless* they give a distinction in the sounds,
8 how shall it be known what is piped or harped? *And*
if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who *will* prepare
9 himself *for* the battle? So likewise *unless* ye utter by
the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be
known what is spoken? For ye *will* speak *to* the air.
10 *Let there* be *ever* so many kinds of *languages* in the world,
11 and none of them without signification; *Yet* if I know
not the meaning of the *language*, I shall be *a barbarian*
to him that speaketh, and he that speaketh . . a barbar-

12 ian *to* me. . . So ye *also, seeing ye desire* spiritual gifts,
seek *to abound in them,* to the edifying of the Church.
13 *Therefore* let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue,
14 pray that he may interpret. For if I pray in an unknown
tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is
15 unfruitful. *What then is my duty?* I will pray with the
Spirit; *but* I will pray with the understanding also: I
will sing with the Spirit; *but* I will sing with the under-
16 standing also. *Otherwise if thou givest thanks* with the
Spirit, how shall he that *filleth* the *place* of *a private
person,* say Amen *to thy thanksgiving,* seeing he under-
17 standeth not what thou sayest? For thou verily givest
18 thanks well; *yet* the other is not edified. I thank God
19 *that* I speak with tongues more than *you* all. Yet in
the *congregation* I had rather speak five words with my
understanding, that . . I may teach others also, than
20 ten thousand words in an unknown tongue. Brethren,
be not children in understanding; . . in *wickedness* be
21 ye *as infants,* but in understanding be ye *grown* men. It
is written in the law, In foreign tongues and *with foreign*
lips will I speak *to* this people; and *neither so will* they
22 . . hear me, saith the Lord. So *that* tongues are for a
sign, not to *believers,* but to *unbelievers; whereas prophecy*
23 *is not for unbelievers,* but for *believers. Yet* . . if the
whole Church be *met* together, and all speak with
unknown tongues, and there come in *ignorant persons,* or
24 unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad? *Whereas*
if all prophesy, and there come in *an unbeliever,* or *an
ignorant person,* he is *convicted by* all, he is judged *by* all:
25 . . The secrets of his heart *are made manifest,* and so
falling down on his face, he will worship God, and *declare*
that God is *among* you of a truth.
26 *What a thing* is it, brethren, *that* when ye come
together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine,
hath a revelation, hath a tongue, hath an interpretation?
27 Let all things be done *to edification.* If any *one speak*
in an unknown tongue, let it be by two or *three at most,*
28 and that by course, let one interpret. But if there be
no interpreter, let him *be* silent in the Church, and let
29 him speak to himself and to God. Let *two or three of*
30 *the prophets* speak, and let the *rest* judge. *But* if any
thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the
31 first *be silent.* For ye may all prophesy one by one,
32 that all may learn, and all may be comforted. *For* the
33 spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets. For
God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in
34 all the Churches of the saints. Let your women *be
silent* in the Churches; for it is not permitted them *to*
speak, but *to be in subjection,* as the law *also saith.*

35 And if they *desire to* learn any thing, let them ask their
own husbands at home; for it is *indecent* for *a woman*
36 to speak in the *assembly*. *Did* the word of God *come*
37 out from you? or *did* it *come* out to you *alone?* If any
one think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him
take knowledge that the things *which* I write *to* you are
38 the commandments of the Lord. But if any *one* is
39 ignorant, let him be ignorant. *Therefore*, brethren, covet
to prophesy; *yet* forbid not to speak with tongues.
40 Let all things be done decently and in order.

15 Moreover, brethren, I declare *to* you the Gospel
which I preached *to* you, which also ye . . received,
2 and wherein ye stand. By which also ye are saved, if
ye *hold fast in what manner* I preached *to* you, unless ye
3 have believed in vain. For I delivered *to* you first, that
which I also received, *that* Christ died for our sins,
4 according to the Scriptures: And that he was buried,
and that he *was raised* the third day, according to the
5 Scriptures: And that he was seen *by* Cephas, then *by*
6 the twelve. *Afterward* he was seen *by* above five
hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part
7 remain *until now*, but some are fallen asleep. After *this*
8 he was seen *by* James, then *by* all the apostles. . . Last
9 of all he was seen *by* me also, as *an untimely birth.* For
I am the least of the apostles, *who* am not *worthy* to be
called an apostle, because I persecuted the Church of
10 God. But by the grace of God I am what I am; and
his grace . . *toward* me was not in vain, but I laboured
more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace
11 of God *that* was with me. *Whether therefore* I or they,
12 so we preach, and so ye believed. *But* if Christ *is*
preached, that he rose from the dead, how say some
among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?
13 *For* if there be no resurrection of the dead, *neither* is
14 Christ *raised.* And if Christ be not *raised*, then *is* our
15 preaching vain, and your faith is also vain. Yea, and
we are found false witnesses of God, because we have
testified *from* God, that he raised up Christ, whom he
16 *did not raise*, if . . the dead rise not. For if the dead
17 rise not, *neither* is Christ raised: And if Christ be not
18 raised, your faith is vain; ye are *still* in your sins. Then
19 *also they who sleep* in Christ are perished. If in this life
only we have hope in Christ, we are *more* miserable
20 *than* all men. But now is Christ risen from the dead, . .
21 the first fruits of them that slept. For since by man
came death, by man came also the resurrection of the
22 dead. For as *through* Adam all die, even so *through*
23 Christ shall all be made alive. But every *one* in his

own order: Christ, the first fruits, afterward they *who*
24 are Christ's at his coming. Then cometh the end, when
he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even
the Father, when he shall have *abolished* all rule and all
25 authority and power. For he must reign till he hath
26 put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that *is*
27 destroyed is death. For he hath put all things under
his feet. But when he saith, All things are put under
him, it is manifest, that he *who did put all things under*
28 *him, is excepted. But* when all things shall be *put* under
him, then shall the Son *himself also* be subject *to* him
that put all things under him, that God may be all in
29 all. Else what shall they do *who* are baptized for the
dead? If the dead rise not at all, why are they then
30 baptized for *them?* Why *are* we also in *danger* every
31 hour? I protest by your rejoicing, *brethren*, which I
32 have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily. If after the
manner of men I have fought with *wild* beasts at
Ephesus, what advantageth it me if the dead rise not?
33 Let us eat and drink; for to-morrow we die. Be not
deceived. Evil communications corrupt good manners.
34 Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not
the knowledge of God. I speak *this* to your shame.
35 But some *one* will say, How are the dead raised? . .
36 And with what *kind of* body do they come? Thou fool,
that which thou sowest is not quickened except it die:
37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not *the* body
that shall be, but bare grain, *perhaps* of wheat, or of *any*
38 other corn: But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased
39 him, and to *each of the seeds* its own body. All flesh *is*
not the same flesh; but there is one kind of flesh of
men, another . . of beasts, *another of birds, another of*
40 *fishes.* There are also *heavenly* bodies, and there are
earthly bodies: but the glory of the *heavenly is* one, and
41 *that of the earthly* another. *There is* one glory of the sun,
and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the
stars: *and* one star differeth from another star in glory.
42 So also is the resurrection of the dead: it is sown in
43 corruption; it is raised in incorruption. It is sown in
dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness;
44 it is raised in power. It is sown *an animal* body; it is
raised a spiritual body. There is *an animal* body, and
45 there is a spiritual body. And so it is written, The
first . . Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam
46 *is* a *quickening* Spirit. *Yet the spiritual body was not*
first, but *the animal;* . . afterward . . the spiritual.
47 The first man *was from* the earth, earthy; the second
48 man is the Lord from heaven. As *was* the earthy, such
are they also that are earthy, and as *was* the heavenly,

such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have
borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the
image of the heavenly.
But this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot
inherit the kingdom of God, neither doth corruption
inherit incorruption. Behold, I *tell* you a mystery; we
shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a
moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last *trumpet;*
for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be
raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this
corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal
put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have
put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on
immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying
that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O
death, where is thy sting? O *hades*, where is thy victory?
The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin *is* the
law. But thanks be to God, *who hath* given us the vic-
tory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my
beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmovable, always
abounding in the work of the Lord, *knowing* that your
labour is not in vain in the Lord.

16 Concerning the collection for the saints, as I have
ordered the Churches of Galatia, *so also* do ye. *On*
the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by
him in store *according as he hath been prospered,* that
there *may* be no *collections* when I come. And when
I am come, *whosoever* ye shall approve, . . them will
I send with letters, to *carry* your *gift* to Jerusalem. And
if it be *proper* that I also *should* go, they shall go with
me. Now I will come *to* you, *when I have passed* through
Macedonia, (for I pass through Macedonia). And *per-
haps I may stay,* yea, and winter with you, that ye may
bring me *forward* on my journey, whithersoever I go.
For I will not see you now *in my* way; but *hope* to *stay*
some time with you, if the Lord permit. But I will
stay at Ephesus *till* pentecost. For a *great and effectual
door* is opened *to* me, and there *are* many adversaries.
But if Timotheus come, see that he be with you
without fear, for he worketh the work of the Lord, *even
as I. Therefore let no man despise him,* but conduct *ye*
him *forward on his journey* in peace, that he may come
to me; for I look for him with the brethren. As *to our*
brother Apollos, I *besought* him *much* to come *to* you
with the brethren; *yet* he was *by no means willing* to
come *now;* but he will come when *it shall be convenient.*
Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, *acquit yourselves* like
men; be strong. Let all your *affairs* be done *in love.*

15 *And* I beseech you, brethren, *as* ye know the household of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they have *devoted* themselves to *serve* the saints,
16 That ye *also* submit to such and to every one that
17 *worketh* with us and laboureth. I *rejoice* at the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for *they*
18 *have supplied what was wanting on your part.* For they have refreshed my spirit and yours; *such* therefore
19 acknowledge. The Churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla, *with the Church that is in their house,*
20 *salute you much in the Lord.* All the brethren *salute* you. *Salute* one another with *a* holy kiss.
21 The salutation of me Paul with *my* own hand. If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be
23 Anathema; Maran-atha. The grace of our Lord Jesus
24 Christ be with you. My love be with you all in Christ Jesus.

ST. PAUL'S

Second Epistle to the CORINTHIANS

IN this epistle, written from Macedonia, within a year after the former, St. Paul beautifully displays his tender affection toward the Corinthians, who were greatly moved by the seasonable severity of the former, and repeats several of the admonitions he had there given them. In that he had written concerning the affairs of the Corinthians; in this he writes chiefly concerning his own; but in such a manner, as to direct all he mentions of himself, to their spiritual profit. The thread and connection of the whole epistle is historical; other things are interwoven only by way of digression.

II. CORINTHIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and *Timotheus* our brother, *to* the Church of God *that* is *in* Corinth, with all the saints *that* are in all Achaia:
2 Grace and peace be *to you* from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 Blessed be *the* God *and* Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and . . God of all com-
4 fort, Who comforteth us in all our *affliction*, that we may be able to comfort them *who* are in any *affliction*, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted
5 of God. For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us,
6 so our *comfort* also aboundeth *through* Christ. And whether we *are* afflicted it is for your *comfort* and salvation; *or whether we are comforted, it is for your comfort*, which is effectual in the *patient* enduring the same
7 sufferings which we also suffer. And our hope *concerning* you is steadfast, knowing that as ye are partakers
8 of the sufferings, so . . also of the *comfort*. For we would not *have you* ignorant, brethren, of *the* trouble which *befell* us in Asia, that we were *exceedingly* pressed above *our* strength, *so* that we despaired even of life.

9 *Yea*, we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we
might not trust in ourselves, but in God, *who* raiseth the
10 dead: Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth
11 deliver: in whom we trust that he will *still* deliver: You
likewise helping together *with us* by prayer for us, that
for the gift bestowed upon us, by . . means of many
persons, thanks may be given by many on *your* behalf.
12 For *this is* our rejoicing, the testimony of our con-
science, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with
carnal wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had
our conversation in the world, and more abundantly
13 *toward* you. For we write *no* other things *to* you *but*
what ye *know and* acknowledge, and I trust *will* acknowl-
14 edge even to the end. As also ye have acknowledged
us in part, that we are your rejoicing, as ye also are
15 ours in the day of the Lord Jesus. And in this confidence
I was minded to come *to* you before, that ye might have
16 *had* a second benefit. And to pass by you into Mace-
donia, and to come *to* you *again from* Macedonia, and
to be brought *forward by* you in my way toward Judea.
17 *Now* when I was thus minded, did I use *levity?* or the
things *which* I purpose, do I purpose according to the
18 flesh, *so* that there should be *with me* yea and nay? As
God is *faithful*, our word *to* you *hath* not *been* yea and
19 nay. For Jesus Christ, *the Son of God*, who was preached
among you by us, by me, and Sylvanus, and Timotheus,
20 was not yea and nay; but was yea *in him*. For all
the promises of God are yea *in him*, and amen *in him*, *to*
21 the glory of God by us. *For* he *that establisheth* us with
22 you in Christ and *that* hath anointed us is God: Who hath
also sealed us, and given *us* the earnest of the Spirit in
our hearts.
23 *But* I call God for a record *on* my soul, that to spare
24 you I came not as yet *to* Corinth. Not . . that we
have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your
joy; for by faith ye *have stood*.

2 But I determined this with myself, not *to* come *to*
you *again* in *grief*. For if I *grieve* you, who is he that
3 *cheereth* me, *but* he that is *grieved* by me? And I wrote
thus to you, *that I might* not when I *come* have *grief*
from *those for* whom I ought to rejoice; *being persuaded*
concerning you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.
4 For *from* much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote
to you with many tears, not that ye *might* be grieved,
but that ye might know the *abundant* love which I have
toward you.
5 *And* if any have caused grief, he hath . . grieved me
6 but in part, that I may not *overburden* you all. Suf-

ficient *for* such a *one* is this punishment inflicted *by*
7 many. So that *on the contrary* ye *should* rather forgive
and comfort him, lest such a one should be swallowed
8 up with overmuch sorrow. I beseech you *therefore to*
9 confirm your love toward him. For to this end also
did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether
10 ye *were* obedient in all things. To whom ye forgive
any thing, I forgive also; *and what* I *have forgiven*, if I
have forgiven any thing, *it is* for your sakes, in the person
11 of Christ: Lest Satan . . get an advantage *over* us: for
we are not ignorant of his devices.
12 *Now* when I came to Troas, to preach *the Gospel of*
13 *Christ*, and a door was opened *to* me *by* the Lord, I had
no rest in my spirit, because I *did not find* Titus my
brother; *so* taking leave of them I went *forth* into
Macedonia.
14 Now thanks be *to* God, *who causeth us always* to
triumph *through* Christ, and *manifesteth by us in every*
15 *place* the *odour* of his knowledge. For we are *to* God a
sweet *odour* of *Christ*, in them that are saved, and in
16 them that perish: To *these* an *odour* of death unto
death, *but* to *those* an *odour* of life unto life. And who
17 is sufficient for these things? For we are not as many
who adulterate the word of God, but as of sincerity, but
as *from* God in the sight of God, speak we in Christ.

3 Do we *again begin* to *recommend* ourselves? *Unless*
we need as some *do*, *recommendatory letters* to you, or
2 *recommendatory* letters from you? Ye are our *letter*,
written *on* our hearts, known and read *by* all men:
3 Manifestly declared to be the *letter* of Christ ministered
by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the
living God, not in tables of stone, but in *the* fleshly tables
4 of the heart. Such trust have we *in God through Christ*.
5 Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any
thing as *from* ourselves; but our sufficiency is *from* God:
6 Who also hath made us able ministers of the new
covenant, not of the letter, but of the Spirit; for the letter
7 killeth, but the Spirit giveth life. *And* if the ministra-
tion of death engraven in *letters of* stones was glorious,
so that the children of Israel could not *look* steadfastly
on the face of Moses, *because* of the glory of his *face*,
8 which *is abolished:* Shall not *rather* the ministration of
9 the Spirit be glorious? For if the ministration of con-
demnation *was* glory, much more doth the ministration
10 of righteousness *abound* in glory. For even that which
was made glorious had no glory in this respect, *because*
11 of the glory that excelleth. For if that which is *abolished*
was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glori-

ous. *Having therefore* such hope, we use great plainness
of speech. And not as Moses, *who* put a veil over his face, *so* that the children of Israel could not *look steadfastly* to the end of that which is abolished. But their *understandings* were blinded; *and* until this day *the same veil remaineth unremoved on* the reading of the Old Testament, which is *taken* away in Christ. But the veil *lieth on their heart* when Moses is read *until this day.* Nevertheless, when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there is liberty. *And* we all with *unveiled* face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are *transformed* into the same image, from glory to glory, . . as by the Spirit of the Lord.

4 Therefore *having* this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not: But have renounced the hidden things of *shame*, not walking in craftiness, nor *deceitfully corrupting* the word of God, but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. But if our Gospel *also is veiled*, it is *veiled* to them that *perish; Whose unbelieving* minds the god of this world hath blinded, lest the *illumination* of the glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine upon them. For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. For God, who commanded . . light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to *enlighten us with* the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

But we have this treasure in earthen vessels that the *excellence* of the power may be of God, and not of us. We are troubled on every side, yet not *crushed;* . . perplexed, but not in despair; Persecuted, but not forsaken; *thrown* down, but not destroyed; Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus *may* be *manifested* in our body. . . We *who* live are *always* delivered unto death for *the sake of Jesus*, that the life also of Jesus *may* be manifested in our mortal *body*. So then death worketh in us, but life in you. *Yet* having the same spirit of faith, according *to what is* written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken, we also believe, and therefore speak: Knowing that he *who* raised up the Lord Jesus, *will* also raise *us up* by Jesus, and present us with you. For all things are for your sakes, that the *overflowing* grace might through the thanksgiving of many *abound* to the glory of God. *Therefore* we faint not, but *even* though *the* outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day

17 by day. For our light affliction, which is but for a
moment, worketh *out* for us a far more exceeding and
18 eternal weight of glory: While we *aim* not at the things
that are seen, but at the things *that* are not seen; for
the things *that* are seen are temporal, but the things *that*
are not seen are eternal.

5 For we know that if our earthly house of this taber-
nacle *be* dissolved, we have a building *from* God, a house
2 not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For in
this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon
3 with our house which is from heaven: If *being* clothed,
4 we shall not be found naked. For we *who* are in this
tabernacle groan, being burdened: not . . that we
would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that *what is*
5 *mortal may* be swallowed up of life. Now he that hath
wrought us *to this very* thing is God, who . . hath also
6 given us the earnest of the Spirit. Therefore we always
behave undauntedly; knowing that *while* we are *sojourning*
7 in the body, we are absent from the Lord: (For we walk
8 by faith, not by sight.) We *behave undauntedly*, I say,
and *are* willing rather to be absent from the body, and
. . present with the Lord.
9 *Therefore we are ambitious*, whether present or absent,
10 *to be well pleasing to* him. For we must all appear
before the judgment seat of Christ, that every one may
receive *according to what he hath done in the body*, whether
11 . . good or *evil*. Knowing therefore the terror of the
Lord, we persuade men: but we are made manifest *to*
God, and I trust . . *we* are made manifest in your con-
12 sciences *also*. We *do not* again recommend ourselves to
you; but *we* give you an occasion *of glorying* on our
behalf, that ye may have *something* to answer them *who*
13 glory in appearance, and not in heart. For *if* we *are*
transported beyond ourselves, it is to God; *if* we *are* sober,
14 it is for your *sakes*. For the love of Christ constraineth
us, *while* we thus judge, that if one died for all, then
15 were all dead: And that he died for all, that they *who*
live should not henceforth live *to* themselves, but *to*
16 him *who* died for them, and rose again. *So that* we *from*
this time know no *one* after the flesh; yea, *if* we have
known *even* Christ after the flesh, yet now we know
17 him *so* no more. Therefore if any *one* be in Christ, *there*
is a new creation: *the* old things are passed away;
18 behold, all things are become new: And all things are
from God, who hath reconciled us to himself *through*
Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of recon-
19 ciliation: *Namely*, that God was in Christ reconciling
the world *to* himself, not imputing their trespasses *to*

them, and hath committed *to* us the word of reconcilia-
20 tion. *Therefore* we are ambassadors for Christ, as
though God *were entreating* by us; we *beseech* you, in
21 Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath
made him, *who knew no sin*, a sin *offering for us*, that we
might be made the righteous people of God *through* him.

6 We then, as *fellow labourers, do* also *exhort you*, not to
receive the grace of God in vain. (For he saith, I have
2 heard thee in an *acceptable* time, and in a day of salva-
tion have I succoured thee; behold, now is the accepted
3 time; behold, now is the day of salvation.) Giving no
offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed:
4 But in all things approving ourselves as the ministers
of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities,
5 in distresses, In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults,
6 in labours, in watchings, in fastings; By *purity*, by
prudence, by long-suffering, by kindness, by the Holy
7 Ghost, by love unfeigned, By the word of truth, by the
power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the
8 right hand and the left: *Through* honour and dishonour,
through evil report and good report; as deceivers, yet
9 true; As unknown, yet well known; as dying, *yet* behold
10 we live; as chastened, *yet* not killed; As *sorrowing*, yet
always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as
having nothing, . . yet possessing all things.
11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open *toward* you; our
12 heart is enlarged. Ye are not straitened in us; but
13 ye are straitened in your own bowels. Now for a recom-
pense *of* the same, (I speak as *to* my children,) be ye
14 also enlarged. Be not unequally yoked with unbelievers;
for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteous-
ness? *or* what communion hath light with darkness?
15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what
16 part hath *a believer* with an infidel? And what agree-
ment hath the temple of God with idols? *Now* ye are
the temple of the living God, as God hath said, I will
dwell in them, and walk in them, and I will be *to them*
17 a God, and they shall be *to me* a people. *Therefore* come
out from among them, and be ye separate, and touch
not the unclean *person, saith the Lord*, and I will receive
18 you, And will be *to* you a Father, and ye shall be *to me*
sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

7 Having therefore, *beloved*, these promises, let us
cleanse ourselves from all *pollution* of the flesh and *of*
the spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.
2 Receive us. We have *hurt* no man, we have corrupted
3 no man, we have defrauded no man. I speak not . .

to condemn you; for I have said before, that ye are in
4 our hearts, *to live* and to die with you. Great is my
freedom of speech toward you; great is my glorying
over you: I am filled with comfort, . . I *exceedingly*
5 *abound with joy over* all our *affliction*. For when we
were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but
we were troubled on every side: *from* without were
6 fightings, *from* within were fears. *But* God, *who* com-
forteth *them* that are *brought low*, comforted us by the
7 coming of Titus. And not *only by his coming*, but *also*
by the *comfort* wherewith he was comforted *over* you,
when he told us your earnest desire, your *grief*, your
8 *zeal for* me, so that I rejoiced the more. For *I do not
repent that I grieved* you *by the* letter, *though* I did repent:
(for I *see* . . that *letter grieved* you, though . . but for
9 a season.) Now I rejoice, not that ye were *grieved*, but
that ye *grieved* to repentance; for ye *grieved in* a godly
manner, *so* that ye *received* damage by us in nothing.
10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance *unto* salvation
not to be repented of, *whereas* the sorrow of the world
11 worketh death. For behold, this *very* thing, that ye
sorrowed after a godly *manner*, *how great diligence* it
wrought in you, yea, . . clearing of yourselves, yea, . .
indignation, yea, . . fear, yea, . . vehement desire,
yea, . . zeal, yea, . . revenge? In all things ye have
12 approved yourselves to be *pure* in this matter. *And*
though I wrote *to* you, *it was not* for his *sake who* had
done the wrong, nor for his *sake who had* suffered *it*,
but *for the sake of manifesting to* you in the sight of God
13 our *diligent* care *over* you. Therefore we were comforted
in your comfort, *and we rejoiced the more exceedingly in*
the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you
14 all. *So that* if I *had* boasted any thing *of you to him*,
I am not ashamed; but as we *speak* all things to you in
truth, . . so *also* our boasting *to* Titus is found a truth.
15 And his *tender* affection is more abundant toward you,
calling to mind the obedience of you all, how *ye received*
16 *him with fear and trembling*. I rejoice, therefore, that
I have confidence in you in all things.

8 Moreover, brethren, we *declare to* you the grace of
God, bestowed on the Churches *in* Macedonia, That
2 in a great trial of affliction, their *overflowing* joy and
their deep poverty abounded *to* the riches of their
3 liberality: *That* to their power, I *testify*, *and* beyond
4 their power, they were willing of themselves, Praying us
with much entreaty, *to* receive the gift and take *a part*
5 in ministering *it* to the saints. And this they did not
as we hoped; but first gave *themselves* to the Lord, and

6 *to* us by the will of God: *So* that we desired Titus, that
as he had begun *before*, so he would also *complete this*
7 *gift among* you. Therefore as ye abound in every thing,
in faith, and utterance, and knowledge, and . . all
diligence, and in your love to us, see that ye abound in
8 this grace also. I speak not by *way of command*, but
that by the *diligence* of others, *I may* prove the sincerity
9 of your love. For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus
Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sake he
became poor, that ye through his poverty might be
10 rich. And herein I give my advice: for this is expedient
for you, who have begun *a year ago*, not only to do, but
11 also *to do it willingly*. Now therefore *complete* the *work*,
that as there was a *ready will*, so there may be *also a*
12 performance, *in proportion to what* ye have. For if
there be first a *ready* mind, a man is accepted according
13 to *what* he hath, not according to *what* he hath not. For
I do not mean, that *others should* be eased, and *you*
14 burdened; But by an equality, *let* your abundance be
at this time a supply *to* their want: that their abundance
also may be a supply *to* your want, that there may *be*
15 *an equality*, As it is written, He that had gathered *the*
most, had nothing over; and he that had gathered *the*
least, *did not* lack.
16 But thanks be to God, *who putteth* the same *diligent*
17 care *for you* into the heart of Titus. For he accepted
indeed the exhortation, but being more forward, he went
18 *to* you *of his own accord*. And we have sent with him
the brother, whose praise in the Gospel *is through* all
19 the Churches: (And not *only so*, but *he* was also *ap-*
pointed by the Churches *to be a fellow traveller* with us,
with this gift, which is administered by us, to the glory
of the Lord *himself*, and *for* the declaration of *our* ready
20 mind.) Avoiding this, *lest* any *one* should blame us in
21 this abundance, which is administered by us. *For we*
provide things honest, not only *before* the Lord, but also
22 *before* men. And we have sent with them our brother,
whom we have *often* proved diligent in many things,
but now much more diligent, *through his* great confidence
23 in you. *If* any . . inquire *concerning* Titus, he is my
partner, and fellow *labourer with respect to* you; or
concerning our brethren, they are the messengers of the
24 Churches, the glory of Christ. Show *therefore* to them
before the Churches, the proof of your love and of our
boasting on your behalf.

9 For *concerning* the ministering to the saints, it is
superfluous for me to write to you. For I know *your*
2 *readiness*, which I boast *concerning* you to *the Mace-*

donians, that Achaia was ready a year ago, and your
3 zeal had provoked very many. Yet *I have* sent the
brethren, lest our boasting of you *on this head* should be
4 made vain, that, as I said, ye may be ready; Lest . . if
any of *the Macedonians* come *up* with me, and find you
unprepared, we (*not to say you*) be ashamed of this
5 confident boasting. Therefore I thought it necessary
to *desire* the brethren *to* go before *to* you, and *complete this*
your bounty, *which had been spoken of* before, that *it*
may be ready as a . . bounty, and not as *a matter* of
6 covetousness. *And* this I say, He *that* soweth sparingly,
shall reap also sparingly, and he *that* soweth bountifully,
7 shall reap also bountifully. *Let* every man *do* as he
chooseth in his heart, not grudgingly, or of necessity: for
8 God loveth a cheerful giver. And God is able to make
all grace abound toward you, that *having* always all-
sufficiency in all things, ye may abound to every good
9 work: (As it is written, He hath *scattered* abroad, he
hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for
10 ever. *And* he who *supplieth* seed to the sower *and* bread
for your food, *will supply and* multiply your seed sown,
11 and increase the fruits of your righteousness:) Being
enriched in every thing to all bountifulness, which
12 *worketh by* us thanksgiving to God. For the administra-
tion of this service *doth* not only *supply* the *necessities*
of the saints, but *likewise aboundeth* by many thanks-
13 givings *to* God: (*Who*, by . . experiment of this admin-
istration, . . glorify God, for your *avowed* subjection *to*
the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberal *communication*
14 *to* them and *to* all men:) And by their prayer for you,
who long after you, for the exceeding grace of God *which*
15 *is* in you. Thanks be *to* God for his unspeakable gift.

10 Now I Paul myself, who *when present* am base
among you, but being absent, am bold toward you,
2 *entreat* you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, I
beseech, . . that I may not when I am present *be bold*
with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold
toward some, *who* think of us as *walking after* the flesh:
3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not *war* after
4 the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal,
but mighty through God to the *throwing* down of strong
5 holds.) *Destroying reasonings*, and every high thing
which exalteth itself against the knowledge of God,
and bringing *every thought into captivity* to the obedience
6 of Christ, And *being* in readiness to revenge all disobe-
dience, when your obedience is fulfilled.
7 Do ye look *at* the outward appearance of things? If
any man *be confident* that he is Christ's, let him *again*

think this of himself, that as he *is* Christ's, *so* are we *also*.
8 *Yea*, if I should boast *something* more *also* of *the* authority
which the Lord *hath* given us for edification, and not
9 for your destruction, I should not be ashamed. *That* I
10 may not seem as *it were* to terrify you by letters. For
his letters *indeed*, say they, are weighty and *strong;* but
his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.
11 Let such *a* one think this, that such as we are in word
by letters, when we are absent, such *are* we also in deed,
when we are present.
12 For we *presume* not to *equal* or to compare ourselves
with some *of those* who *recommend* themselves: but they
among themselves limiting themselves, and comparing
13 themselves *with* themselves, are not wise. But we will
not *boastingly extend ourselves beyond* our measure; but
according to the measure of the *province* which God hath
14 *allotted* us, a measure to reach even unto you. For we
do not extend ourselves *excessively*, as *not reaching to* you;
15 for we are come *even* to you, in the Gospel of Christ: Not
boastingly extending ourselves beyond our measure, in
the *labours of others;* but having hope, *now* your faith is
increased, *to* be enlarged by you, *yet still within our prov-*
16 *ince*, abundantly. *So as* to preach the Gospel in the
regions beyond you, not to boast in *another's province*
17 of things made ready to our hand. But he that glorieth,
18 let him glory in the Lord. For not he that com-
mendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord
commendeth.

11 *I wish* ye *would* bear a little *with* my folly; *yea*,
bear with me. For I am jealous over you with *a*
2 godly jealousy; for I have espoused you to one husband,
3 that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ. But
I fear lest as the serpent deceived Eve through his
subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the
4 simplicity that is in Christ. If *indeed* he that cometh
preach another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or
if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received,
or another Gospel which ye have not accepted, ye might
5 well bear with him. *But* I suppose *that I fall nothing*
6 *short* of the very *chief* apostles. *For if I am unskilful*
in speech, yet not in knowledge: *but* we have been
7 thoroughly made manifest *to* you in all things. Have I
committed an offence in *humbling* myself, that ye might
be exalted, because I have preached the Gospel of God
8 *to you at free cost?* I *spoiled* other Churches, taking
9 wages of them to *serve* you: And when I was present
with you and wanted, I was chargeable to no man. For
the brethren who came from Macedonia supplied *my*

want; and *I have in all things* kept myself from being
10 burdensome, and will keep myself. As the truth of
Christ is in me, *this my boasting shall not be stopped* in
11 the regions of Achaia. Wherefore? Because I love you
12 not? God knoweth. But what I do, . . I will do, that
I may cut off *the* occasion from them *who* desire occasion,
that wherein they *boast,* they may be found even as we.
13 For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transform-
14 ing themselves into . . apostles of Christ. And no
marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel
15 of light. Therefore it is no great thing, if his ministers
also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness;
16 whose end shall be according to their works. I say
again, Let no man think me a fool; *but* if otherwise, yet
as a fool receive me that I *also* may boast . . a little.
17 *What* I speak, I speak . . not after the Lord, but as it
18 were foolishly, in *this* confidence of boasting. Seeing
19 many glory after the flesh, I will glory also. For ye,
20 *being wise,* suffer fools *willingly.* For ye suffer, if a
man *enslave* you, if *he* devour you, if *he* take *from* you, if
21 *he* exalt himself, if *he* smite you on the face. I speak
with regard to reproach, as though we had been weak;
whereas in whatever any is *confident,* (I speak *as a fool*)
22 I am *confident* also. Are they Hebrews? so am I. Are
they Israelites? so am I. Are they the seed of Abraham?
23 so am I. Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak *fool-
ishly*) I am more: in labours more abundant, in stripes
more exceeding, in prisons more *abundant,* in deaths
24 *often.* Five times I received *from the Jews* forty stripes
25 save one. Thrice *I was* beaten with rods, once *I was*
stoned, thrice I *have been shipwrecked, a day and a night*
26 I *passed* in the deep: In journeyings often, in *dangers
from rivers,* in *dangers from* robbers, in *dangers from* my
own countrymen, in *dangers from* the heathen, in *dangers*
in the city, in *dangers* in the wilderness, in *dangers* in
27 the sea, in *dangers* among false brethren; In *labour* and
toil, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings
28 often, in cold and nakedness. Beside *the* things *which* are
from without, that which *rusheth* upon me daily, the care of
29 all the Churches. Who is weak, and I am not weak?
30 Who is offended, and I burn not? *Since* I must . .
glory, I will glory of things *that* concern my infirmities.
31 The God and Father of *the* Lord Jesus Christ, *who* is
32 blessed for ever . . , knoweth that I lie not. In Damascus
the governor under *King* Aretas kept the city of the
Damascenes with a *guard, being determined* to apprehend
33 me. *But* I was let down through a window in a basket
by the wall, and escaped *from* his hands.

12 *Surely* it is not expedient for me to *boast, yet* I will
come to visions and revelations of the Lord. I knew
2 a man in Christ, above fourteen years ago, (whether in
the body I *know not,* or out of the body I *know not;*
God knoweth,) such *a* one caught up to the third heaven.
3 *Yea,* I knew such a man, (whether in the body or out
4 of the body I *know not,* God knoweth.) That he was
caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable *things,*
5 which it is not *possible* for . . man to utter. Of such
a one *I will* glory; *but* I *will not glory of myself, unless*
6 in my infirmities. *Yet* if I *should resolve* to *boast,* I
should not be a fool; for I *speak* the truth: but I forbear, lest any *one* should think of me above *what* he
seeth me, or heareth *from* me.
7 And lest I should be *lifted up with* the abundance of
the revelations, there was given . . me a thorn in the
flesh, a messenger of Satan, to buffet me, lest I should
8 be *lifted up. Concerning* this . . I besought the Lord
9 thrice, that it might depart from me. *But* he said *to*
me, My grace is sufficient for thee; for my strength is
made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will
I rather glory in my *weaknesses,* that the *strength* of
10 Christ may rest upon me. Therefore I *am well pleased*
in *weaknesses,* in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake; for when I am weak,
11 then *I am* strong. I am become a fool in *boasting; but*
ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended *by* you: for in nothing *have I fallen short* of
the very *chief* apostles, though I *am* nothing.
12 Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among
you, in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty
13 deeds. For *wherein were ye* inferior *to the* other Churches,
unless that I myself was not burdensome to you? For-
14 give me this wrong. Behold, the third time I am ready
to come to you: *yet* I will not be burdensome to you;
for I seek not yours, but you; for the children ought
not to lay up *treasure for the parents,* but the parents
15 for the children. And I will *most* gladly spend, and be
spent for *your souls,* though the more abundantly I love
16 you, the less I *am* loved. But be it so; I did not burden
17 you: *but* being crafty, I caught you with guile. Did I
make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent *to* you?
18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother. Did
Titus make a gain of you? *Did we not walk* in the same
spirit? In the same steps?
19 Think ye that we *again* excuse ourselves to you? We
speak before God in Christ, *and* all things, beloved, for
20 your *edification.* For I fear lest when I come, I *should*
not find you such as I would, and *lest* I *should* be found

by you such as ye would not: lest there *should* be *contentions*, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults: . . Lest my God should humble me *when I come to you again*, and I *should mourn over* many *of them who had* sinned *before*, and have not repented of the uncleanness, and fornication, and lasciviousness, which they have committed.

13 I am coming to you *this third time: every word shall be established by* the mouth of two or three witnesses. I told you before, and *do* tell you *beforehand*, (*though now absent*, as if I were present the second time,) *those who had* sinned before, and all *the rest*, that if I come again, I will not spare: Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, *who is not weak* toward you, but *powerful among* you. For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God; *and* we also are weak *with* him; but we shall live with him, by the power of God *in* you. Examine yourselves whether ye *are* in the faith: prove *yourselves*. *Do* ye not know *yourselves*, . . that Jesus Christ is in you, *unless* ye *are* reprobates? *And* I trust, . . ye shall know that we are not reprobates. Now I pray . . God, that ye *may* do no evil: not that we *may* appear approved, but that *ye may* do that which is *good*, though we *should* be as reprobates. For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth. For we *rejoice*, when we are weak and ye are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection. Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present I should use *severity*, according to the power which the Lord hath given me *for* edification, and not *for* destruction.

Finally, brethren, farewell: be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace, and the God of love and peace shall be with you. *Salute* one another with *a* holy kiss. All the saints salute you. The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

ST. PAUL'S Epistle to the GALATIANS

THIS Epistle is not written, as most of St. Paul's are, to the Christians, of a particular city, but to those of a whole country in Asia Minor, the metropolis of which was Ancyra. These readily embraced the gospel; but after St. Paul had left them, certain men came among them, who (like those mentioned in Acts xv.) taught, that it was necessary to be circumcised, and to keep the Mosaic law. They affirmed, that all the other apostles taught thus: that St. Paul was inferior to them: And that even he sometimes practised and recommended the law, though at other times he opposed it.

The first part therefore of this epistle is spent in vindicating himself and his doctrine; proving, 1. That he had it immediately from Christ himself, and that he was not inferior to the other apostles: 2. That it was the very same which the other apostles preached: and 3. That his practice was consistent with his doctrine.

The second contains proofs drawn from the Old Testament, that the law and all its ceremonies were abolished by Christ.

The third contains practical inferences, clothed with his usual benediction.

GALATIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by
Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from
2 the dead,) And all the brethren *who* are with me, *to* the
3 Churches of Galatia; Grace be to you, and peace from
4 God the Father, and . . *the* Lord Jesus Christ, Who gave
himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from *the*

present evil world, according to the will of *our* God
5 and . . Father, To *him* be glory for ever and ever.
Amen.
6 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him *who*
called you *by* the grace of Christ *to* another Gospel.
7 Which is not another; but there *are* some that trouble
8 you, and would *subvert* the Gospel of Christ. But *if*
we, or an angel from heaven, preach *to you another*
Gospel than . . we have preached *to* you, let him be
9 accursed. As we *have* said before, so *I say* now again,
if any *one* preach *to you another Gospel* than that ye . .
10 received, let him be accursed. For do I now *satisfy*
men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For
if I *still* pleased men, I should not be the servant of
Christ.
11 But I certify you, brethren, that the Gospel which
12 was preached *by* me is not *according to* man. For
neither did I receive it from man, neither was I taught it,
13 but by the revelation of Jesus Christ. For ye have
heard of my *behaviour* in time past in the *Jewish* religion,
. . that *above* measure I persecuted the Church of God,
14 and wasted it. And *I* profited in the *Jewish* religion
above many *of my years among my countrymen*, being
more *abundantly* zealous *for* the traditions of my fathers.
15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my
16 mother's womb, and called me by his grace, To reveal
his Son in me, that I might preach him among the
17 *Gentiles, I did not confer* with flesh and blood: Neither
did I go up to Jerusalem, to them *that* were apostles
before me; but I *immediately* went into Arabia, and
18 returned again *to* Damascus. Then after three years
I went up to Jerusalem to *visit* Peter, and abode with
19 him fifteen days. But *other* of the apostles *I saw none,*
20 save James, *the brother of the Lord.* Now the things
which I write *to* you, behold, before God, I lie not.
21 Afterward I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia;
22 And *I* was unknown by face *to* the Churches of Judea
23 which were in Christ: But *only they* had heard, . . He
that persecuted us in time past, now preached the
24 faith which once he destroyed. And they glorified
God in me.

2 Then fourteen years after I went up again to Jeru-
salem with Barnabas, *taking* Titus *also with me. But*
2 I went up by revelation, and *laid before* them *the* Gospel
which I preach among the Gentiles, but *severally* to
those of *eminence,* lest by any means I should run, or
3 *should have* run in vain. (But neither *was* Titus, who
was with me, being a Greek, compelled to be circumcised,

4 Because of false brethren *introduced unawares,* who *had*
slipped in, . . to spy out our liberty which we have
through Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into
5 bondage: To whom we *did not yield by submission,* no,
not . . an hour, that the truth of the Gospel might
6 continue with you.) *And they who undoubtedly were*
something, (but whatsoever they were it is no difference
to me: God accepteth no man's person,) . . they who
7 *undoubtedly were something,* added nothing to me. But
on the contrary, when they saw that *I was entrusted with*
the Gospel of the uncircumcision, as Peter with that of the
8 *circumcision: (For* he that wrought effectually in Peter
for the apostleship of the circumcision, . . *wrought like-*
9 *wise effectually* in me toward the Gentiles:) And when
James, *and* Cephas, and John, who *undoubtedly were*
pillars, *knew* the grace that was given *to* me, they gave
the right hands of fellowship to me and Barnabas, that we
should go *to* the *Gentiles,* and they *to* the circumcision:
10 Only they *desired* that we *would be mindful of the poor,*
11 *which very thing* I also was forward to do. But when
Cephas came to Antioch, I withstood him to the face,
12 because he was to be blamed. For before *some* came
from James, he *ate* with the Gentiles; but when they
were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing
13 *those* . . of the circumcision. And the other Jews *also*
dissembled with him, *so* that *even* Barnabas . . was
14 carried away with their dissimulation. But when I
saw, that they *did not walk* uprightly, according to the
truth of the Gospel, I said *to* Peter before them all,
If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of the
Gentiles, and not *of* the Jews, why compellest thou the
15 Gentiles to *Judaize?* We who are Jews by nature, and
16 not sinners of the Gentiles, *Even we* (knowing that a
man is not justified by the works of the law, but by
the faith of Jesus Christ) . . have believed in *Christ*
Jesus, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ,
and not by the works of the law, *because by* the works
17 of the law *no flesh shall be justified.* But if while we
seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are
found sinners, is *Christ therefore* the minister of sin?
18 God forbid. *For* if I build again the things which I
19 destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. *For* I through
20 the law am dead to the law, that I *may* live *to* God. I am
crucified with Christ, *and* I live *no longer,* but Christ
liveth in me, and the life *that* I now live in the flesh,
I live by . . faith *in* the Son of God, who loved me and
21 *delivered up himself* for me. I do not *make void* the grace
of God; for if righteousness *is* by the law, then Christ
died in vain.

3 O *thoughtless* Galatians, who hath bewitched you, . .
before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set
2 forth, crucified among you? This only would I learn
of you, *Did ye receive* the Spirit by the works of the law,
3 or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so *thoughtless?*
Having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect
4 by the flesh? Have ye suffered so many things in vain?
5 If it be yet in vain? *Doth he that ministereth the Spirit*
to you, and worketh miracles among you, *do it* by the
6 works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? . . As
Abraham believed God, and it was *imputed* to him for
7 righteousness. Know *then* that they *who* are of faith,
8 *these* are the *sons* of Abraham. And the Scripture
foreseeing that God would justify the *Gentiles by* faith,
declared before the *glad tidings to* Abraham, . . In thee
9 shall all the nations be blessed. So then they *who are*
10 of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. For as many
as are of the works of the law are under *a* curse; for it
is written, Cursed is every one *who* continueth not in
all things which are written in the book of the law, to do
11 them. But that *none* is justified by the law in the sight
12 of God *is* evident; *for* the just shall live by faith. *Now*
the law is not of faith; but *he* that doeth them shall
13 live *by* them. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse
of the law, being made a curse for us: (for it is written,
14 Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree.) That the
blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through
Christ Jesus, that we might receive the promise of the
15 Spirit through faith. . . I speak after the manner of
men: though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be
16 confirmed, *none* disannulleth or addeth thereto. *Now*
the promises were made to Abraham and his seed. He
saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And
17 to thy seed, which is Christ. And this I say, . . the
covenant *which* was *before confirmed* of God *through*
Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty
years after, *doth* not disannul, *so as to* make the promise
18 of *no* effect. *And again,* if the inheritance be *by* the
law, it is no more *by* promise; but God gave it to Abra-
19 ham by promise. Wherefore then *was* the law? It was
added because of transgressions, till the seed should
come to whom the promise was made: *and it was*
20 ordained by angels, in the hand of a mediator. Now
the mediator is not a mediator of one; but God is one.
21 Is *then the law* against the promises of God? God forbid.
But if there had been a law given which could have
given life, verily righteousness *would* have been by the
22 law. But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin,
that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given

23 to them that believe. But before faith came, we were
kept under the law, shut up *together* unto the faith
24 which . . *was to be* revealed. Wherefore the law was
our schoolmaster . . unto Christ, that we might be
25 justified by faith. But . . faith *being come*, we are no
26 longer under a schoolmaster. For ye are all *sons* of
27 God by faith in *Jesus Christ*. For as many of you as
have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.
28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond
nor free, there is neither male nor female; for ye are
29 all one in Christ Jesus. And if ye *are* Christ's, then are ye
the *seed of Abraham*, and heirs according to the promise.

4 Now I say, . . the heir, as long as he is a child,
differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of
2 all; But is under tutors and *stewards*, *till* the time
3 appointed *by* the father. So we *also*, when we were
children, were in bondage under the elements of the
4 world. But when the fulness of the time was come,
God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under
5 the law, To redeem *those* . . under the law, that we
6 might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye
are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son
7 into your hearts, *crying*, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou
art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an
8 heir of God through Christ. *Indeed*, then when ye knew
not God, ye *served* them *that* by nature are *not* gods.
9 But now *having known* God, or rather *being* known of
God, how turn ye *back* to the weak and *poor* elements,
10 *to which* ye desire to be *in bondage again?* Ye observe
11 days, and months, and times, and years. I am afraid
for you, lest I have *laboured among* you in vain.
12 Brethren, I beseech you, be *ye* as I *am;* for I *also* am
13 as ye were: ye have not injured me at all. Ye know
that notwithstanding infirmity of the flesh, I preached
14 the Gospel *to* you at first. *And ye did not slight or
disdain my temptation which was in the flesh*, but received
15 me as an angel of God, . . as Christ Jesus. *What* was
then the blessedness ye spake of? For I bear you
witness, that, if . . possible, ye would have plucked out
16 your . . eyes, and have given them to me. Am I
17 become your enemy because I tell you the truth? They
zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would
18 exclude you, that ye might affect them. *Now* it is good
to be *zealous in a good thing always*, and not only *while* I
19 am present with you. My little children, of whom I
20 travail in birth again, *till* Christ be formed in you, I
could wish to be present with you now and to change
my voice; for I stand in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, ye that *would* be under the law, do ye not
22 hear the law? For it is written, . . Abraham had two
sons, one by *the* bond-woman, another by *the* free-woman.
23 *And* he . . of the bond-woman was born after the flesh,
24 but he of the free-woman . . by promise. Which things
are an allegory: for these are the two covenants, . . one
from Mount Sinai, *bearing children* to bondage, which is
25 Agar. For this . . *is* Mount Sinai in Arabia, and
answereth to Jerusalem *that* now is, and is in bondage
26 with her children. But Jerusalem *that* is above is free,
27 which is the mother of us all. (For it is written, Rejoice,
thou barren, that bearest not, break forth and cry, thou
that travailest not; for the desolate hath many more
28 children than she *that* hath *a* husband.) Now we,
29 brethren, *like* Isaac, . . are children of promise. But
as then, he that was born after the flesh persecuted him
30 that was born after the Spirit, . . so it is now *also*. *But*
what saith the Scripture? Cast out the bond-woman
and her son; for the son of the bond-woman shall not
31 be heir with the son of the free-woman. So then,
brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but
of the free.

5 Stand fast, therefore, in the liberty wherewith Christ
hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the
2 yoke of bondage. Behold, I Paul say unto you, . . If
3 ye be circumcised, Christ *will* profit you nothing. For
I testify again to every man that is circumcised, . . he
4 is a debtor to *do* the whole law. Christ is become of no
effect *to* you, whosoever of you are justified by the law;
5 ye are fallen from grace. For we through the Spirit
6 wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. For in
Christ Jesus, neither circumcision availeth any thing,
nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.
7 Ye did run well: who *hath* hindered you *from obeying*
8 the truth? This persuasion cometh not *from* him that
9 *called* you. A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump. I
10 have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be
no otherwise minded; but he that troubleth you shall
11 bear his judgment, whosoever he be. *But if I*, brethren,
still preach circumcision, why do I *still* suffer persecution?
12 Then is the offence of the cross ceased. I *wish it and
they shall be cut off that trouble you.*
13 . . Brethren, ye have been called *to* liberty; only use
not *this* liberty for an occasion *to* the flesh, but by love
14 serve one another. For all the law is fulfilled in one
word, . . in this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as
15 thyself. But if ye bite and devour one another, take
heed . . ye be not consumed one of another.

16 . . . I say then, walk *by* the Spirit, and *fulfil not the*
17 *desire* of the flesh. For the flesh *desireth* against the
Spirit, *but* the Spirit *desireth* against the flesh, (*these*
are contrary *to each other,*) . . that *ye may not* do the
18 things *which* ye would. But if ye *are* led *by* the Spirit
19 ye are not under the law. Now the works of the flesh
are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication,
20 uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, *en-*
mities, contentions, emulations, wraths, strifes, *divisions,*
21 heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings,
and such like: *of* which I tell you before (as I have also
told you in . . time past) that they *who practise* such
22 things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. But the
fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long suffering,
23 gentleness, goodness, *fidelity,* Meekness, temperance;
24 against such there is no law. And they that are
Christ's have crucified the flesh with *its* affections and
25 *desires.* If we live *by* the Spirit, let us also walk *by* the
26 Spirit. *Be* not desirous of vain glory, provoking one
another, envying one another.

6 Brethren, if a man be overtaken in *any* fault, ye *who*
are spiritual restore such *a* one in the spirit of meekness;
2 considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted. Bear
ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.
3 For if *any one* think himself to be something, *whereas*
4 he is nothing, he deceiveth himself. But let every *one*
try his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in
5 himself alone, and not in another. For every *one* shall
6 bear his own burdens. Let him that is taught in the
7 word *impart to* him that teacheth in all good things. Be
not deceived, God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man
8 soweth, that *also shall he reap.* For he that soweth to
his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that
soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life ever-
9 lasting. *But* let us not be weary in well doing; for in
10 due season we shall reap, if we faint not. *Therefore as*
we have opportunity let us do good . . unto all men;
but especially unto them who are of the household of faith.
11 Ye see how large a letter I have written *to* you with
12 *my* own hand. As many as desire to make a fair
appearance in the flesh, *these* constrain you to be cir-
cumcised: only lest they should suffer persecution for
13 the cross of Christ. For neither they themselves who
are circumcised keep the law; but *they* desire to have you
14 circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh. But
God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our
Lord Jesus Christ, by *which* the world is crucified *to* me,
15 and I unto the world. For . . neither circumcision *is*

any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creation.
16 And as many as *shall* walk *by* this rule, peace *and mercy be upon them*, and upon the Israel of God.
17 From henceforth let *none* trouble me; for I bear in
18 my body the marks of the Lord Jesus. Brethren, the grace of *the* Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

ST. PAUL'S Epistle to the EPHESIANS

EPHESUS was the chief city of that part of Asia, which was a Roman province. Here St. Paul preached for three years, (Acts xx. 31.) and from hence the gospel was spread throughout the whole province, (Acts xix. 10.) At his taking leave of the church there, he forewarned them both of great persecutions from without, and of divers heresies and schisms, which would arise among themselves. And accordingly he writes this epistle (nearly resembling that to the Colossians, written about the same time) to establish them in the doctrine he had delivered, to arm them against false teachers, and to build them up in love and holiness, both of heart and conversation.

He begins this, as most of his epistles, with thanksgiving to God, for their embracing and adhering to the gospel. He shews the inestimable blessings and advantages they received thereby, as well above all the Jewish privileges, as all the wisdom and philosophy of the Heathens. He proves that our Lord is the Head of the whole Church: Of angels and spirits, the church triumphant, and of Jews and Gentiles, now equally members of the church militant. In the three last chapters he exhorts them to various duties, civil and religious, personal and relative, suitable to their Christian character, privileges, assistances and obligations.

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God,
to the saints *who* are at Ephesus, *even* to the faithful in
2 Christ Jesus: Grace be to you, and peace from God our
Father, and . . the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus
Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings
4 in heavenly *things through* Christ; . . As he hath chosen
us *through* him before the foundation of the world, *that*
5 *we might* be holy and *blameless* before him in love: Hav-
ing predestinated us *by Jesus Christ, to the adoption of*
sons unto himself, according to the good pleasure of his
6 will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, *by which* he
7 hath *freely accepted us through the Beloved; By* whom we
have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of
8 *our* sins, according to the riches of his grace: Wherein
he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;
9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will,
according to his good pleasure, which he *had before* pur-
10 posed in himself, That in the dispensation of the fulness
of *the* times, he might gather together *into* one *in Christ,*
all things . . which are in heaven, and which are on
11 earth, . . In him, *through* whom *we also having* obtained
an inheritance, being predestinated according to the
purpose of him *that* worketh all things after the counsel
12 of his own will, That we, *who first believed in Christ,*
13 *might* be to the praise of his glory: In whom ye *likewise*
believed after . . ye *had* heard the word of truth, the
Gospel of your salvation, in whom after . . *ye had*
believed, ye were *also* sealed *by* that holy Spirit of
14 promise, *Who* is *an* earnest of our inheritance, *till* the
redemption of the purchased possession, *to* the praise
of his glory.
15 Wherefore I also, *since* I heard of your faith in the
16 Lord Jesus, and love *to* all . . saints, Cease not to give
thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,
17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of
glory, may give . . you the Spirit of wisdom and reve-
18 lation, *through* the knowledge of him: The eyes of your
understanding being enlightened, that ye may know
what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of
19 the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what
. . the exceeding greatness of his power *toward us* who
believe, according to the *energy* of his mighty power,
20 Which he *exerted* in Christ, *raising* him from the dead;
and *he hath seated* him at his own right hand in . .
21 heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power,
and might, and dominion, and every name that is named,
not only in this world, but also in that which is to come.
22 And *he put* all things under his feet, and *hath given*
him to be . . head over all things to the Church,
23 Which is his body; *who is* the fulness of him that *filleth*
all in all.

2 And *he hath quickened you,* who were dead in trespasses
and sins, Wherein *ye formerly* walked according to the
2 course of this world, according to the prince of the
power of the air, *the* spirit that now worketh in the *sons*
3 of disobedience. Among whom also we all *formerly* had
our conversation, in the *desires* of *the* flesh, *doing* the
will of the flesh and . . the mind, and were by nature
4 . . children of wrath, even as *the* others. But God,
being rich in mercy, *through* his great love wherewith
5 he loved us, *Hath quickened even* us together with Christ,
6 *who were dead in trespasses,* (by grace ye are saved,) And
hath *raised* us up together, and made us sit together in
7 heavenly places *through* Christ Jesus: That *he might*
show in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace,
8 in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. For
by grace *ye are saved* through faith, and *this* not of your-
9 selves: it is the gift of God: Not *by* works; lest any
10 *one* should boast. For we are his workmanship, created
through Christ Jesus unto good works, which God *had*
before *prepared,* that we *might* walk in *them.*
11 Wherefore remember, that ye being *formerly* Gentiles
in the flesh, (who *were* called *the* uncircumcision, by that
which is called the circumcision *performed with hands in*
12 *the flesh,*) *Were* at that time . . without Christ, being
aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers
to the covenants of promise; having no hope, and with-
13 out God in the world. But now *through* Christ Jesus,
ye who *were formerly* far off are *brought* nigh by the
14 blood of Christ. For his is our peace, *he* who hath
made both one, *having* broken down the middle wall of
15 partition, Having abolished *by* his flesh the enmity, . .
the law of commandments, *through his decrees, that he*
might form the two into one new man in himself, so making
16 peace: And . . might reconcile both *in one body to God*
17 *through* the cross, having slain the enmity thereby. And
he came and preached peace to you *that* were *afar* off,
18 and to them that were nigh. For through him we both
19 have access by one Spirit *to* the Father. . . Therefore
ye are no *longer* strangers and foreigners, but fellow
citizens with the saints, and of the household of God, . .
20 Built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets,
21 Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone, *On*
whom all the building, fitly framed together, groweth
22 *into a* holy temple in the Lord: *On* whom ye also are
built together, for *a* habitation of God through the Spirit.

3 For this cause I Paul *am* a prisoner of Jesus Christ
for you Gentiles; (*Seeing* ye have heard . . the dis-
2 pensation of the grace of God, . . given me *in your*

3 *behalf.*) That by revelation he made known *to* me the
4 mystery: as I wrote *before* in few words, *By reading*
which ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery
5 of Christ: Which in other ages was not made known *to*
the sons of men, as it *hath been now revealed to* his holy
6 apostles and prophets by the Spirit, That the Gentiles
are joint heirs, and of the same body, and *joint* partakers
7 of his promise *by* Christ *through* the Gospel. *Of which* I
have been made a minister, according to the gift of the grace
of God given *to* me by the effectual working of his power.
8 Unto me, who am less than the least of all . . saints,
hath this grace *been given, to* preach among the Gentiles
9 the unsearchable riches of Christ. And to make all
men see what is the fellowship of the mystery which *was*
hidden from eternity by God, who created all things by
10 Jesus Christ: *That the manifold wisdom of God might*
now be made known by the Church to the principalities
11 *and powers in heavenly places,* According to the eternal
purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord,
12 *By* whom we have boldness and access with confidence
13 *through* faith *in* him. Wherefore I *entreat you not to*
14 *faint* at my *afflictions* for you, which is your glory. For
this cause I *bend* my *knees to* the Father of our Lord
15 Jesus Christ, (Of whom the whole family in heaven and
16 earth is named,) That he would *give* you according to
the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might
17 by his Spirit in the inner man, That Christ may dwell
in your hearts by faith: That . . being rooted and
18 grounded in love, *ye* may be able to comprehend with
all *the* saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth,
19 and height, And to know the love of Christ which *sur-*
passeth knowledge, that ye *may* be filled with all the
20 fulness of God. Now *to* him that is able to do exceeding
abundantly above all that we ask or think, according
21 to the power that worketh in us, *To* him be glory in the
Church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world with-
out end. Amen.

4 I, therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you *to*
walk worthy of the *calling* wherewith ye are called, With
2 all lowliness and meekness; *with* long suffering *forbear*
3 one another in love, Endeavouring to keep the unity
4 of the Spirit, *by* the bond of peace. There is one body
and one Spirit, . . as ye are *also* called in one hope of
5 your calling; One Lord, one faith, one baptism: One
6 God, and Father of all, who is above all, and through
7 all, and in *us* all. But *to* every one of us is given grace,
8 according to the measure of the gift of Christ. Where-
fore he saith, *Having* ascended . . on high, he led cap-

9 tivity captive, and gave gifts *to* men. (Now *this expres-*
sion, He ascended, what is it but that he also descended
10 first *to* the lower parts of the earth? He that descended
is the same that ascended *also,* far above all *the* heavens,
11 that he might fill all things.) And he gave some
apostles, and some prophets, and some evangelists, and
12 some pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the
saints, for the work of the ministry, *to* the edifying . .
13 the body of Christ; Till we all come *to* the unity of the
faith and . . knowledge of the Son of God, *to* a perfect
man, *to* the measure of the stature of the fulness of
14 Christ: That we *may be no longer* children, *fluctuating*
to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine,
by the sleight of men, *by* cunning craftiness, whereby
15 they lie in wait to deceive: But speaking the truth in
love, may grow up into him in all things, *who* is the head,
16 even Christ: From whom the whole body fitly joined
together and compacted, by that which every joint
supplieth according to the effectual working in the
measure of every *member,* maketh *an* increase of the
body, *to* the edifying of itself in love.
17 This *therefore* I say and testify in the Lord, that ye
no longer walk as *the rest* of the Gentiles walk, in the
18 vanity of *your* mind. Having the understanding dark-
ened, being alienated from the life of God, *by* the igno-
rance that is in them, *through* the *hardness* of their hearts:
19 Who being past feeling, have given themselves *up to*
lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.
20 But ye have not so learned Christ; *Seeing* . . ye have
heard him, and . . been taught by him, (as the truth
22 is in Jesus,) . . *To* put off, *with respect to* the former
conversation, the old man, which is corrupt, according
23 to the deceitful *desires: But to* be renewed in the spirit
24 of your mind; And *to* put on the new man, which *is*
created after God in righteousness and true holiness.
25 Wherefore, putting away lying, *speak ye* every man
truth with his neighbour; for we are members one of
26 another. Be ye angry and sin not; let not the sun go
27 down upon your wrath, Neither give place to the devil.
28 Let him that stole steal no more, but rather let him
labour, working with his hands the thing which is good,
29 that he may have to give *him* that needeth. Let no
corrupt *discourse* proceed out of your mouth, but that
which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister
30 grace *to* the hearers. And grieve not the Holy Spirit
of God, whereby ye *have been* sealed unto the day of
31 redemption. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger,
and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you,
32 with all malice. *But* be ye kind one to another, tender

hearted; forgiving one another; . . as God *also* for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

5 Be ye therefore followers of God, as *beloved* children;
And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and . .
2 given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God
3 *of* a sweet-smelling savour. But *let not* fornication, or
any uncleanness, or covetousness, be *even* named among
4 you, as becometh saints: Neither *obscenity*, nor foolish
talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient, but rather
5 *thanksgiving*. For this ye know, that no whoremonger,
or unclean person, *or* covetous man, who is an idolater,
hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of
6 God. Let no *one* deceive you with vain words; for
because of these things *the wrath of God cometh upon* the
7 *sons* of disobedience. Be *ye not* therefore partakers
8 with them. For ye were *once* darkness; but now *ye are*
9 light in the Lord: walk as children of light; . . The
fruit of the *light* is in all goodness, and righteousness,
10 and truth: Proving what is acceptable *to* the Lord.
11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of
12 darkness, but rather reprove them. For it is a shame
even to speak . . *the* things which are done *by* them in
13 secret. But all things *which* are reproved are made
manifest by the light; *for whatsoever* doth make manifest
14 is light. Wherefore he saith, Awake, thou that sleepest,
and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.
15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but
16 as wise *men*, Redeeming the time, because the days are
17 evil. Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding
18 what *is the will of the Lord*. And be not *drunken* with
wine, wherein is excess; *but* be *ye* filled with the Spirit;
19 Speaking to *each other* in psalms, and hymns, and
spiritual songs, singing and making melody *with* your
20 hearts *unto* the Lord; Giving thanks always for all
things *to* God, *even* the Father, in the name of our Lord
21 Jesus Christ, Submitting yourselves one to another in
the fear of God.
22 Wives, submit yourselves *to* your *own* husbands as
23 unto the Lord; For the husband is the head of the
wife, . . as Christ *also* is head of the Church: (and he
24 is the Saviour of the body). Therefore as the Church
is subject *to* Christ, so *also* let the wives be to their own
25 husbands in every thing. Husbands, love your wives,
even as Christ loved the Church, and gave *up* himself
26 for it; That he might sanctify *it* (*having cleansed* it *by*
27 the washing of water) *through* the word; That he might
present it to himself a glorious Church, not having spot
or wrinkle, or any such thing, . . that it *may* be holy

28 and *unblamable. Men ought so* to love their wives as
their own bodies: he that loveth his wife loveth himself.
29 *Now* no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourisheth and
30 cherisheth it, *as also* the Lord the Church. For we are
31 members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. For
this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and
shall be joined *to* his wife, and *they* two shall be one
32 flesh. This is a great mystery: . . I *mean* concerning
33 Christ and the Church. *But* let every one of you in
particular so love his wife . . as himself: and *let the wife reverence* her husband.

6 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is
right. Honour thy father and mother, (which is the
3 first commandment with *a* promise,) That it may be
well with thee, and thou mayest live long *upon* the earth.
4 And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath,
but bring them up in the *instruction* and *discipline* of
the Lord.
5 Servants, *obey* your masters according to the flesh,
with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as
6 unto *the Lord:* Not with eye service, as men pleasers,
but as . . servants of Christ, doing the will of God from
7 the *soul;* With good will doing service as *unto* the Lord,
8 and not to men: Knowing that whatsoever good . .
each man doth, the same shall he receive *from* the Lord,
9 whether he be *a servant* or free. And ye, masters, do
the same things *to* them, forbearing threatening, knowing
that your *own* Master . . is in heaven, *and* there *is no respect* of persons with him.
10 Finally, . . brethren, be strong *through* the Lord, and
11 *through* the power of his might. Put on the whole
armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against
12 the wiles of the devil. For *our wrestling is* not against
flesh and blood, but against principalities, against
powers, against the rulers of the *world, of the darkness of this age,* against *wicked spirits in heavenly places.*
13 Wherefore, take *to* you the whole armour of God, that
ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having
14 done all, to stand: Stand, therefore, having your loins
girt about *you* with truth, and having *put* on the breast-
15 plate of righteousness, And *having* your feet shod with
16 the preparation of the Gospel of peace. Above all,
taking the shield of faith, *whereby* ye shall be able to
17 quench all the fiery darts of the wicked *one.* And take
the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit,
18 which is the word of God. Praying always *by the Spirit with all prayer and supplication,* and watching
thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all

19 *the* saints, And for me, that utterance may be given . .
me, *by the opening of* my mouth *to make known boldly* the
20 mystery of the Gospel, For which I am an ambassador
in bonds, *that I may speak boldly therein,* as I ought
to speak.
21 But that ye also may know my affairs, . . how I do,
Tychicus, a beloved brother and faithful minister in the
22 Lord, *will* make known to you all things: Whom I have
sent *to* you for *this very thing,* that ye might know our
23 affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts. Peace
be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the
24 Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace be with all . .
that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. Amen.

ST. PAUL'S Epistle to the PHILIPPIANS

PHILIPPI was so called from Philip King of Macedonia, who much enlarged and beautified it. Afterwards it became a Roman colony, and the chief city of that part of Macedonia. Hither St. Paul was sent by a vision to preach; and here, not long after his coming, he was shamefully treated. Nevertheless many were converted by him, during the short time of his abode there; by whose liberality he was more assisted, than by any other church of his planting. And they had now sent large assistance to him by Epaphroditus, by whom he returns them this epistle.

PHILIPPIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul and Timotheus, . . servants of Jesus Christ, to
all the saints in Christ Jesus *who* are at Philippi, with
2 the bishops and deacons, Grace be unto you, and peace
3 from God our Father and . . the Lord Jesus Christ. I
4 thank my God upon every *mention* of you. Always in
all my prayers . . making supplication for you all with
5 *joy*, For your fellowship in the Gospel from the first
6 day until now: Being *persuaded* of this very thing, that
he *who* hath begun a good work in you, will *perfect* it
7 until the day of Jesus Christ, . . As it is *right* for me
to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart,
who are all partakers of my grace, both in my bonds, and
8 *in the defence and confirmation of the Gospel.* For God
is my *witness*, how . . I long *for* you all, *with* the bowels
9 of Jesus Christ, And this I pray, that your love may
abound yet more and more, in *all* knowledge, and in all
10 *spiritual sense*, That ye may *try the* things that are
excellent, that ye may be sincere and without offence
11 *unto* the day of Christ. Being filled with the fruits of
righteousness, which are *through* Christ Jesus, *to* the
glory and praise of God.
12 *Now* I would *have you know*, brethren, that the things
concerning me have fallen out rather *to* the furtherance

13 of the Gospel: So that my bonds in Christ *have been made* manifest in *the whole palace, and to all others:*
14 And many of the brethren, *trusting in the Lord through* my bonds, are . . more *abundantly* bold to speak the word without fear.
15 Some indeed preach Christ even *through* envy and
16 strife: *but* some . . *through* good will. The one preach Christ *out* of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add
17 affliction to my bonds: But the *others out* of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.
18 What then? *still* every way, whether in pretence or in truth, Christ is preached: and *in this I rejoice,* yea, and
19 will rejoice. For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the
20 Spirit of Jesus Christ: According to my earnest expectation and . . hope, that *I shall be ashamed in nothing,* but that with all boldness, as always, so now also, Christ shall be *magnified* in my body, whether . . by life or by death.
21 For to me to live *is* Christ, and to die is gain. But
22 if I *am to* live in the flesh, this *is* the fruit of my labour,
23 *and* what I *should* choose, I *know* not. For I am in a strait *between* two, having a desire to depart and to be
24 with Christ, which is far better. *But* to *remain* in the
25 flesh is more needful for you. And *being persuaded of this,* I know that I shall *remain* and continue with you
26 all, for your furtherance and joy of faith: That your rejoicing *for me* may *abound through* Christ Jesus . . by
27 my *presence* with you again. Only let your *behaviour* be *worthy of* the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or . . be absent, I may hear *concerning you* that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one *soul* striving
28 together for the faith of the Gospel, And in nothing terrified by your adversaries, which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation. *This also is*
29 *of God.* For *to* you it is given *with regard to* Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer *for him:*
30 Having the same conflict, which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

2 If there be *then* any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any
2 bowels *of* mercies; Fulfil ye my joy, that ye *think the same thing,* having the same love, being of one *soul,* of
3 one mind. *Do nothing* through strife or vain glory, but in lowliness of mind, *esteem each* the others better than
4 themselves. *Aim* not every one *at* his own things, but
5 every *one* also *at* the things of others. Let this mind
6 be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, Who being

in the form of God, *counted it no act of robbery* to be
7 equal with God; *Yet emptied* himself . . *taking* . . the
form of a servant, *being made* in the likeness of men.
8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled him-
self, *becoming* obedient *even* unto death, *yea*, the death
9 of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted
him, and *hath* given him a name which is above every
10 name, That at the name of Jesus every knee *might* bow,
of *those* in heaven, and *those* on earth, and *those* under
11 the earth; And . . every tongue *might* confess, that
Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father.
12 Wherefore, my beloved, as *you* have always obeyed,
not as in my presence only, but *much more now* in my
absence, work out your own salvation with fear and
13 trembling. For it is God *that* worketh in you *according*
14 *to his good pleasure, both to will and to do.* Do all things
15 without murmurings and disputings: That ye may be
blameless and *simple*, the sons of God, *unrebukable*, in
the midst of a crooked and perverse *generation*, among
16 whom ye shine as lights in the world. Holding *fast* the
word of life, that I may *glory* in the day of Christ, that
I *have* not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.
17 Yea, and if I be offered upon the sacrifice and service
18 of your faith, I *rejoice* and *congratulate* you all. For the
19 same cause *rejoice ye likewise and congratulate me. Now*
I trust in the Lord Jesus, to send Timotheus *to you*
shortly, that I also may be *encouraged, when* I know
20 your state, For I have *none* like-minded who will
21 naturally care for *what concerneth you.* For all seek
22 their own, not the things *of* Jesus Christ. But ye know
the proof of him, that as a son with *his* father, he hath
23 served with me in the Gospel. Him therefore I hope to
send . . *as* soon as *ever I know* how it will go with me.
24 But I trust in the Lord that I also myself shall come
25 shortly. Yet I *thought* it necessary to send *also* to you
Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour,
and fellow soldier, but your messenger, and *him* that
26 ministered to my *need.* For he longed after you all,
and was full of heaviness, because . . ye had heard
27 that he *was* sick. *He was indeed sick* nigh unto death;
but God had *compassion* on him; and not on him only,
but on me *likewise*, lest I should have sorrow upon
28 sorrow. I *have* sent him therefore the more *willingly*,
that . . *ye seeing him* again may rejoice, and that I *also*
29 may be the less sorrowful. Receive him therefore in
30 the Lord with all gladness, and *honour such.* Because
for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not
regarding his *own* life, to supply your *deficiency* of service
toward me.

3 Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write
the same things to you, *is not tedious to me, and it is*
2 *safe for you.* Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers,
3 beware of the concision. For we are . . the circumcision, *who* worship God in . . spirit, and *glory* in Christ
4 Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. Though I might . . have confidence *even* in the flesh. If any other man *be fully persuaded* that he *may have confidence*
5 *in the flesh,* I more: Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, *a* Hebrew of
6 Hebrews, . . touching the law, a Pharisee; *Touching* zeal, persecuting the Church, touching the righteousness
7 which is *by* the law, blameless. But *whatsoever* things were gain to me, those I *have accounted* loss for Christ.
8 Yea, doubtless, and I *account* all things *to be loss,* for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do
9 *account* them but dung, that I may *gain* Christ; And be found in him, not having *my* own righteousness which is of the law, but that which is through . . faith *in* Christ, the righteousness which is *from* God by faith:
10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made con-
11 formable *to* his death: If by any means I *may* attain
12 unto the resurrection of the dead. Not *that I have already attained, or am already perfected:* but I *pursue* if . . I may apprehend that for which *I was also* appre-
13 hended by Christ Jesus. Brethren, I *do not account* myself to have apprehended: but one thing I do, forgetting *the* things *that* are behind, and reaching forth
14 unto *the* things which are before, I press toward the *goal,* for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.
15 Let us therefore, as many as *are* perfect, be thus minded; and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall
16 reveal even this unto you; *But whereunto* we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.
17 Brethren, be *ye* followers together of me, and mark
18 them *who* walk . . as ye have us for an example. (For many walk, of whom I have told you often and now tell you even weeping, that they are . . enemies of the
19 cross of Christ. Whose end is destruction, whose god *is* their belly, and whose glory is in their shame; who
20 mind earthly things.) For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus
21 Christ, Who *will transform* our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the *mighty* working, whereby he is able even to *subject* all things *to* himself.

4 Therefore, my brethren, . . beloved and longed for,
my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my . .
2 beloved. I beseech Euodias, and *I* beseech Syntyche,
3 *to be of one* mind in the Lord. And I entreat thee also,
true yoke fellow, help those women *who* laboured
together with me in the Gospel, with *both* Clement and *my*
other fellow labourers, whose names are in the book of life.
4 Rejoice in the Lord always: . . again I say, Rejoice.
5 Let your *gentleness* be known *to* all men; the Lord is at
6 hand. Be careful for nothing, but in every thing by
prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your
7 requests be made known *to* God: And the peace of God,
which *surpasseth* all understanding, shall keep your
hearts and *your* minds through Christ Jesus.
8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, what-
soever things are honest, whatsoever things are just,
whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are
lovely, whatsoever things are of good report: if there be
any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these
9 things; *The* things which ye have both learned and
received and heard and seen in me, *these* do: and the
God of peace shall be with you.
10 . . I *rejoiced* in the Lord greatly, that now at last
your care of me hath flourished again; wherein ye were
11 also careful; but ye *wanted* opportunity. Not that I
speak in respect of want; for I have learned in *whatsoever*
12 state I am, . . to be content. I know . . how to be
abased, and I know how to abound: every where and
in *every thing* I am instructed, both to be full and to be
13 hungry; both to abound and to *want.* I can do all
14 things through Christ *strengthening* me. *Nevertheless* ye
have *done well*, that ye *did* communicate *to me in* my
15 affliction. *And ye know likewise*, O Philippians, that in
the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from
Macedonia, no Church communicated with me *in respect*
16 *of* giving and receiving, but *you* only. For even in
Thessalonica ye sent once and again *to* my *necessities.*
17 Not *that I desire* a gift, but I desire fruit that may
18 abound to your account. But I have all *things*, and
abound; I am *filled*, having received of Epaphroditus
the things which *came* from you, an odour of a sweet
19 smell, *an acceptable sacrifice*, well pleasing to God. *And*
my God shall supply all your need, according to his
20 riches in glory *through* Christ Jesus. Now unto *our*
God and Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen.
21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren
22 *who* are with me *salute* you. All the saints salute you,
23 chiefly *they* that are of Caesar's household. The grace
of *the* Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

ST. PAUL'S Epistle to the COLOSSIANS

COLOSSE was a city of the Greater Phrygia, not far from Laodicea and Hierapolis. Though St. Paul preached in many parts of Phrygia, yet he never had been at this city. It had received the gospel by the preaching of Epaphras, who was with St. Paul when he wrote this epistle.

It seems the Colossians were now in danger of being seduced by those who strove to blend Judaism or Heathen superstitions with Christianity: pretending, that God, because of his great majesty, was not to be approached but by the mediation of angels: and that there were certain rites and observances chiefly borrowed from the law, whereby these angels might be made our friends.

In opposition to them the apostle 1. Commends the knowledge of Christ, as more excellent than all other, and so entire and perfect, that no other knowledge was necessary for a Christian. He 2. shews, That Christ is above all angels, who are only his servants; and that being reconciled to God through him, we have free access to him in all our necessities.

COLOSSIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God,
2 and Timotheus, *a* brother, To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ . . at Colosse, grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 We give thanks to *the* God and . . Father of our
4 Lord Jesus Christ, (praying always for you, *Hearing* of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of *your* love to all the
5 saints). For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, *of which* ye heard before in the word of . . truth of the

6 Gospel, Which is come *to* you, as *also* it is in all the
world, and bringeth forth fruit, as *it hath done likewise*
among you, *from* the day ye heard . . it, and knew the
7 grace of God in truth: As ye *likewise* learned of Epa-
phras, our *beloved* fellow servant, who is *a faithful min-*
8 *ister of Christ for you:* Who also declared *to* us your
9 love in the Spirit. For this cause *from the day we heard*
it, we do not cease to pray *also* for you, and to desire
that ye *may* be filled with the knowledge of his will,
10 in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye
may walk worthy of the Lord, unto all pleasing, being
fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the
11 knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might accord-
ing to his glorious power, unto all patience and long
12 suffering with joyfulness: Giving thanks unto the Father,
who hath made us meet to *partake* of the inheritance of
13 the saints in light; Who hath delivered us from the
power of darkness, and hath translated us into the
14 kingdom of his *beloved* Son. In whom we have redemp-
15 tion through his blood, . . the forgiveness of sins: Who
is the image of the invisible God, the first *begotten* of
16 every creature. For *through* him were *created all things*
that are in heaven and that are *on* earth, visible and
invisible; whether they be thrones, or dominions, or
principalities, or powers; all things were created by him
17 and for him. And he is before all things, and by him
18 all things consist. And he is the head of *his* body the
Church; who is the beginning, the first *begotten* from
the dead, that in all things he might have the pre-
19 eminence. For it pleased the Father that *all fulness*
20 *should dwell in him:* And *by him to reconcile all things*
to himself, (*having made peace by him through the blood*
of the cross,) . . whether things *on* earth, or things in
21 heaven. And you that were *once* alienated, and enemies
in your mind by wicked works, *he hath now reconciled,*
22 *By* the body of his flesh, through death, to present you
23 holy, and *spotless,* and unreprovable in his sight; If ye
continue in the faith, grounded, and settled, and *are*
not *removed* from the hope of the Gospel which ye have
heard, . . which *is* preached to every creature *that* is
24 under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a minister. *Now*
I rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up *in my flesh*
that which is behind of the sufferings of Christ for his body,
25 . . which is the Church: *Of which* I am made a minister,
according to the dispensation of God, which is given to
26 me for you, *fully to preach* the word of God: . . The
mystery which hath been hid from ages and . . genera-
27 tions; but now is *manifested* to his saints: To whom
among the Gentiles it was the will of God to make known,

what is the riches of this glorious mystery, which is Christ
28 in you, the hope of glory; Whom we preach, *admonishing* every man, and teaching every man *with* all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect *through* Christ
29 Jesus. *For which also I labour*, striving according to his *mighty* working, *who* worketh in me mightily.

2 For I would *have you know how great a conflict* I have for you and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as
2 have not seen my face in the flesh; That their hearts *may* be comforted, being knit together in love, *even* unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding *unto* the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, *both* the
3 Father and Christ. In whom are hid all the treasures
4 of wisdom and knowledge. And this I say, *that no* man
5 *may* beguile you with enticing words. For though I *am* absent *from you* in the flesh, yet *I am present* with you in spirit, *rejoicing to behold* your order, and the
6 steadfastness of your faith in Christ. As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk . . in him:
7 Rooted and built up in him, and *established* in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.
8 Beware lest any man *make a prey* of you through philosophy and *empty* deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.
9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead
10 bodily. And ye are *filled by* him, *who* is the head of all
11 principality and power. *By* whom also ye *have been* circumcised with *a* circumcision *not performed with hands*, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the
12 circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism, *by which ye are also risen* with him through the faith of the operation of God, who . . *raised* him from the
13 dead. And you, *who were* dead in *trespasses* and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together
14 with him, having forgiven you all trespasses. *Having blotted* out *by his decrees the handwriting against us*, which was contrary to us; *and having nailed it to his*
15 *cross, he took it out of the way.* And having spoiled *the* principalities and powers, he *exposed* them openly, triumphing over them in *him*.
16 Let *none* therefore judge you in meat, or . . drink, or in respect of *a feast* day, or of the new moon, or of . .
17 Sabbath days: Which are a shadow of things to come;
18 but the body is of Christ. Let *none defraud* you of your reward *by* a voluntary humility and *worship* of angels, intruding into *the* things which he hath not seen, vainly
19 puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the head,

from which all the body *being nourished and knit together, by the joints and ligaments,* increaseth with the increase
20 of God. *Therefore* if ye *are* dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as . . living in the world,
21 *receive ye* ordinances, (Touch not, taste not, handle not:
22 *All which* are to perish *in* the using,) after the com-
23 mandments and doctrines of men? Which things, (*though they have* indeed a show of wisdom, in *voluntary* worship and humility, and *not sparing* the body,) *yet are* not of any *value, but are* to the satisfying of the flesh.

3 If ye then *are* risen with Christ, seek *the* things . . above, where Christ sitteth *at* the right hand of God.
2 Set your affections on *the* things above, not . . *the*
3 things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is
4 hid with Christ in God. When Christ . . our life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.
5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil
6 *desire,* and covetousness, which is idolatry: For which . . the wrath of God cometh on the children of dis-
7 obedience: In . . which ye also *once* walked when ye
8 lived in them. But now *put ye likewise all these things off,* anger, wrath, *ill nature, evil speaking,* filthy *discourse*
9 out of your mouth. Lie not one to another, seeing . .
10 ye have put off the old man with his deeds, And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge,
11 after the image of him that created him: Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision; barbarian, Scythian, *slave* nor free; but Christ
12 is all, and in all. Put on, therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humble-
13 ness of mind, meekness, long suffering; Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any . . have a *complaint* against any, even as Christ forgave you, so
14 also do ye. And above all these . . put on *love,* which
15 is the bond of *perfection:* And . . the peace of God *shall* rule in your hearts, to . . which also ye *have been*
16 called in one body: and be ye thankful. Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your *heart unto*
17 the Lord. And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks *unto* God and the Father *through* him.
18 Wives, submit yourselves *to* your own husbands (as
19 is fit) in the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and be
20 not bitter against them. Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing *to* the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they
22 be discouraged. Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eye service as men pleasers, but in singleness of heart fearing God.
23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord,
24 and not *to* men: Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance; for ye *receive* the
25 Lord Christ. *But* he that *doth* wrong shall receive for the wrong . . he hath done; and there is no respect of persons.

4 Masters, *render* unto your servants that which is just and *equitable*, knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.
2 Continue in prayer, and watch *therein* with thanks-
3 giving: Withal, praying *likewise* for us, that God would open *to* us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of
4 Christ: for which I am also in bonds: *That* I may make
5 *it* manifest, as I ought to speak. Walk in wisdom toward
6 them that are without, redeeming the time. Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every *one*.
7 All my *concerns will* Tychicus declare *to* you, . . a beloved brother and a faithful minister and fellow
8 servant in the Lord: Whom I have sent *to* you for *this very thing*, that he might know your state and comfort
9 your hearts, With Onesimus, a faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you: they *will* make known *to* you all things *that* are done here.
10 Aristarchus, my fellow prisoner, saluteth you, and Marcus, sister's son *to* Barnabas, (touching whom ye *have* received *directions:* if he come *to* you, receive him:)
11 And Jesus, . . called Justus, who are of the circumcision: these *are the only* fellow workers unto the king-
12 dom of God, *who* have been a comfort *to* me. Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and *filled with* all the will of God.
13 For I bear him *witness*, that he hath a great zeal for you, and *for* them . . in Laodicea, and *for* them in Hierapolis.
14 Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, *salute* you.
15 Salute the brethren . . at Laodicea, and Nymphas, and
16 the Church . . in his house. And when this epistle *hath been* read among you, cause *it to be read* also in the Church of the Laodiceans, and that ye likewise read the
17 epistle from Laodicea. And say to Archippus, Take heed *that thou fulfil* the ministry which thou hast
18 received in the Lord. The salutation *of Paul by my own hand, Be mindful* of my bonds. Grace be with you.

ST. PAUL'S

First Epistle to the THESSALONIANS

THIS is the first of all the epistles which St. Paul wrote. Thessalonica was one of the chief cities of Macedonia. Hither St. Paul went after the persecution of Philippi. But he had not preached here long, before the unbelieving Jews raised a tumult against him and Sylvanus and Timotheus. On this the brethren sent them away to Berea. Thence St. Paul went by sea to Athens, and sent for Sylvanus and Timotheus, to come speedily to him. But being in fear lest the Thessalonian converts should be moved from their stedfastness, after a short time he sends Timotheus to them to know the state of their church. Timotheus returning found the apostle at Corinth; from whence he sent them this epistle, about a year after he had been at Thessalonica.

I. THESSALONIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, and Sylvanus, and Timotheus, *to* the Church
of the Thessalonians . . in God the Father and . . the
Lord Jesus Christ, Grace *be* unto you and peace from
God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
2 We give thanks to God always for you all (making
3 mention of you in our prayers, Remembering without
ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and
patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight
4 of *our* God and . . Father:) Knowing, *beloved brethren*,
5 your election of God. For our Gospel came not *to* you
in word only, but also *with* power, and *with* the Holy
Ghost, and *with* much assurance; as ye know what
manner of men we were among you, for your sake.
6 And ye became *imitators* of us and of the Lord, having
received the word in much affliction, with joy of the
7 Holy Ghost. So that ye *became examples* to all that
8 believed in Macedonia and Achaia. For from you *the*

word of the Lord sounded forth, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but *your faith toward God went abroad in every place also,* so that we need not speak any thing.
9 For they themselves *declare concerning* us what manner of *entrance to you we had,* and how ye turned *from idols*
10 *to God,* to serve the living and true God, And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he *hath* raised from the dead, even Jesus, *who delivereth* us from the wrath to come.

2 For yourselves, brethren, know our entrance . . *to* you, that it was not in vain: But even after . . we had
2 suffered before, and *had been* shamefully *treated at Philippi, as ye know,* we were bold *through* our God to speak *to* you the Gospel of God with much contention.
3 For our exhortation *is* not of deceit, nor of uncleanness,
4 nor in guile. But as we *have been approved* of God to be *entrusted* with the Gospel, . . *so we speak,* not as pleasing
5 men, but God, *who* trieth our hearts. For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a
6 cloak of covetousness: God is witness: Nor *sought we glory of men,* neither *from* you, nor . . *from* others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of
7 Christ. But we were gentle *in the midst of* you, even as a
8 nurse cherisheth her *own* children. So *loving you tenderly,* we *were ready to impart to* you not *only* the Gospel of God, . . but *our own souls also,* because ye
9 were dear *to* us. For ye remember, brethren, our labour and *toil:* . . *working* night and day, *that* we might *not burden any of you,* we preached *to* you the
10 Gospel of God. Ye are witnesses, and God, . . how holily, and justly, and unblamably we behaved . . among
11 you that believe; As ye know how we exhorted and comforted . . every one of you, as a father his *own*
12 children, *And charged* you *to walk* worthy of God, who
13 hath called you *to* his kingdom and glory. For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, *even* because when ye received the word of God which ye heard *from* us, ye received it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, *who likewise effectually* work-
14 eth . . in you that believe. For ye, brethren, became followers of the Churches of God *in Christ Jesus, which are in Judea;* for ye *also* . . suffered *the same* things *from* your own countrymen, . . as they *likewise from* the
15 Jews: Who both killed the Lord Jesus and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not
16 God, *and* are contrary to all men; Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they *may* be saved; to fill up their sins always; *but* wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short
time in presence, not in heart, *laboured with great desire*
18 *the more abundantly to see your face.* Wherefore we would
have come *to* you (even I Paul) once and again, but
19 Satan hindered us. For what is our hope, or joy, or
crown of rejoicing? Are not ye *also before our Lord*
20 *Jesus at his appearing?* For ye are our glory and joy.

3 *Therefore,* when we could *bear no longer* we thought . .
good to be left at Athens alone, And sent Timotheus
2 our brother and *a* minister of God, and our fellow *worker*
in the Gospel of Christ, to establish you and to comfort
3 you concerning your faith, That no *one might* be moved
by *these* afflictions; for *ye* yourselves know that we are
4 appointed *hereto:* For . . when we were with you we
told you before . . we should *be afflicted;* . . as it came
5 to pass, and ye know. *Therefore* when I could *bear no*
longer, I sent to know your faith, lest by *any* means the
tempter *should* have tempted you, and our labour be
6 in vain. But now when Timotheus *was come to us from*
you, and *had* brought us *the* good tidings of your faith
and *love,* and that ye have *a* good remembrance of us
always, *longing* . . to see us, as we also to see you:
7 Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all
8 our affliction and distress by your faith. For now we
9 live, if ye stand fast in the Lord. For what thanks can
we render to God . . for you, for all the joy wherewith
10 we *rejoice* for your sake before our God? Night and day
praying exceedingly, that we *may* see your face, and . .
11 perfect that which is *wanting* in your faith. Now *our*
God and Father himself, and our Lord Jesus, direct our
12 way unto you. And the Lord make you to increase
and abound in love *toward one another,* and toward all
13 men, . . as we *also* do toward you. *That* he may
establish your hearts unblamable in holiness, (before *our*
God *and* . . Father, at the *appearing* of our Lord Jesus
Christ,) with all his saints.

4 *It remaineth,* then, brethren, *that* we beseech and exhort
you by the Lord Jesus, . . as ye have received of us
how ye ought to walk and to please God, *that* ye . .
2 abound *therein* more and more. For ye know what com-
3 mandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. For this
is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye . .
4 abstain from fornication; That every one of you . .
know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and
5 honour; Not in *passionate desire,* . . as the Gentiles
6 *who* know not God. That *none circumvent or* defraud
his brother in *this* matter, because the Lord is *an* avenger

of all *these things*, as *we have also told you before* and
7 testified. For God hath not called us *to* uncleanness,
8 but *to* holiness. He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God: who hath also given *you* his Holy Spirit.
9 . . Touching brotherly love, *we* need not . . write *to* you: for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one
10 another. *And* indeed ye do it toward all the brethren *that* are in all Macedonia; but we *exhort* you, brethren,
11 that ye increase more and more, And that ye study to be quiet and . . do your own business, and to work with
12 your . . hands, as we commanded you; That ye may walk *decently* toward them that are without, and . . may *want* nothing.
13 *Now* we would not have you . . ignorant, brethren, concerning them *that* are asleep, that ye sorrow not even
14 as others *who* have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, . . so *will God bring with him those*
15 *also that sleep in Jesus.* For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we *who* are alive, *who are left to* the *appearing* of the Lord, shall not prevent them *that*
16 are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of *an* archangel, and with the *trumpet* of God; and the dead in Christ
17 shall rise first. Then we *who* are alive *who* are *left*, shall be caught up together with them in clouds to meet the Lord in the air; . . so shall we *be ever* with the Lord.
18 Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

5 But of the times and . . seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write *to* you. For *ye* yourselves know per-
2 fectly, that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in
3 the night. . . When they . . say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail
4 upon a woman with child, and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should
5 overtake you as a thief. Ye are all . . children of *the* light, and children of the day: we are not *children* of the
6 night nor of darkness. Therefore let us not sleep as
7 *the* others, but let us *awake* and *keep awake.* For they that sleep, sleep in the night, and they that *are* drunken,
8 are drunken in the night. But let us who are of the day *keep awake, having put* on the breastplate of faith
9 and love, and for *a* helmet the hope of salvation. For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain
10 salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we *may* live together
11 with him. Wherefore comfort *one another* . . and edify one another, . . as also ye do.

12 *Now* we beseech you, brethren, to know them *that*
labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and
13 admonish you. And to esteem them very highly in love
for their work's sake, and be at peace among yourselves.
14 *And* we exhort you, brethren, warn *the disorderly*, com-
fort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be *long-suffer-*
15 *ing* toward all men. See that none render *to any man*
evil for evil, but ever follow that which is good, both *to*
16 *one another* and to all men. Rejoice evermore: Pray
18 without ceasing: In every thing give thanks; for this is
19 the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you. Quench
20 not the Spirit. Despise not prophesyings. Prove all
22 things; hold fast that which is good. Abstain from
23 all appearance of evil. And the . . God of peace *him-*
self sanctify you wholly: and . . *may the whole of you*,
the spirit, and the soul, and the body, be preserved
blameless unto the *appearing* of our Lord Jesus Christ.
24 Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.
25 Brethren, pray for us. *Salute* all the brethren with *a*
27 holy kiss. I *adjure* you by the Lord, that this epistle
28 be read *to* all the holy brethren. The grace of our Lord
Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

ST. PAUL'S

Second Epistle to the THESSALONIANS

THIS epistle seems to have been written soon after the former, chiefly on occasion of some things therein, which had been misunderstood. Herein he 1. Congratulates their constancy in the faith, and exhorts them to advance daily in grace and wisdom. 2. Reforms their mistake concerning the coming of our Lord. And 3. Recommends several Christian duties.

II. THESSALONIANS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, and Sylvanus, and Timotheus, *to* the Church of
the Thessalonians in God our Father, and the Lord
2 Jesus Christ; Grace *be* unto you and peace from God
our Father, and *from our* Lord Jesus Christ.
3 We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren,
as it is meet, because . . your faith groweth exceedingly,
and the *love* of every one of you . . toward each other
4 aboundeth. So that we ourselves glory *of* you in the
Churches of God, for your patience and faith in all
your persecutions and *sufferings which* ye endure: . .
5 A manifest token of the righteous judgment of God,
that ye may be *accounted* worthy of the kingdom of
6 God; for which ye also suffer. Seeing it is a righteous
thing with God to recompense *affliction* to them that
7 *afflict* you: And to you *that* are *afflicted* rest with us,
at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his
8 mighty angels, In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them
that know not God, and *who* obey not the Gospel of our
9 Lord Jesus . . : Who shall be punished with everlasting
destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the
10 glory of his power. When he shall come to be glorified
in his saints, and to be admired in all . . that believe
(*for* our testimony *was believed among you*) in that day.
11 . . *To this end* we pray always for you, that our God
would *make* you worthy of this calling, and fulfil *in you*

all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of
12 faith with power; That the name of our Lord Jesus
may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to
the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Now *I* beseech you, brethren, *concerning the appear-*
ing of our Lord Jesus Christ, and . . our gathering
2 together unto him, That ye be not soon shaken in mind
or *terrified*, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter,
3 as from us, as *if* the day of *the Lord were* at hand. Let
no man deceive you by any means, for that day shall
not come, *unless the falling away come first*, and *the* man
4 of sin be revealed, the son of perdition, Who opposeth
and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or
that is worshipped, so that he . . sitteth in the temple
5 of God *as God, declaring* himself that he is God. Re-
member ye not, that *I told you these things, when I was*
6 *yet with you?* And now ye know *that which restraineth,*
7 that he *may* be revealed in his time. For the mystery
of iniquity *already worketh;* only he *that restraineth will*
8 *restrain, till* he be taken out of the way. And then *will*
that wicked one be revealed, whom the Lord *will* consume
with the Spirit of his mouth, and . . destroy with the
9 brightness of his *appearing:* . . Whose *appearing* is
after the *mighty* working of Satan, with all power and
10 signs, and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness
of unrighteousness in them that perish, because they
received not the love of the truth, that they might be
11 saved. And *therefore* God shall send them strong delu-
12 sion, *so* that they *shall* believe the lie, That they all
may be *condemned*, who believed not the truth, but had
13 pleasure in unrighteousness. But we *ought* to give
thanks *to God always* for you, brethren, beloved of the
Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you
to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit and
14 belief of the truth: *To which* he *hath* called you by our
Gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus
15 Christ. Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the
traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word,
16 or *by* our epistle. Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself,
and God, even our Father, *who* hath loved us and . .
given us everlasting consolation and good hope through
17 grace, Comfort your hearts and stablish you in every
good word and work.

3 Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the
Lord may *run* and be glorified, even as . . *among* you:
2 And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and
3 wicked men: for all men have not faith. But the Lord

is faithful, who *will* stablish . . and *guard* you from *the*
4 evil *one*. And we *trust* in the Lord *concerning* you, that
ye both do and will do the things which we command
5 you. And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of
God and into the *patience of* Christ.
6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our
Lord Jesus Christ, *to* withdraw yourselves from every
brother that walketh disorderly, and not *according to*
7 the tradition which he received of us. For yourselves
know how ye ought to *imitate* us: . . we behaved not
8 . . *disorderly among you*, Neither did we eat any man's
bread for *nothing*, but wrought with labour and *toil*,
night and day, that we might not *burden* any of you.
9 Not because we have not *authority:* but *that we might*
make ourselves an *example to* you, *that ye might imitate*
10 us. For . . when we were with you, this we commanded
11 you, . . If any *will* not work, neither *let* him eat. For
we hear . . there are some *among you who walk dis-*
12 *orderly, doing nothing*, but *being* busy-bodies. Now . .
such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ,
13 *to work quietly*, and eat their own bread. But ye,
14 brethren, be not weary in well doing. And if any man
obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and
have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.
15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as
16 a brother. Now the Lord of peace himself give you
peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.
17 The salutation of Paul, with *my* own hand, which is
18 the token in every epistle: So I write. The grace of
our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

The First Epistle of ST. PAUL to TIMOTHY

THE mother of Timothy was a Jewess, but his father was a Gentile. He was converted to Christianity very early; and while he was yet but a youth, he was taken by St. Paul to assist him in the work of the gospel, chiefly in watering the churches which he had planted.

He was therefore properly (as was Titus) an itinerant evangelist, a kind of secondary apostle, whose office was, to regulate all things in the churches to which he was sent: and to inspect and reform whatsoever was amiss either in the bishops, deacons, or people.

St. Paul had doubtless largely instructed him in private conversation for the due execution of so weighty an office. Yet to fix things more upon his mind and to give him an opportunity of having recourse to them afterward, and of communicating them to others, as there might be occasion; as also to leave divine directions in writing, for the use of the church and its ministers in all ages, he sent them this excellent pastoral letter, which contains a great variety of important sentiments for their regulation.

Though St. Paul stiles him his own son in the faith, yet he does not appear to have been converted by the apostle; but only to have been exceeding dear to him, who had established him therein; and whom he had diligently and faithfully served like a son, with his father in the gospel. Phil. ii. 22.

I. TIMOTHY

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, *according to* the commandment of God our Saviour, and Christ Jesus . . our

hope, *To* Timotheus my own son in the faith, grace,
mercy, . . peace, from God our Father, and *Christ Jesus*
our Lord.
As I *exhorted* thee *when I was going into Macedonia,*
abide at Ephesus; that thou *mayest* charge some . . *to*
teach no other doctrine, Neither *to* give heed to fables
and . . endless genealogies, *that afford* questions, *and*
not godly edifying, which is *through* faith. *Whereas* the
end of the commandment is *love,* out of a pure heart,
and . . a good conscience, and . . faith unfeigned,
From which some, having *missed the mark, are* turned
aside *to* vain jangling: Desiring to be teachers of the
law, understanding neither *the things* they say, nor *those*
concerning which they confidently affirm. We know, . .
the law is good, if a man use it lawfully, Knowing this,
that the law *doth not lie against* a righteous man; but
against the lawless and disobedient, *against* the ungodly
and sinners, *the* unholy and profane, *against killers of*
their fathers *or their* mothers, *against murderers, Against*
whoremongers, *sodomites,* . . *man* stealers, . . liars, . .
perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is
contrary to *wholesome* doctrine. According to the glori-
ous Gospel of the blessed God, *with which I am entrusted.*
And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled
me, *in* that he accounted me faithful, *having put* me into
the ministry; Who was before a blasphemer, and a
persecutor, and *an oppressor;* but I obtained mercy,
because I did it ignorantly in unbelief. And the grace of
our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith and love
which is in Christ Jesus. This is a faithful saying, and
worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into
the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief. *Yet* for
this cause I obtained mercy that *on* me . . *the chief,*
Jesus Christ might show all long-suffering, for a pattern
to them *who* should hereafter believe *in* him to life ever-
lasting. Now *to* the King *of eternity,* immortal, invisible,
the only . . God, be honour and glory for ever and
ever. Amen.
This charge I commit *to* thee, son Timotheus, accord-
ing to the prophecies which went before *concerning* thee,
that thou *mightest by them* war *the* good warfare: Hold-
ing *fast* faith and a good conscience; which some having
thrust away, *have made shipwreck of their faith:* Of whom
are Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I have delivered
to Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

2 I exhort therefore, that first of all supplications,
prayers, intercessions, *thanksgivings,* be made for all men:
For kings and . . all that are in authority, that we may

lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and
3 honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of
4 God our Saviour, Who *willeth* all men to be saved and
5 to come *to* the knowledge of the truth. For there is
one God, . . one mediator *also* between God and men,
6 the man Christ Jesus, Who gave himself a ransom for
7 all, to be testified *of* in due *season*, Whereunto I am
ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth
. . , *I* lie not,) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and . .
8 *truth*. I will therefore that men pray *in every place*,
lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting:
9 *Likewise* . . that women adorn themselves in *decent*
apparel, with *modesty* and sobriety, not with *curled* hair,
10 or gold, or pearls, or costly *raiment*. But (which be-
cometh women professing godliness) with good works.
11 Let *a woman* learn in silence with all subjection. *For* I
suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority
13 over the *man*, but to be in silence. For Adam was first
14 formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived; but
15 the woman, being deceived, *transgressed*. *Yet* she shall
be saved in child bearing, if they continue in faith, and
love, and holiness, with sobriety.

3 This *is* a *faithful* saying, If a man desire the office of a
bishop, he desireth a good work. A bishop *therefore*
2 must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant,
3 *prudent*, of good behaviour, *hospitable*, apt to teach; Not
given to wine, no striker, not *desirous* of filthy *gain*, but
4 *gentle*, patient, *not loving money; Ruling his own house*
well, having his children in subjection with all *seriousness*.
5 For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how
6 shall he take care of the Church of God? Not a *new*
convert, lest being *puffed* up, . . he fall into the con-
7 demnation of the devil. He *ought also* to have a good
report *from* them *that* are without, lest he fall into
8 reproach, and the snare of the devil. Likewise *the*
deacons must be serious, not double-tongued, not given to
9 much wine, not *desirous* of filthy *gain;* Holding *fast* the
10 mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these
. . *be proved first*, then let them *minister*, being . .
11 blameless. *In like manner their wives must be serious*,
12 not slanderers, *vigilant*, faithful in all things. Let the
deacons be . . husbands of one wife, ruling their children,
13 and their own houses well. For they that have *dis-*
charged the office of a deacon well, purchase to them-
selves a good degree, and *much* boldness in the faith
14 which is in Christ Jesus. These things *I write to thee*,
15 hoping to come *to* thee shortly: But if I tarry . . , that
thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave . . in

the house of God, which is the Church of the living
God.
16 *The mystery of godliness is* the pillar and ground of
the truth, and without controversy *a great thing:* God
was *manifested* in the flesh, *was* justified *by* the Spirit,
seen *by* angels, preached *among* the Gentiles, believed on
in the world, *taken* up into glory.

4 *But* the Spirit *saith* expressly, that in the latter times
some *will* depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing
2 spirits and doctrines of devils, *By the hypocrisy of them
that speak lies,* having their *own* consciences seared *as*
3 with a hot iron: Forbidding to marry, and commanding
to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be
received with thanksgiving *by* them *that* believe and know
4 the truth. For every creature of God is good, and
nothing to be *rejected, being* received with thanksgiving;
5 For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.
6 If thou *remind* the brethren of these things, thou *wilt*
be a good minister of Jesus Christ, *nourishing them* with
the words of faith, and of the good doctrine *which* thou
7 hast *accurately traced out.* But *avoid* profane and old
wives' fables, and exercise thyself . . unto godliness.
8 For bodily exercise profiteth *a* little; but godliness is
profitable *for* all things, having *the* promise of the
9 *present* life, and of that which is to come. This is a
10 faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation. For
therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because
we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all
11 men, *especially* of *them* that believe. These things com-
12 mand and teach. Let no *one* despise thy youth; but
be . . a *pattern to them that believe,* in word, in *behaviour,*
13 in *love,* in spirit, in faith, in purity. Till I come, give
14 *thyself* to reading, to exhortation, to *teaching.* Neglect
not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by
prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presby-
15 tery. Meditate *on* these things; *be wholly in them,* that
16 thy profiting may appear *in all things.* Take heed *to*
thyself, and *to thy teaching:* continue in them, for *in so
doing* thou shalt *save both* thyself and them that hear thee.

5 Rebuke not an *aged man,* but *exhort* him as a father, . .
the younger men as brethren; The *aged* women as
2 mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity. Honour
4 widows that are widows indeed. But if any widow have
children or *grandchildren,* let *these* learn first to show
piety at home, and to requite their parents; for *this* is
5 good and acceptable before God. Now she that is a
widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and con-

6 tinueth in supplications and prayers, night and day. But
she that liveth in pleasure, is dead while she liveth.
7 And *enjoin these things*, that they may be blameless.
8 But if any provide not for his own, and *especially* for
those of his own *family*, he hath denied the faith, and is
9 worse than an infidel. Let not a widow be *chosen* . .
under threescore years old, having been the wife of one
10 *husband*, Well reported of for good works, if she *hath*
brought up children, if she *hath* lodged strangers, if she
hath washed the *feet of the saints*, if she *hath* relieved the
afflicted, if she *hath* diligently followed every good work.
11 But the younger widows refuse; for when they *are*
waxed wanton against Christ, they *want to* marry;
12 Having *condemnation*, because they have *rejected* their
13 first faith. And withal they learn to be idle, *going*
about from house to house; and not only idle, but
triflers . . and busy-bodies, speaking . . *what* they ought
14 not. I *counsel* therefore *the younger women to marry*,
bear children, guide the *family*, give *no* occasion *of*
15 *reproach to the adversary*. For some are already turned
16 aside after Satan. If any *believing man or woman hath*
widows, let them relieve them; and let not the Church
be *burdened*, that it may relieve them that are widows
indeed.
17 Let the elders *who* rule well be counted worthy of
double honour, especially *those who* labour in the word
18 and *teaching*. For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not
muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn: and The
19 labourer is worthy of his reward. Against an elder re-
ceive not an accusation, *unless by* two or three witnesses.
20 *Those* that sin rebuke before all, that *the rest* also may
21 fear. I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus
Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these
things without *prejudging*, doing nothing by partiality.
22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither *partake* of other
23 men's sins; keep thyself pure. Drink *water no longer*,
but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thy
24 *frequent* infirmities. Some men's sins are *manifest* before-
hand, going before to judgment: and some . . they
25 follow after. *In like manner* the good works *also* of
some are manifest . . and they that are otherwise can-
not be hid.

6 Let as many servants as are under the yoke, *account*
their own masters worthy of all honour; *lest* the name of
2 God and his doctrine be . . blasphemed. And they
that have believing masters, let them not despise them,
because they are brethren: but rather do them service,
because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the

benefit. These things teach and exhort. If any . . teach otherwise, and consent not to *sound* words, *those* of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is
after godliness, He is *puffed up* knowing nothing, but *being sick of* questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, *contentions, evil speakings,* evil surmisings,
Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness:
From such withdraw thyself. But godliness with *con-*
tent is great gain. For we brought nothing into *the* world: . . it is *manifest* that *neither* can we carry *any*
thing out: . . Having *then* food and *covering, with these*
let us be content. But they that *desire to* be rich, fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful *desires,* which *plunge* men *into* destruction and
perdition. For the love of money is the root of all *evils;* which . . some *coveting,* . . have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.
But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meek-
ness. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold *of* eternal life, *to which thou hast been called,* and hast *confessed the*
good *confession* before many witnesses. *I charge thee before God,* who quickeneth all things, and . . Christ Jesus, who *witnessed the good confession before Pontius*
Pilate, That thou keep *the* commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus
Christ, Which in his *own* times *the blessed and only Potentate will show,* the King of kings, *and* Lord of lords:
Who only hath immortality, dwelling in . . light *unap-proachable,* whom no man hath seen, *neither* can see; to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.
Charge *the rich* in this world *not to* be high-minded, *neither* to trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God,
who giveth us richly all things to enjoy: *To do good, to be* rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to
communicate, *Treasuring up* for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.
O Timotheus, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane, . . *empty* babblings, and oppo-
sitions of *knowledge,* falsely so called: Which some professing have erred *from* the faith. Grace be with thee.

The Second Epistle of ST. PAUL to TIMOTHY

THIS epistle was probably written by St. Paul, during his second confinement at Rome, not long before his martyrdom. It is, as it were, the swan's dying song. But though it was written many years after the former, yet they are both of the same kind, and nearly resemble each other.

II. TIMOTHY

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God
according to the promise of life, which is *by* Christ Jesus.
2 To Timotheus my . . beloved son, grace, mercy, . .
peace, from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.
3 I thank God whom I serve from my forefathers with
a pure conscience, that *I have remembrance of thee in*
4 *my prayers without ceasing night and day, Longing* to see
thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled
5 with joy; *Remembering* the unfeigned faith that is in
thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and
thy mother Eunice; . . I am persuaded . . in thee also.
6 Wherefore I *remind* thee *of stirring* up the gift of God
7 which is in thee, by the *laying* on of my hands. For
God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power,
8 and . . love, and . . *sobriety. Therefore be not* thou
ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his
prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the
9 Gospel, according to the power of God, Who hath saved
. . and called *us* with *a* holy calling, not according to
our works, but according to his own purpose and grace,
which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world
10 began; But is now made manifest by the appearing of
our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death,
and hath brought life and immortality to light through
11 the Gospel: Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and
12 an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. For . . which
cause *also I suffer* these things: *yet* I am not ashamed,

for I know whom I have *trusted*, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed *to* him, *until* that day. Hold fast the *pattern* of sound words, which thou hast heard *from* me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. *The* good thing which *is* committed *to* thee keep, *through* the Holy *Spirit, who* dwelleth in us. This thou knowest, that all . . *who* are in Asia *are* turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes. The Lord give mercy *to* the *family* of Onesiphorus; for he *hath often* refreshed me, and *hath not been* ashamed of my chain: But when he was *at* Rome, he sought me out very diligently and found me. The Lord grant . . him *to find* mercy *from* the Lord in that day: and in how many things he *served* . . me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

Thou therefore, my son, be strong *through* the grace *which* is *by* Christ Jesus. And the things *which* thou hast heard *from* me *before* many witnesses, *these* commit . . to faithful men, who *will* be able to teach others also. Thou therefore endure *affliction* as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. No man that warreth entangleth himself *in* the affairs of this life, that he may please him who hath *enlisted* him. . . And if a man . . strive, . . *he is* not crowned *unless* he strive lawfully. The husbandman, that laboureth *first, must* be partaker of the *fruit.* Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things. Remember . . Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, . . raised from the dead according to my Gospel; *For which I endure affliction even unto bonds, as an evil-doer;* but the word of God is not bound. Therefore I *suffer* all things for the elect's sake, that they *also may* obtain the salvation which is *through* Christ Jesus, with eternal glory. It is a faithful saying; . . if we *are* dead with him, we shall also live with him: If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he *will also* deny us: If we believe not, . . he *remaineth* faithful; he cannot deny himself.

Remind them of these things, charging them before the Lord, *not to strive* about words to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers. *Be diligent* to *present thyself unto God approved,* a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. But *avoid* profane, . . *empty* babblings; for they will increase *to* more ungodliness. And their word will eat as . . *a gangrene;* of whom *are* Hymeneus and Philetus, Who *have erred concerning the truth,* saying, . . The resurrection is *already past,* and overthrow the faith of some. *But* the foundation of God standeth *firm,* having this

seal, The Lord knoweth *those* that are his: and, Let every one *who* nameth the name of *the Lord* depart
20 from iniquity. But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and . . silver, but also of wood and of
21 earth; and some to honour, . . some to dishonour. If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, *consecrated* and *fit* for the Master's
22 use, . . prepared *for* every good work. Flee also youthful *desires;* but follow *after* righteousness, faith, *love,* peace with them that call *upon* the Lord, out of
23 a pure heart. But *avoid foolish and unlearned questions,*
24 knowing that they . . *beget* strifes: And *a* servant of the Lord must not strive, but be gentle *toward* all men,
25 apt to teach, patient *of evil,* In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; *if haply* God *may* give them repentance, to the acknowledging of the truth;
26 And . . they may *awake* out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

3 *But know this,* that in the last days *grievous* times *will* come. For men *will* be lovers of *themselves, lovers of*
2 *money, arrogant,* proud, *evil-speakers,* disobedient to
3 parents, *ungrateful,* unholy. Without natural affection, *implacable, slanderers, intemperate,* fierce, despisers of
4 *good men,* Traitors, *rash, puffed up,* lovers of pleasure
5 more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power *of it.* From *these also* turn away.
6 For of *these* are they *who* creep into houses, and *captivate* silly women, laden with sins, led away *by various desires,*
7 Ever learning, *but* never able to come to the knowledge
8 of the truth. Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also *withstand* the truth; men of corrupt
9 minds, *void of judgment as to* the faith. But they shall proceed no *farther;* for their folly shall be manifest *to*
10 all men, as theirs also was. But thou hast *accurately traced* my doctrine, manner of life, *intention,* faith, long-
11 suffering, *love,* patience, Persecutions, afflictions, which *befell* me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured; *but the Lord delivered me out*
12 *of all.* Yea, and all that *are resolved to* live godly in
13 Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution. But evil men and *impostors will grow* worse and worse, deceiving, and
14 being deceived. But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and . . been *fully* assured of, knowing
15 of whom thou hast learned them, And that from *an infant* thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith
16 which is in Christ Jesus. All Scripture is *inspired* of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for

17 correction, for instruction in righteousness; That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto *every* good *work*.

4 I charge thee therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who *will* judge the *living* and the dead at his
2 appearing, and his kingdom, Preach the word; be instant in season . . ; *convince*, rebuke, exhort, with all long-
3 suffering and *teaching*. For the time will come when they will not endure *wholesome* doctrine, but *will heap up to themselves teachers, according to their own desires*,
4 having itching ears. And they *will* turn away their
5 ears from the truth, and *turn aside to* fables. But watch thou in all things, endure affliction, do the work
6 of an evangelist, *fulfil* thy ministry. For I am now ready to be offered *up*, and the time of my departure
7 is at hand. I have fought *the* good fight, I have finished
8 *the* course, I have kept the faith; Henceforth there is laid up for me *the* crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous Judge *will render* me *in* that day, and not to me only, but *to* all them *likewise* that *have loved* his appearing.
9 Do thy diligence to come *to me shortly*, For Demas hath forsaken me, *loving the* present world, and is *gone to* Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus *to* Dalmatia.
11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark and bring him with thee, for he is profitable to me for *my* ministry. . .
12 Tychicus *I have* sent to Ephesus. *When thou comest, bring the cloak which I left at Troas with Carpus*, and the
14 books, . . especially the parchments. Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil; the Lord *will* reward
15 him according to his works. Of whom be thou *also*
16 *aware;* for he hath greatly withstood our words. At my first *defence* no man *appeared* with me, but all . .
17 forsook me: . . *may it not* be laid to their charge! But the Lord stood *by* me, and strengthened me, that *through* me the preaching might be fully known, *even* that all *nations* might hear: and I was delivered out of
18 the mouth of the lion. And the Lord *will* deliver me from every evil work, and . . preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom; to whom be *the* glory for ever and ever. Amen.
19 Salute Priscilla, and Aquila, and the *family* of Onesiph-
20 orus. Erastus abode at Corinth; but Trophimus
21 *I have* left at Miletus sick. Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus *saluteth* thee, and Pudens, and
22 Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. . .

ST. PAUL'S Epistle to TITUS

TITUS was converted from Heathenism by St. Paul, Gal. ii. 3, and as it seems very early, since the apostle accounted him as his brother, at his first going into Macedonia. And he managed and settled the churches there, when St. Paul thought not good to go thither himself. He had now left him at Crete, to regulate the churches; to assist him wherein, he wrote this epistle, as is generally believed, after the first, and before the second to Timothy. The tenor and style are much alike in this and those, and they cast much light on each other; and are worthy the serious attention of all Christian ministers and churches in all ages.

TITUS

CHAPTER I

1 Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ,
according to the faith of *the elect of God*, and the *knowl-*
2 *edge* of the truth which is after godliness, In hope
of eternal life, which God, *who* cannot lie, promised
3 before the world began; *And he* hath in his *own times*
manifested his word, through *the* preaching *wherewith*
I am entrusted, according to the commandment of God
4 our Saviour: To Titus, *my* own son after the common
faith, grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father,
and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.
5 For this cause *I left thee* in Crete, that thou *mightest*
set in order the things *which* are wanting, and ordain
6 elders in every city, as I . . appointed thee: If *a man*
is blameless, the husband of one wife, having *believing*
7 children, not accused of *luxury*, or unruly. For a bishop
must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-
willed, not *passionate*, not given to wine, *not a* striker,
8 not *desirous of* filthy *gain:* But *hospitable*, a lover of
9 good men, *prudent*, just, holy, temperate; Holding fast
the faithful word, as he hath been taught, that he may
be *mighty* by sound doctrine both to exhort and to con-
10 vince the gainsayers. For there are many unruly and

vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the cir-
11 cumcision, Whose mouths must be stopped, who *overturn*
whole *families*, teaching things which they ought not,
12 for *the sake of filthy gain.* One of themselves, . . a
prophet of their own, *hath* said, The Cretans are always
13 liars, evil *wild* beasts, *lazy gluttons.* This witness is true;
therefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound
14 in the faith; Not giving heed to . . Jewish fables, and
15 commandments of men, that turn from the truth. *To*
the pure all things are pure; but *to the defiled* and unbe-
lieving *nothing is* pure; but *both their understanding* and
16 conscience *are* defiled. They profess *to know* God, but
by their works they deny him, being abominable and
disobedient, and *void of judgment, as to every good work.*

2 But speak thou the things which become *wholesome*
doctrine. *That* the aged men be *vigilant, serious, pru-*
3 *dent,* sound in faith, . . *love,* patience: *That* the aged
women *in like manner* be in behaviour as becometh
holiness; not *slanderers,* not given to much wine;
4 teachers of *that which is good:* That they . . *instruct*
the young women to be *wise,* to love their husbands, to
5 love their children, . . Discreet, chaste, keepers at
home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the
6 word of God be not blasphemed. *The* young men like-
7 wise exhort to be *discreet,* In all things showing thyself
a pattern of good works, in doctrine, . . uncorruptness,
8 *seriousness, Wholesome* speech, that cannot be *reproved;*
that he *who* is *on* the contrary part may be ashamed,
9 having no evil thing to say of *us.* Exhort servants to
be *subject to* their own masters, . . to please them . .
10 in all things, not answering again, Not *stealing, but*
showing all good fidelity, that they may *in all things*
adorn the Gospel of God our Saviour.
11 For the *saving* grace of God . . hath appeared to all
12 men, *Instructing* us, that *having renounced* ungodliness
and *all* worldly *desires,* we should live soberly, *and*
13 righteously, and godly, in *the* present world, Looking for
the blessed hope and the glorious appearing of the great
14 God, *even* our Saviour Jesus Christ; Who gave himself
for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and
purify *to* himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.
15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all
authority: let no man despise thee.

3 *Remind* them to be subject to principalities and
powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready *for* every good
2 work; To speak evil of no man, *not to be quarrelsome, to*
3 *be* gentle, showing all meekness *toward* all men. For we

also were *formerly without understanding,* disobedient,
deceived, *enslaved to various desires* and pleasures, living
4 in *wickedness* and envy, hateful, hating one another: But
when the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward
5 man appeared, Not by works of righteousness which
we have done, but according to his *own* mercy he saved
us, by the *laver* of regeneration, and renewing of the
6 Holy Ghost: Which he *poured forth richly upon* us,
7 through Jesus Christ our Saviour, That being justified
by his grace, we *might become* heirs, according to the
8 hope of eternal life. This is a faithful saying, and
these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that
they *who* have believed in God . . be careful to *excel in*
good works; *these* things are good and profitable *to* men.
9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and con-
tentions, and strivings about the law; for they are
10 unprofitable and vain. A *heretic,* after *a* first and
11 second admonition, reject, Knowing that *such a one is*
perverted and sinneth, being *self-condemned.*
12 When I shall send Artemas *or Tychicus to thee,* be
diligent to come *to* me to Nicopolis; for I have deter-
13 mined *to winter there. Send forward with diligence Zenas*
the lawyer, and Apollos, that *they may want nothing.*
14 And let ours also learn to *excel in* good works for neces-
15 sary uses, that they be not unfruitful. All that are
with me salute thee. *Salute* them that love us in the
faith. Grace be with you all.

ST. PAUL'S Epistle to PHILEMON

ONESIMUS, servant to Philemon, an eminent person in Colosse, ran away from his master to Rome. Here he was converted to Christianity by St. Paul, who sent him back to his master with this letter. It seems, Philemon not only pardoned but gave him his liberty: seeing Ignatius makes mention of him, as succeeding Timotheus at Ephesus.

PHILEMON

1 Paul, a prisoner of Christ Jesus, and Timotheus *a*
brother, *to* Philemon *the* . . beloved and *our* fellow
2 labourer, And to *the* beloved Apphia, and Archippus our
fellow soldier, *and* . . the Church *which is in* thy house:
3 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father,
and the Lord Jesus Christ.
4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in
5 my prayers, (Hearing of thy . . faith which thou hast
6 toward the Lord Jesus, and *love* toward all saints,) That
the communication of thy faith may become effectual
by the *acknowledgment* of every good thing which is in
7 you *toward* Christ Jesus. For we have great joy and
consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints
8 are refreshed by thee, brother. Wherefore, though I
might be *very* bold in Christ to enjoin thee *what* is con-
9 venient, Yet *out of love* I rather *entreat* thee, being such
a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus
10 Christ: I *entreat* thee for my son, *whom I have begotten*
11 *in my bonds, Onesimus, Who was formerly unprofitable to*
12 *thee,* but now profitable to thee and me. Whom I have
sent again: thou therefore receive him, that is *my* own
13 bowels: Whom I *was desirous to* have retained with me,
to serve me in thy stead in the bonds of the Gospel.
14 *But I would do nothing without thy consent;* that thy
benefit *might* not be, as it were, *by constraint,* but
15 willingly. *And* perhaps *for this end was he separated*
16 *for a season,* that thou *mightest have* him for ever; *No*
longer as a servant, but above a servant, a brother
beloved, *especially* to me; *and* how much more *to* thee,
17 both in the flesh and in the Lord? *If therefore thou*

18 *accountest* me a partner, receive him as myself. If he
hath wronged thee, or oweth thee *any thing*, put that
19 *to* my account. I Paul have written . . with *my* own
hand; I will repay it; *not* to say *unto* thee *that* thou
20 owest *also* thyself *to* me besides. Yea, brother, let me
have joy of thee in the Lord; refresh my bowels in
21 *Christ.* Having confidence *of* thy obedience *I have*
written to thee, knowing that thou wilt . . *do even more*
22 *than I say.* . . Withal prepare me also a lodging; for
I trust *I shall be given to you through your prayers.*
23 *Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus, saluteth*
24 *you;* Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my fellow
25 labourers. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with
your spirit.

The Epistle to the HEBREWS

IT is agreed by the general tenor of antiquity, that this epistle was written by St. Paul: whose other epistles were sent to the Gentile converts; this only to the Hebrews. But this improper inscription was added by some later hand. It was sent to the Jewish Hellenist Christians, dispersed through various countries. St. Paul's method and stile are easily observed therein. He places, as usual, the proposition and division before the treatise; (c.ii. 17.) he subjoins the exhortatory to the doctrinal part; quotes the same scriptures, (c.ii. 8. c.x. 30, 38. c.i. 6.) and uses the same expressions as elsewhere. But why does he not prefix his name, which it is plain, from c.xiii. 19. was dear to them to whom he wrote? Because he prefixes no inscription, in which, if at all, the name would have been mentioned. The ardour of his spirit carries him directly upon his subject, (just like St. John in his first epistle) and throws back his usual salutation and thanksgiving to the conclusion.

This epistle of St. Paul, and both those of St. Peter (one may add, that of St. James and of St. Jude also) were written to the same persons, dispersed through Pontus, Galatia, and other countries, and nearly at the same time. St. Paul suffered at Rome, three years before the destruction of Jerusalem. Therefore this epistle likewise was written, while the temple was standing. St. Peter wrote a little before his martyrdom, and refers to the epistles of St. Paul, this in particular.

The scope of it is, To confirm their faith in Christ. And this he does, by demonstrating his glory. All the parts of it are full of the most earnest and pointed admonitions and exhortations. And they go on, in one tenor, the particle therefore everywhere connecting the doctrine and the use.

There are many comparisons in this epistle, which may be nearly reduced to two heads, 1. The prophets, the angels, Moses, Joshua, Aaron are great; but Jesus Christ is infinitely greater; 2. The ancient believers enjoyed high privileges; but Christian believers enjoy far higher. To illustrate this, examples both of happiness and misery are every way interspersed: so that in this epistle there is a kind of recapitulation of the whole Old Testament. In this also Judaism is abrogated, and Christianity carried to its height.

HEBREWS

CHAPTER I

1 God, who at sundry times, and in divers manners,
2 spake *of old to* the fathers by the prophets, hath in
these last days spoken *to* us by his Son; Whom he hath
appointed heir of all things, by whom he also made the
3 worlds: Who being the brightness of his glory, and the
express image of his person, and *sustaining* all things by
the word of his power, when he had by himself purged
our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on
4 high, Being . . so much *higher* than the angels, as he
hath by inheritance . . a more excellent name than they.
5 For *to* which of the angels *did he ever say*, Thou art my
Son; this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will
6 be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? And
again, When he bringeth in the first-begotten into the
world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship
7 him. And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his
8 angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. But
unto the Son, . . Thy throne, O God, is for ever and
ever: *the sceptre of thy kingdom is a sceptre of righteous-*
9 *ness:* Thou hast loved righteousness and hated iniquity;
therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with
10 the oil of gladness above thy fellows. And, Thou, Lord,
hast in the beginning laid the foundation of the earth,
11 and the heavens are the works of *thy* hands. They shall
perish, but thou *endurest; yea*, they all shall *grow* old as . .
12 a garment; And as a *mantle* shalt thou *change* them, and
they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy
13 years shall not fail. But to which of the angels *did he*
ever say, Sit *at* my right hand, till I make thine enemies
14 thy footstool? Are they not all ministering spirits, sent
forth to *attend on* them who shall *inherit* salvation?

2 Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to
the things which we have heard, lest at any time we
2 should let them slip. For if the word spoken by angels
was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience
3 received a just recompense . . : How shall we escape,
if we neglect so great *a* salvation, which, *having at its beginning been* spoken by the Lord, . . was confirmed *to* us
4 by them that *had* heard him? God also bearing . . witness
both *by* signs, and wonders, and . . *various* miracles, and
distributions of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will.
5 For *he hath not subjected to the angels* the world to
6 come, whereof we speak. But one in a certain place
testified, saying, What is man, that thou art mindful of
7 him, or the son of man, that thou visitest him? Thou
hast made him a little lower than the angels, thou *hast crowned* him with glory and honour, and *hast* set him
8 over the works of thy hands. Thou hast put all things
in subjection under his feet. *Now* in . . *putting* all
things in subjection under him, he left nothing that is
not put under him: but now we *do not yet see* all things
9 put under him. But we see Jesus *crowned with glory and honour, for the suffering of death, who was made a little lower than the angels, that by the grace of God he might*
10 taste death for every man. For it became him for
whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in
bringing many sons *to* glory, to *perfect* the captain of
11 their salvation *by* sufferings. For both he that sanctifieth, and *all they that are sanctified, are* of one; for which
12 cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren. Saying,
I will declare thy name *to* my brethren; in the midst of
13 the Church will I sing praise unto thee. And again, I
will put my trust in him: And again, Behold I and the
14 children *whom* God hath given me. *Since* then the
children *partake* of flesh and blood, he also himself *in like manner* took part of the same, that through death
he might destroy him that had the power of death, that
15 is, the devil: And deliver them, *as many as* through fear
16 of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. For
verily he *taketh* not *hold* of angels, but he *taketh hold of*
17 the seed of Abraham. Wherefore *it behooved him to be made in all things* like . . his brethren, that he might be a
merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to
18 God, to *expiate* the sins of the people. For in that he
hath suffered, being tempted himself, he is able to succour
them that are tempted.

3 Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly
calling, consider the *apostle* and *high priest* of our profes-
2 sion, . . Jesus, Who was faithful to him that appointed

3 him, as *was* also Moses . . in all his house. For this
person was counted worthy of more glory than Moses,
inasmuch as he *that* . . builded *it* hath more honour than
4 the house. *Now* every house is *built* by some *one:* but
5 he that built all things is God. And Moses verily was
faithful in all his house as a servant, for a testimony of
6 *the* things which were to be *afterward spoken:* But Christ
as a Son over his own house, whose house *we are,* if we
hold fast the confidence and the *glorying* of . . hope
7 firm *to* the end. Wherefore, (as the Holy Ghost saith,)
8 To-day, if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts
as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the
9 wilderness, When your fathers tempted me, proved me,
10 and saw my works forty years. *Therefore* I was grieved
with that generation, and said, They . . *always* err in
11 their hearts, and they have not known my ways. . . So
I sware in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.
12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil
13 heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God: But
exhort one another daily, while it is called to-day, lest
any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin:
14 (*For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold fast the*
15 *beginning of our confidence firm to the end.*) While it is
said, To-day, if ye will hear his voice, harden not your
16 hearts, as in the provocation. For *who,* when they had
heard, . . provoked *God? Were they not all that came*
17 *out of Egypt by Moses? And* with whom was he grieved
forty years? Was it not with them who had sinned?
18 Whose carcasses fell in the wilderness. And to whom
sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but
19 to them that believed not? So we see . . they could
not enter in because of unbelief.

4 Let us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of
entering into his rest, any of *us* should *altogether* come
2 short of it. For unto us *have* the *good tidings been*
declared, as well as unto them; but the word *heard* did
not profit them, not being mixed with faith in *those* that
3 heard it. For we *that* have believed do enter into *the*
rest; as he said, . . I have sworn in my wrath, . . They
shall not enter into my rest, *though* the works were
4 finished from the foundation of the world. For he *said*
thus in a certain place of the seventh day, And God *rested*
5 *on* the seventh day from all his works: And in this . .
6 again, . . They shall *not* enter into my rest. Seeing
then it remaineth that some . . enter *into it,* and they to
whom *the good tidings were declared before* entered not in
7 because of unbelief. *He again after so long a time fixeth*
a certain day, saying by David, To-day; as it *was* said

before, To-day, if ye will hear his voice, harden not your
8 hearts. For if *Joshua* had given them *the* rest. *he would*
9 not *have afterward* spoken of another day: There remain-
10 eth therefore a rest *for* the people of God. For he that
hath entered into his rest . . hath *himself* also ceased
11 from his works, as God did from his. Let us labour
therefore to enter into that rest, lest any *one should* fall
12 after the same example of unbelief. For the word of
God is *living* and powerful, and sharper than any two-
edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder *both*
of *the* soul and spirit, *both* of the joints and marrow, and
is a discerner of the thoughts and *intentions* of the heart.
13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his
sight: but all things are naked and opened to the eyes
of him with whom we have to do.
14 *Having therefore* a great high priest, that is passed
through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold
15 fast our profession. For we have not *a* high priest *who*
cannot *sympathize with* our infirmities, but *one who* was
in all points tempted like as we are; yet without sin.
16 Let us therefore come boldly *to* the throne of grace, that
we may receive mercy, and find grace to help in time
of need.

5 For every high priest, *being* taken from among men,
is *appointed* for men in things pertaining to God, that
2 he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins: Who can
have compassion on the ignorant and . . *the wandering*,
3 *seeing* he himself *also is* compassed with infirmity, And
because hereof, *it behooveth him*, as for the people, so also
4 for himself, to offer for sins. And no *one* taketh this
honour *to* himself, but he that is called of God, as was
5 Aaron. So also Christ glorified not himself to be made *a*
high priest, but he that said *to* him, Thou art my Son,
6 *this* day have I begotten thee. As he saith also in
another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order
7 of Melchisedec: Who in the days of his flesh, *having*
offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying
and tears unto him that was able to save him from death,
8 and *being* heard in that he feared; Though he was a
Son, yet *he learned* obedience by the things which he
9 suffered, And being *perfected*, . . became the author of
10 eternal salvation *to* all . . that obey him, Called of God
a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.
11 *Concerning* whom we have many things to say, and
hard to be *explained*, seeing ye are *become* dull of hearing,
12 For *whereas* for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye
have need that one teach you again, which *are* the first
principles of the oracles of God, and are become such

13 as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For
every one that useth milk is *unexperienced* in the word
14 of righteousness; for he is a babe. But strong meat
belongeth to them of full age, . . *to them* who have their
senses exercised *by habit* to discern both good and evil.

6 Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of
Christ, let us go on *to* perfection; not laying again the
foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith
2 *in* God, Of the doctrine of baptisms and . . laying on
of hands, and *the* resurrection of the dead, and . .
3 eternal judgment. And this *we will* do, if God permit.
4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened,
and have tasted . . the heavenly gift, and *been* made
5 partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good
6 word of God, and the powers of the world to come, *And*
have fallen away, to renew them again unto repentance,
seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh,
7 and put him to an open shame. For the earth which
drinketh in the rain that cometh *often* upon it, and
bringeth forth *herbage*, meet for them *for* whom it is
8 *tilled*, receiveth blessing from God. But that which
beareth thorns and briers is rejected and nigh unto *a*
9 *curse*, whose end is to be burned. But, beloved, we are
persuaded better things of you, and things that accom-
10 pany salvation, though we thus speak. For God *is* not
unrighteous, to forget your work and labour of love,
which ye have showed toward his name in that ye have
11 ministered to the saints, and do minister. *But* we
desire that every one of you *may* show *unto the end the*
12 *same diligence to the full assurance of hope*, That ye be
not slothful, but followers of them, who through faith
13 and *long-suffering inherited* the promises. For when
God made *the* promise to Abraham, because he could
14 swear by no greater, he *swore* by himself, Saying, Surely
blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply
15 thee. And so, after he had patiently *waited*, he obtained
16 the promise. For men verily swear by the greater, and
an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all *contra-*
17 *diction*. *Wherefore* God, *being* willing *to show more*
abundantly to the heirs of *the* promise the *unchangeable-*
18 *ness* of his counsel, *interposed* by an oath: That by two
unchangeable things, in which it was impossible for God
to lie, we *might* have . . strong consolation, who have
19 fled . . to lay hold *on* the hope set before us. Which
hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and
steadfast, and which entereth into *the place* within the
20 veil, Whither *Jesus our forerunner is entered for us, who is*
made a high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

7 For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the
most high God, who met Abraham returning from the
2 slaughter of the kings and blessed him, To whom also
Abraham *divided* a tenth part of all *the spoils; being by*
interpretation, first, king of righteousness, and *then king*
3 *of Salem also,* which is king of peace: Without father,
without mother, without *pedigree,* having neither begin-
ning of days nor end of life, but *being* made like . . the
4 Son of God, *remaineth* a priest continually. Now con-
sider how great this man was, *to* whom even the patriarch
5 Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils, And verily they
. . of the sons of Levi, who receive . . the priesthood,
have a commandment (*according to the law*) *to take tithes*
of the people, that is, of their brethren, though they come
6 out of the loins of Abraham, But he whose *pedigree* is
not . . from them, took tithes of Abraham, and blessed
7 him *who* had the promises: And without all contradic-
8 tion, the less is blessed of the *greater.* And here men
that die receive tithes: but there, he, . . of whom it is
9 *testified* that he liveth, And *even Levi, who receiveth*
10 *tithes, paid tithes* (*so to speak*) *through* Abraham. For he
was yet in the loins of his father, when Melchisedec met
11 him. *Now if* perfection *had been* by the Levitical priest-
hood, (for under it the people received the law,) what
farther need was there that another priest should rise,
after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after
12 the order of Aaron? For the priesthood being changed,
13 there is . . *also necessarily* a change *of the law.* For he,
of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another
14 tribe, of which no man *attended* on the altar. For it is
evident, that our Lord *sprung* out of Judah, of which
tribe Moses spake nothing concerning the priesthood.
15 And it is *still* far more evident, . . that *another priest*
16 *is raised up after the likeness of Melchisedec,* Who was
made not after the law of a carnal commandment, but
17 after the power of an endless life; For *it is testified,* Thou
18 art a priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec. For
verily there is a disannulling of the *preceding command-*
ment, for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.
19 For the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in
of a better hope did, by . . which we draw nigh *to* God.
20 And inasmuch as *he was not made a priest without an*
21 *oath:* (For those priests were made without an oath,
but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, The
Lord sware, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for
22 ever, after the order of Melchisedec:) *Of so much better*
23 *a covenant was Jesus made a surety.* And they truly
were many priests, because they were *hindered by* . .
24 *death from continuing.* But this, . . because he con-

tinueth for ever, hath a *priesthood that passeth not away.*
25 Wherefore he is able also to save *them to the uttermost,*
who come *to* God *through* him, seeing he ever liveth to
26 make intercession for them. For such a high priest
suited us, . . holy, harmless, undefiled, *separated* from
27 sinners, and made higher than the heavens: Who
needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up
sacrifices, first for his own sins, . . then for *those of the*
people; for this he did once *for all,* when he offered up
28 himself. For the law maketh men high priests *that*
have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was
since the law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated for
evermore.

8 . . *The sum of what hath been spoken is,* We have such
a high priest, who is set *down at* the right hand of the
2 throne of the Majesty in the heavens, A minister of the
sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord
3 *hath fixed,* and not man. For every high priest is
ordained to offer *up* gifts and sacrifices; *whence* it *was*
necessary that this . . *also should have somewhat* to
4 offer. *But* if he were on earth, he *could* not be a priest,
there being priests that offer gifts, according to the law,
5 Who serve *after* the *pattern* and shadow of heavenly
things, as Moses was admonished of God, when he was
about to *finish* the tabernacle; for, *saith he, See* . . thou
make all things according to the *model which was shown*
6 thee in the mount. But *he hath now* obtained a more
excellent ministry, by how much . . *better a covenant*
he is a mediator of, which is established upon better
7 promises. For if *the* first had been faultless, . . *no*
8 *place would* have been sought for *a* second. *But* finding
fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith
the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the
9 house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: Not
according to the covenant *which* I made with their
fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand, to
lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they con-
tinued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not,
10 saith the Lord. For this is the covenant *which* I will
make with the house of Israel after those days, saith
the Lord: I will put my laws *in* their *minds,* and write
them *on* their hearts, and I will be to them a God, and
11 they shall be to me a people: And they shall not teach
every *one* his neighbour, and every *one* his brother,
saying, Know the Lord; for *they shall all* know me,
12 from the least even to the greatest. For I will be
merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and
13 their iniquities will I remember no more. In *saying* a

new covenant, he hath *antiquated* the first: now that which is *antiquated* and *decayed*, is ready to vanish away.

9 *And* verily the first covenant *also had* ordinances of *worship* and a worldly sanctuary. For *the first tabernacle*
2 *was prepared, in which* was the candlestick, and the table,
3 and the show bread; which is called the *holy place.* And *beyond* the second veil, the tabernacle, which is called
4 The *holy of holies, Having* the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant, overlaid round about with gold, wherein was *a* golden pot *having* the manna, and Aaron's rod that *blossomed,* and the tables of the covenant:
5 And over it *were the cherubim* of glory, shadowing the mercy seat; of which we cannot now speak particularly.
6 Now *these things being thus prepared,* the priests *go* always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing *their* services. . .
7 But into the second, *only the high priest, once a year,* not without blood, which he *offereth* for himself and . .
8 the errors of the people: The Holy Ghost *evidently showing this,* that the way into the *holiest* was not yet made manifest, while . . the first tabernacle was *still sub-*
9 *sisting,* Which *is* a figure for the time . . present, in which *are* offered both gifts and sacrifices, *which cannot*
10 *perfect the worshipper as to his conscience, . . Only with* meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed . . *till* the time of reformation.
11 But Christ being come, *a* high priest of good things to come, *through* a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not
12 made with hands, that is, . . not of this *creation, And not* by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood, . . entered in once *for all* into the holy place,
13 having obtained eternal redemption for us. For if the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of *a* heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh:
14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge *our* conscience from dead works, to serve the living
15 God? And for this *end* he is the Mediator of the new *covenant,* that by means of death for the redemption of the *transgressors* that were under the first *covenant,* they *who* are called might receive the promise of *the* eternal
16 inheritance. For where *such* a covenant is, there must also *necessarily* be the death of *him by whom the covenant*
17 *is confirmed.* For *the covenant* is of force after *he is* dead; *whereas* it is of no strength . . while *he by whom*
18 *it is confirmed* liveth. *Whence neither was the first cove-*
19 *nant originally transacted* without blood. For when Moses had spoken *all the commandments according to the law, to all the people,* he took the blood of calves and of

goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, *and the*
20 *book itself, and sprinkled all the people,* saying, This is
the blood of the *covenant,* which God hath enjoined unto
21 you. *And in like manner* he sprinkled with blood both
22 the tabernacle and all the vessels of the *service.* And
almost all things are *according to* the law *purified* with
blood, and without shedding of blood *there* is no *forgive-*
23 *ness.* It was therefore necessary, that the patterns of
things in . . *heaven* should be purified *by* these, but the
heavenly things themselves *by* better sacrifices than
24 these. For Christ *did* not *enter* into the holy *place* made
with hands, . . the *figure* of the true; but into heaven
25 itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us. Nor
. . *did he enter,* that he *might* offer himself often (*as the*
high priest entered into the holy place every year with the
26 *blood of others.*) For then *he must* often have suffered
since the foundation of the world: but now once *at the*
consummation of the ages hath he *been manifested,* to
27 *abolish* sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is
appointed *for* men once to die, *and* after this the judg-
28 ment: So Christ, *also, having been* once offered to bear
the sins of many, *will appear the second time, without*
sin, to them that look for him, unto salvation.

10 For the law having a shadow of good things to come,
. . not the very image of *the* things, can never with
the same sacrifices which they *offer* year by year con-
2 tinually, make the comers thereunto perfect. *Otherwise*
would they not have ceased to be offered? Because . .
the worshippers, *having been* once purged, *would* have
3 had no more *consciousness* of sins. But in those sacri-
fices there is a *commemoration* . . of sins every year.
4 For it is *impossible* that the blood of bulls and of goats
5 should take away sins. *Therefore* when he cometh into
the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou *hast not*
6 *chosen,* but a body hast thou prepared *for* me. Burnt-
offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast *not delighted in.*
7 Then *I said,* Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is
8 written of me) to do thy will, O God. Above, when he
said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and
offering for sin, thou *hast not chosen,* neither *delighted in,*
9 which are offered *according to* the law; Then, said he,
Lo, I come to do thy will. . . He taketh away the first
10 that he may establish the second: By . . which will we
are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Jesus
11 Christ once for all. And *indeed* every priest standeth
daily ministering and offering *often* the same sacrifices,
12 which can never take away sins: But *he, having* offered
one sacrifice for sins, for ever sat down *at* the right hand

13 of God, From *thenceforth waiting* till his enemies be made
14 his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for
15 ever them that are sanctified. *And this* the Holy Ghost
16 also *testifieth* to us, . . after . . he had said before, This
is the covenant which I will make with them after those
days, saith the Lord: I will put my laws into their
17 hearts, and *write them on their minds*, And their sins and
18 *their iniquities* will I remember no more. Now where
remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.
19 Having, therefore, brethren, *free liberty* to enter into
20 the holiest by the blood of Jesus, By a new and living
way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil,
21 that is, . . his flesh, And having *a great* high priest over
22 the house of God, Let us draw near with a true heart,
in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled
from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with
23 pure water. Let us hold fast the profession of our *hope*
without wavering, (for he is faithful that *hath* promised.)
24 And let us consider one another, to provoke *one another*
25 *to* love, and to good works: Not forsaking the assembling
of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but
exhorting one another, and so much the more, as ye see
26 the day approaching. For *when* we sin wilfully after . .
having received the knowledge of the truth, there remain-
27 eth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful
looking for of judgment, and fiery indignation, which *is*
28 *ready to* devour the adversaries. He that despised *the*
law of Moses died without mercy, under two or three
29 witnesses. Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye
shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under
foot the Son of God, and . . counted the blood of the
covenant, *by which he hath been* sanctified, an unholy
30 thing, and . . done despite *to* the Spirit of grace? For
we know him that hath said, Vengeance *is mine:* I will
recompense . . : and again, The Lord *will* judge his
31 people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of
32 the living God. But call *ye to mind the* former days, in
which, after ye were *enlightened*, ye endured *so* great *a*
33 *conflict of sufferings:* Partly *being* made a gazing stock,
both by reproaches and afflictions; . . partly *being par-*
34 *takers with them who were so treated.* For *ye sympathized*
with my bonds, and *received with joy* the spoiling of your
goods, knowing *that ye have for yourselves* in heaven a
35 better and an enduring substance. Cast not away there-
fore your confidence, which hath great recompense of
36 reward. For ye have need of patience, that, *having* done
37 the will of God, ye *may* receive the promise. For yet a
very little while, and he that *cometh* will come, and will
38 not tarry. Now the just shall live by faith; *and* if *he*

39 draw back, my soul hath no pleasure in him. But we
are not of them who draw back *to* perdition, but of
them that believe to the saving of the soul.

11 Now faith is the *subsistence* of things hoped for,
the evidence of things not seen. *And* by it the elders
3 obtained a good *testimony.* Through faith we under-
stand that the worlds were framed by the word of God,
so that *the* things which are seen *were made of things*
4 *which do not appear.* By faith Abel offered unto God
a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he
obtained *a testimony* that he was righteous, God testi-
fying of his gifts; and by it, *being dead, he* yet speaketh.
5 By faith Enoch was translated *so as not to* see death,
and was not found, because God had translated him;
for before his translation he had *a* testimony that he
6 pleased *him.* But without faith it is impossible to
please him; for he that cometh to God must believe
that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that dili-
7 gently seek him. By faith Noah, being warned of God
of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an
ark *for* the saving of his *household,* by . . which he
condemned the world, and became heir of the righteous-
8 ness which is by faith. By faith Abraham, *being* called
to go out into *the* place which he *was to* . . receive for
an inheritance, obeyed and . . went out, *though he*
9 *knew not* whither he went. By faith he sojourned in
the land of promise as in a strange country, dwelling in
tents with Isaac and Jacob, the *joint heirs* of the same
10 promise. For he looked for *the* city which hath founda-
11 tions, whose builder and *former* is God. *By* faith *Sarah*
also herself received *power* to conceive seed, . . *even*
when she was past age, because she *accounted* him faithful
12 who had promised. Therefore *there sprang* even *from*
one, and him *as it were* dead, *a posterity* as the stars *in*
heaven for multitude, and as the sand which is *on* the
13 sea shore innumerable. *All these* died in faith, not hav-
ing received the promises, but having seen them afar
off, . . *and embraced them,* and confessed that they were
14 strangers and *sojourners* on the earth. For they *who*
speak thus, show plainly that they seek *their own* country.
15 And truly if they had been mindful of that . . from
which they came out, they might have had opportunity
16 to *return.* But now they desire a better country, that
is, *a* heavenly: *therefore* God is not ashamed to be called
17 their God; for he hath prepared *a city for them.* By
faith Abraham, *being* tried, offered up Isaac; *yea,* he
that had received the promises offered up his only
18 begotten son, Of whom it *had been* said, . . In Isaac shall

19 thy seed be called: Accounting that God was able *even*
to raise him from the dead; from whence also he *did*
20 *receive* him in a figure. By faith Isaac blessed Jacob
21 and Esau, concerning things to come. By faith Jacob,
when . . dying, blessed *each of* the sons of Joseph, and
22 worshipped, *bowing down* on the top of his staff. By
faith Joseph, *when dying*, made mention . . of the
children of Israel, and gave *charge* concerning his bones.
23 By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months
by his parents, because they saw *he was* a *beautiful* child,
and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.
24 By faith Moses, when he was *grown up*, refused to be
25 called the son of Pharaoh's daughter: Choosing rather
to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to
26 enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; Esteeming the
reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures *of*
Egypt: for he *looked off unto* the recompense of . .
27 reward. By faith he *left* Egypt, not fearing the wrath
of the king; for he endured as seeing him *that* is invisible.
28 *By* faith he *celebrated* the passover, and the *pouring out*
of *the* blood, . . *that he who destroyed the first born might*
29 *not touch them.* By faith they passed through the Red
Sea, as by dry land, which the Egyptians *trying* to do,
30 were drowned. By faith the walls of Jericho, *having*
31 *been encompassed seven days, fell down.* By faith *Rahab*
the harlot perished not with them that believed not,
32 *having* received the spies with peace. And what shall
I say more? for the time would fail me, to *discourse* of
Gideon, and . . Barak, and . . Samson, and . . *Jeph-*
thah, and . . David, . . and Samuel, and . . the
33 prophets: Who *by* faith subdued kingdoms, wrought
righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths
34 of lions, Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge
of the sword, out of weakness *was* made strong, *became*
valiant in fight, *put* to flight . . armies of the aliens;
35 Women received their dead raised to life again: . .
others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that
36 they might obtain a better resurrection. And others
had trial of . . mockings, and scourging, yea, moreover,
37 of bonds and imprisonment. They were stoned, . .
were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the
sword: they wandered about in sheep skins, *in* goat
38 skins, . . destitute, afflicted, tormented: (Of whom the
world was not worthy,) they wandered in deserts, and
. . mountains, and . . dens, and caves of the earth.
39 And *all these* having obtained a good *testimony* through
40 faith, *did not receive* the promise. God having provided
some better thing for us, that they *might not be perfected*
without us.

12 Wherefore, *let us also, being encompassed . . with so great a cloud of witnesses,* lay aside every weight,
and the sin which . . easily *besetteth* us, and . . run
2 with patience the race that is set before us, Looking *to*
Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith; who, for
the joy that was set before him, endured the cross,
despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand
3 of the throne of God. For consider him that endured
such contradiction *from* sinners against himself, lest ye
4 be weary and faint in your minds. Ye have not yet
5 resisted unto blood, striving against sin. And *yet* ye
have forgotten the exhortation, which speaketh *to* you
as *to sons,* My son, despise not thou the chastening of
6 the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him. For
whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth
7 every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening,
God dealeth with you as *with* sons; for what son is
8 *there* whom *his* father chasteneth not? But if ye *are*
without *chastening, of which* all are partakers, then are
9 ye bastards, and not sons. *Now if* we have had fathers
of our flesh *who* corrected us, and we *reverenced* them;
shall we not much rather be in subjection *to* the Father
10 of spirits, and live? For they, verily, for a few days
chastened us *as they thought good:* but he for our profit,
11 that we *may* be partakers of his holiness. Now *all*
chastening for the present *is assuredly not* joyous but
grievous; *yet* afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit
of righteousness to them *that* are exercised thereby.
12 Wherefore lift up the hands that hang down, and the
13 feeble knees; And make straight paths for your feet,
that the lame be *not* turned out of the way, but . . rather
14 healed. Follow peace with all men, and holiness, with-
15 out which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently,
lest any *one fall from* the grace of God, lest any root of
bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many
16 be defiled: Lest there be any fornicator or profane
person, as Esau, who for one *meal* gave away his birth-
17 right: For ye know . . that afterward, *even* when he
desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected: for he
found no place for repentance, though he sought it
diligently with tears.
18 For ye *are* not come *to* the *mountain* that *could* be
touched, and *the burning* fire, *and the thick cloud,* and
19 darkness, and tempest, And the sound of a trumpet,
and the voice of words; which . . they that heard
20 entreated, that *no more might be spoken to them; . .* For
they could not *bear* that which was commanded. *If*
even a beast touch the mountain, *let* it be stoned. . .
21 And so terrible was the *appearance,* that Moses said,

22 I exceedingly fear and *tremble.* . . But ye *are* come *to*
Mount Sion, and *to* the city of the living God, the
heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company,
23 To the general assembly *of angels,* and *to the* Church of
the first born, *who* are *enrolled* in heaven, and to God
the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made
24 perfect. And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant,
and to the blood of sprinkling, *which* speaketh better
25 things than that of Abel. See that ye refuse not him
that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him
that *delivered the oracle* on earth, much more shall not
we, . . *who* turn away from him that speaketh from
26 heaven: Whose voice then shook the earth: but now
he has promised, saying, Yet once more I *will* shake,
27 *not only the earth,* but also *the* heaven. And this word,
Yet once more, *showeth* the *removal* of *the* things which
are shaken, as . . being made, that *the* things which
28 *are* not shaken may remain. *Therefore let us, receiving*
a kingdom which cannot be shaken, hold fast the grace
whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence
29 and godly fear. For our God is a consuming fire.

13 Let brotherly love continue. *Forget* not *hospitality,*
for *hereby* some have entertained angels unawares.
3 Remember them that are in bonds, as *being* bound with
them, and them that suffer adversity, as being yourselves
4 also in the body. Marriage is honourable in all *men,*
and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers
5 God will judge. Let your *disposition* be without covet-
ousness: . . be content with *the* things *that are present:*
for he hath said, *No* I will *not* leave thee: *verily I will not*
6 forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is
my helper: . . I will not fear what man *can* do unto me.
7 Remember them that *had* the rule over you, who *spake*
to you the word of God, whose faith follow, considering
the end of their conversation.
8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, and to-day, and
9 for ever. Be not carried about with *various* and strange
doctrines; for it is . . good . . that the heart be *stab-*
lished with grace, not with meats, *in which they that have*
10 *walked have not been profited.* We have an altar, whereof
they have no right to eat *who* serve the tabernacle.
11 For the bodies of those *animals,* whose blood is brought
into the *holy place* by the high priest for sin, are burned
12 without the camp. Wherefore Jesus also, that he might
sanctify the people *by* his own blood, suffered without
13 the gate. Let us *then* go forth *to* him without the camp,
14 bearing his reproach. For *we have here* no continuing
15 city; but we seek one to come. By him therefore let us

offer the sacrifice of praise *continually to God*, that is,
16 the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to his name. But to
do good, and to *distribute*, forget not; for with such
17 sacrifices God is well pleased. Obey them that have
the rule over you, and submit yourselves; for they watch
over your souls, as they that *shall* give account; that
they may do *this* with joy, and not with *groans;* for that
18 is unprofitable for you. Pray for us; for we trust we
have a good conscience, *desiring to behave ourselves well*
19 *in all things. And* I beseech you *to do this the more*
earnestly, that I may be restored to you the sooner.
20 Now the God of peace, *who* brought again from the
dead *the great Shepherd of the sheep, our Lord Jesus, by*
21 the blood of the everlasting covenant, Make you perfect
in every good work, to do his will, working in you that
which is well pleasing in his sight through Christ Jesus;
to whom be *the* glory for ever and ever. Amen.
22 . . I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhorta-
tion; for I have written *a letter to you* in few words.
23 Know . . that our brother *Timotheus* is set at liberty,
with whom, if he come *soon*, I will see you.
24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the
25 saints. They of Italy salute you. Grace be with you all.

The General Epistle of ST. JAMES

THIS is supposed to have been written by James the son of Alpheus, the brother, or kinsman of our Lord. It is called a General epistle, because written not to a particular person or church, but to all the converted Israelites. Herein the apostle reproves that Antinomian spirit, which had even then infected many, who had perverted the glorious doctrine of justification by faith, into an occasion of licentiousness. He likewise comforts the true believers under their sufferings, and reminds them of the judgments that were approaching.

ST. JAMES

CHAPTER I

1 James, a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ,
to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.
2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers
3 temptations, Knowing that the trying of your faith
4 worketh patience. But let patience have *its* perfect
work, that *we* may be perfect and entire, wanting
5 nothing. If any of you *want* wisdom, let him ask of
God, *who* giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth
6 not, and it shall be given him. But let him ask in
faith, nothing *doubting:* for he that *doubteth* is like a
7 wave of the sea, driven with the wind and tossed. For
let not that man think that he shall receive any thing
8 *from* the Lord. A double-minded man is unstable in all
9 his ways. Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that
10 he is exalted: But the rich in that he is made low;
because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away.
11 For the sun *arose* with a *scorching* heat, *and* . . *withered*
the grass, and the flower . . *fell off*, and the *beauty* of *its*
form perished: so also shall the rich man fade away in
12 his ways. *Happy* is the man that endureth temptation:
for when he *hath been proved* he shall receive the crown
of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love
13 him. Let no man who is tempted say, I am tempted of
God; for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither

14 tempteth he any man. But every man is tempted when
15 he is drawn away by his own *desire* and enticed. Then *desire, having* conceived, bringeth forth sin; and sin, *being perfected,* bringeth forth death.
16 Do not err, my beloved brethren. Every good gift, and every perfect gift, is from above, *descending* from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither
18 shadow of turning. Of his own will begat he us *by* the word of truth, that we *might* be a kind of first fruits of his creatures.
19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be
20 swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath. For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.
21 *Therefore, laying aside* all *the* filthiness and superfluity of *wickedness,* receive with meekness the ingrafted word,
22 which is able to save your souls. But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving *yourselves.*
23 For if any one be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like . . a man beholding his natural face in a glass.
24 For he *beheld* himself, and *went away,* and *immediately*
25 *forgot* what manner of man he was. But *he that* looketh *diligently* into the perfect law, *the law* of liberty, and continueth therein, *this man* being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be *happy* in his
26 *doing.* If any *one* . . *be ever so* religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's
27 religion is vain. Pure religion and undefiled before God *even* the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

2 My brethren, *hold* not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect *to* persons.
2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with . . gold *rings,* in *fine* apparel, and there come in also a
3 poor man in *dirty* raiment, And ye *look upon* him that weareth the *fine apparel,* and say *to* him, Sit thou here in a good place, and say to the poor *man,* Stand thou
4 there, or, Sit *thou* here under my footstool, *Ye distinguish not* in yourselves, *but* are become *evil-reasoning* judges.
5 Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?
6 But ye have *disgraced* the poor. Do not *the rich* oppress
7 you, and *drag* you *to* the judgment seats? Do they not blaspheme that worthy name by which ye are called?
8 If ye fulfil the royal law, (*according to the Scripture,*) Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well.
9 But if ye have respect *of* persons, ye commit sin, *being*

10 *convicted* by the law as transgressors. For whosoever
shall keep the whole law, *but* offend in one point, *is*
11 *become* guilty of all; For he that said, Do not commit
adultery, said also, Do not *commit murder. If then* thou
commit no adultery, yet if thou *commit murder,* thou art
12 become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so
act, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.
13 For *judgment without mercy shall be to him* that hath
showed no mercy: *but* mercy *glorieth over* judgment.
14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say
he hath faith, and have not works? Can *that* faith save
15 him? If a brother or a sister be naked, and *want* daily
16 food, And one of you say *to* them, Depart in peace; be
ye warmed and filled, *but* . . give them not *the* things . .
17 needful *for* the body, what doth it profit? *So likewise*
18 faith, if it hath not works, is dead *in itself. But one will*
say, Thou hast faith, and I have works. Show me thy
faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith
19 by my works. Thou believest there is one God: thou
20 dost well: the devils also believe and tremble. But *art*
thou *willing to* know, O *empty* man, that *the* faith *which*
21 *is* without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father
justified by works, when he had offered *up* Isaac his son
22 upon the altar? *Thou seest that* faith wrought *together*
with his works, and by works was faith made perfect.
23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham
believed God, and it was imputed *to* him for righteous-
24 ness; and he was called The friend of God. Ye see
then, . . that *a man is justified by works,* and not by
25 faith only. *In like manner, was not Rahab the harlot*
also justified by works, *having* received the messengers,
26 and . . sent them out another way? *Therefore,* as the
body without the spirit is dead, so *the* faith *which is*
without works is dead also.

3 My brethren, be not many *teachers,* knowing that we
shall receive greater condemnation. For in many things
2 we *all offend.* If any *one* offend not in word, the same
is a perfect man, . . able also to bridle the whole body.
3 Behold, we put *bridles into* the *mouths of horses,* that
they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body.
4 Behold also the ships, . . though they *are* so *large,* and
. . driven *by* fierce winds, yet are . . turned about by a
very small helm, whithersoever the *steersman* listeth. . .
5 So the tongue *also* is a little member, *yet* boasteth great
things. Behold how *much* matter a little fire kindleth.
6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the
tongue among *the* members, *which* defileth the whole
body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and . . is

7 set on fire of hell. . . Every kind, *both* of *wild* beasts
and of birds, *both* of *reptiles* and . . things in the sea, is
8 tamed, and hath been tamed *by* mankind. But the
tongue can no man tame: it is an unruly evil, full of
9 deadly poison. Therewith bless we God, even the
Father, and therewith curse we men, . . made after the
10 *likeness* of God. Out of the same mouth proceedeth
blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought
11 not so to be. Doth a fountain send . . *out of* the same
12 *opening* sweet water and bitter? Can a fig tree, my
brethren, bear olives, . . *or* a vine figs? *Neither* can . .
a fountain yield . . salt water and fresh.
13 Who is a wise *and knowing man* among you? Let
him show *by* a good conversation his works with meek-
14 ness of wisdom. But if ye have bitter *zeal* and strife
in your hearts, *do not glory* and lie against the truth.
15 This *is not the wisdom which* descendeth from above, but
16 is earthly, *animal*, devilish; For where *bitter zeal* and
17 strife is, there is *unquietness* and every evil work. But
the wisdom that is from above, is first pure, then
peaceable, gentle, . . easy to be entreated, full of mercy
and good fruits, without partiality, and without *dissimu-*
18 *lation*. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace
for them that make peace.

4 From whence come wars and fightings among you?
Is it not hence, . . *from* your *pleasures* that war in your
2 members? Ye *desire* and have not, ye kill, and *envy*,
and cannot obtain; ye fight and war; yet ye have not,
3 because ye ask not. Ye ask and receive not, because
ye ask amiss, that ye may *expend* it *on* your *pleasures*.
4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the
friendship of the world is enmity *against* God? Whoso-
ever therefore *desireth to* be a friend of the world, is *an*
5 enemy of God. Do ye think that the Scripture saith in
vain, The Spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth *against* envy?
6 But he giveth *greater* grace: *therefore it* saith, God resist-
7 eth the proud, but giveth grace *to* the humble. Submit
yourselves, therefore, to God, resist the devil, and he
8 will flee from you. Draw nigh to God, and he will
draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and
9 purify your hearts, ye double-minded. Be *afflicted*, and
mourn, and weep; let your laughter be turned *into*
10 mourning, and your joy *into* heaviness. Humble your-
selves *before* the Lord, and he *will* lift you up.
11 Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that
speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother,
speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law. But if
thou *judgest* the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but

12 a judge. There is one lawgiver that is able to save and
to destroy: Who art thou that judgest another?
13 *Come* now, ye that say, To-day or to-morrow we will
go *to* such a city, and continue there a year, and *traffic,*
14 and get gain: . . *Who* know not what shall be on the
morrow; for what is your life? It is . . a vapour that
appeareth for a little *time,* and then vanisheth away:
15 *instead of your saying,* If the Lord will, we shall *both*
16 live, and do this or that. But now ye *glory* in your
17 boastings: all such *glorying* is evil. Therefore to him
that knoweth to do good and doth it not, to him it
is sin.

5 *Come* now, ye rich, . . weep and howl for your miseries
that *are coming* upon you. Your riches are corrupted,
3 and your garments are *become* moth eaten. Your gold
and silver is cankered, and the *canker* of them *will* be a
testimony against you, and *will* eat your flesh as . . fire:
4 ye have *laid up* treasure *in* the last days. Behold, the
hire of *your* labourers who have reaped . . your fields,
which is *kept back . . by you,* crieth: and the cries of
them *who* have *gathered in your harvest* are entered into
5 the ears of the Lord of sabaoth. Ye have lived *deli-
cately and luxuriously on earth;* ye have *cherished* your
6 hearts, as in a day of *sacrifice.* Ye have condemned,
7 *ye have* killed the just: . . he doth not resist you. Be
patient, therefore, brethren, *till* the coming of the Lord.
Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit
of the earth, and hath . . patience for it, *till* he receives
8 the *former* and the latter rain. Be ye also patient,
stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord *is*
9 nigh. *Murmur* not one against another, brethren, lest
ye be condemned; Behold, the judge standeth before
10 the door. Take, my brethren, the prophets who *spoke*
in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering
11 affliction, and of patience. Behold, we count them
happy *that endured.* Ye have heard of the patience of
Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; *for* the Lord
12 is *full of compassion* and of tender mercy. But above
all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven,
nor by *the* earth, *nor* by any other oath; but let your
yea be yea, and your nay nay, lest ye fall *under* con-
demnation.
13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any
14 *cheerful?* let him sing psalms. Is any *among you sick?*
let him call for the elders of the Church, and let them
pray over him, *having anointed* him with oil in the name
15 of the Lord; And the prayer of faith shall save the sick,
and the Lord shall raise him up, and if he have committed

16 sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults
one to another, *brethren*, and pray one for another, that
ye may be healed: the . . fervent prayer of a righteous
17 man availeth much. *Elijah* was a man *of* like passions
with us; and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain;
and it rained not on the *land for* three years and six
18 months. And he prayed again, and the heaven gave
rain, and the *land* brought forth her fruit.
19 Brethren, if any *one among* you . . err from the truth,
20 and one convert him, Let him know that he *who* con-
verteth a sinner from the error of his way, shall save a
soul from death, and . . hide a multitude of sins.

The First Epistle General of ST. PETER

THERE is a wonderful weightiness, and yet liveliness, and sweetness in the epistles of St. Peter. His design in both is, to stir up the minds of those to whom he writes by way of remembrance, (2 Pet. iii. 1. and to guard them, not only against error, but also, against doubting, ch. i. 12.). This he does by reminding them of that glorious grace, which God had vouchsafed them through the gospel, by which believers are inflamed to bring forth the fruits of faith, hope, love, and patience.

I. ST. PETER

CHAPTER I

1 Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the *sojourners*
scattered *through* Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia,
2 and Bithynia, Elect (*according to the foreknowledge of God the Father*) through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ. Grace *and peace be multiplied to you.*
3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, *who,* according to his abundant mercy, hath *regenerated* us to a *living* hope, by the resurrection of
4 Jesus Christ from the dead, To an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away,
5 reserved in heaven for you, Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be re-
6 vealed in the last time. Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a *little while* (*if need be*) ye are in heavi-
7 ness through manifold temptations: That the trial of your faith, *which is* much more precious than . . gold, (*that perisheth, though it be tried with fire,*) *may* be found unto praise, and honour, and glory, at the *revelation* of
8 Jesus Christ. Whom having not seen, ye love: in whom though ye see him not, yet believing, ye *now* rejoice
9 with joy unspeakable and full of glory, Receiving the
10 end of your faith, . . the salvation of your souls. Of which salvation the prophets, *who prophesied of the grace of God toward you, inquired and searched diligently,*

11 Searching what, *and* what manner of time the Spirit of
Christ which was in them *signified*, when *he* testified
beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the *glories* that
12 were to follow. *To* whom it was revealed, that not *for*
themselves, but *for* us they *ministered* the things which
have been now *declared to* you by them that have preached
the Gospel *to* you, with the Holy Ghost sent down from
13 heaven; which things angels desire to look into. Where-
fore gird up the loins of your mind, be *watchful*, and hope
perfectly for the grace that *shall* be brought *to* you at
14 the revelation of Jesus Christ. As obedient children,
conform not yourselves . . to your former *desires* in
15 your ignorance: But as he *who* hath called you is holy,
so be ye *yourselves also* holy in all manner of conversa-
16 tion: *For* it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy. And
if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons
judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time
18 of your sojourning in fear; *Seeing* ye know ye were not
redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold,
from your vain conversation *delivered* by tradition from
19 your fathers. But with the precious blood of Christ,
20 as of a lamb without blemish and without spot, Who
verily was *foreknown* before the foundation of the world,
21 but was manifested in *the* last times, for you, Who
through him . . believe in God that raised him from the
dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope
might be in God.
22 *Having* purified your souls *by* obeying the truth
through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren,
23 . . love one another with a pure heart fervently: Being
born again, not by corruptible seed, but . . incorrupt-
ible, through the word of God which liveth and abideth
24 for ever. For all flesh is . . grass, and all the glory
of *it* as the flower of grass: The grass *is withered*, and the
25 flower . . *is fallen off:* But the word of the Lord endur-
eth for ever. And this is the word which *is preached to
you in the Gospel.*

2 Wherefore laying aside all *wickedness*, and all guile,
and *dissimulation*, and envies, and . . evil speakings,
2 As new-born babes desire the sincere milk of the word,
3 that ye may grow thereby; *Since* ye have tasted that
4 the Lord is gracious: To whom coming as unto a living
stone, *rejected* indeed *by* . . men, but chosen of God
5 and precious, Ye also as *living* stones are built up, a
spiritual house, *a* holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual
sacrifices, acceptable to God *through* Jesus Christ.
6 Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold,
I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious, and

7 he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. *There-*
fore to you who believe, he is precious; but as to them
who believe not, The stone which the builders *rejected* . .
8 is *become* the head of the corner. And a stone of
stumbling, and a rock of offence, . . to them *who*
stumble, . . *not believing the word,* whereunto also they
9 were appointed. But ye are a chosen *race,* a royal
priesthood, *a* holy nation, a *purchased* people, that ye
may show forth the *virtues* of him who hath called you
10 out of darkness into his marvellous light: *Who* in time
past were not a people, but *now are* the people of God:
who had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained
mercy.
11 . . Beloved, I beseech you as *sojourners* and pilgrims,
abstain from fleshly *desires,* which war against the soul,
12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles,
that whereas they speak against you as evil doers, they
may, by your good works which they shall behold,
13 glorify God in the day of visitation. *Be subject* to every
ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether it be to
14 the king, as supreme, Or *to* governors, as . . sent by
him, for the punishment of evil doers, and . . the praise
15 of them that do well. For so is the will of God, that *by*
well doing ye . . put to silence the ignorance of foolish
16 men: As free, *yet* not *having* your liberty for a cloak of
17 *wickedness,* but as *the* servants of God. Honour all
men, Love the brotherhood, Fear God, Honour the
18 king. Servants, be subject to your masters with all
fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the
19 froward. For this is thankworthy, if a man for con-
science toward God endure grief, *though he suffer* wrong-
20 fully. For what glory is it, if *when ye commit* faults
and are buffeted, ye take it patiently. But if when ye
do well and *yet* suffer . . , ye take it patiently, this *is*
21 acceptable with God. For even hereunto are ye called;
for Christ also suffered for us, leaving *you* an example,
22 that *ye* might follow his steps: Who did no sin, neither
23 was guile found in his mouth; Who, when he was
reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered he threat-
ened not, but committed himself to him that judgeth
24 righteously: Who *himself* bore our sins in his own body
on the tree, that we being dead to *sin* might live *to*
25 righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. For
ye were as sheep going astray, but are now returned to
the shepherd and bishop of your souls.

3 *In like manner,* ye wives, be *subject* to your own hus-
bands, that if any obey not the word, they also may
without the word be won by the *deportment* of the wives,

2 *Beholding* your chaste *deportment joined* with fear:
3 Whose adorning let it not be *the* outward adorning of
curling the hair, and of wearing . . gold, or of putting
4 on . . apparel, But . . the hidden man of the heart,
in *the incorruptible* . . ornament of a meek and quiet
5 spirit, which *in the sight of God is* of great price. For
thus the holy women also of old time, who trusted in God,
adorned themselves, being *subject to* their own husbands,
6 . . As Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose
children ye are *while* ye do well, and are not afraid with
7 any amazement: *In like manner*, ye husbands, dwell
according to knowledge with the woman, as the weaker vessel; giving them honour, . . as being *the joint* heirs
of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered.
8 Finally, Be ye all of one mind, *sympathizing with each*
9 other; love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous: Not
rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing, but contrariwise blessing; knowing that ye are *called to this, to*
10 inherit a blessing. For *let him that desireth to love life and to see good days*, refrain his tongue from evil, and
11 his lips that they speak no guile. Let him *turn from*
12 evil and do good; let him seek peace and *pursue* it. For
the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his
ears are open *to* their prayer; but the face of the Lord
13 is against them that do evil. And who is he that will
14 harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good? But
even if ye *do* suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye;
15 and *fear ye* not *their fear*, neither be *ye* troubled, But
sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: And be *always ready* to give an answer to every *one* that asketh you
a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and
16 fear: Having a good conscience, that *wherein* they speak
against you as evil doers, they may be ashamed *who*
17 falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ. For
it is better, if the will of God be so, *to* suffer for well
18 doing than for evil doing. For Christ also . . once
suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might
bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but
19 *raised up to life* by the Spirit, By which *likewise* he went
20 and preached *to* the spirits in prison, *Who were disobedient of old*, when . . the long-suffering of God waited in the
days of Noah, while the ark was . . preparing, wherein
few, that is, eight *persons*, were *carried safely through*
21 the water: The *antitype whereof*, . . baptism, *now saveth us*, (not the putting away . . the filth of the
flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,)
22 by the resurrection of Jesus Christ, Who *being* gone
into heaven, is on the right hand of God; angels, and
authorities, and powers, being *subjected to* him.

4 *Seeing* then . . Christ hath suffered for us in the
flesh, arm yourselves *also* with the same mind; (*for he*
2 *that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin;*) That
ye may no longer live the rest of your time in the flesh,
3 to the *desire* of men, but to the will of God. For the
time *of* . . *life that is past sufficeth* to have wrought the
will of the Gentiles, when *ye* walked in lasciviousness,
evil desires, excess of wine, *banquetings*, *revellings*, and
4 abominable idolatries. Wherein they think it strange,
that ye run not with them to the same *profusion* of
5 riot, speaking evil of you, Who shall give account to
6 Him that is ready to judge the *living* and the dead. For
to this *end* was the Gospel preached *to them that are*
dead also, that they might be judged according to men
in the flesh, but live according to God in the Spirit.
7 But the end of all things is at hand, be ye therefore
8 sober, and watch unto prayer. And above all things
have fervent *love to each other;* for *love covereth* a multi-
9 tude of sins. Use hospitality one to another without
10 *murmuring*. As every *one* hath received a gift, . . so
minister *it* one to another, as good stewards of the
11 manifold grace of God. If any man speak, let him
speak as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let
him *minister* as of the ability which God *supplieth*, that
God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ,
whose is *the glory* and *the might* for ever and ever. Amen.
12 Beloved, *wonder* not *at* the *burning which is among*
you, which is *for your trial*, as *if a* strange thing *befell*
13 you: But *as ye partake of the sufferings of Christ, rejoice*,
that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may *likewise*
14 *rejoice* with exceeding *great* joy. If ye *are* reproached
for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the Spirit of
glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is
15 *blasphemed*, but on your part he is glorified. *But* let
none of you suffer as a murderer, or . . a thief, or . .
an evil doer, or as a *meddler* in other men's matters,
16 Yet if any . . suffer as a Christian, let him not be
17 ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf. For
the time is come *for* judgment *to* begin at the house of
God: *but* if it begin at us, what shall the end be of
18 them that obey not the Gospel of God? And if the
righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly
19 and the sinner appear? Wherefore let . . them *also*
that suffer according to the will of God, commit . . their
souls to him in well doing as unto a faithful Creator.

5 The elders *that* are among you I exhort, who am *a*
fellow elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ,
and *likewise* a partaker of the glory *which* shall be

2 revealed, Feed the flock of God which is among you,
overseeing it not by constraint, but willingly, not for
3 filthy *gain*, but of a ready mind, Neither as *lording* over
4 *the* heritage . . , but being examples to the flock. And
when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive
5 the crown of glory that fadeth not away. In like
manner, ye younger, *be subject to* the elder, yea, *being*
all . . subject to *each other*, . . be clothed with humil-
ity; for God resisteth the proud, *but* giveth grace to
6 the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the
mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:
7 Casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you.
8 *Watch:* be vigilant: *for* your adversary the devil *walketh*
about as a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour:
9 Whom resist, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the
same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that
are in the world.
10 *Now* the God of all grace, who hath called us *by Christ*
Jesus to his eternal glory, after . . ye have suffered
awhile, *himself shall perfect*, stablish, strengthen, settle
11 you. To him be *the* glory and *the might* for ever and
ever. Amen.
12 By Sylvanus, a faithful brother, *as I suppose, I have*
written briefly to you, exhorting and *adding my testimony*,
that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.
13 The Church that is at Babylon, elected together with
14 you, saluteth you, and . . *Mark*, my son. *Salute* ye
one another with a kiss of charity. Peace be with you
all that are in Christ . . .

The Second Epistle General of ST. PETER

CHAPTER I

1 Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ,
to them that have obtained like precious faith with us,
through the righteousness of *our* God and . . Saviour
2 Jesus Christ, Grace and peace be multiplied unto you,
through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord; . .
3 As his Divine power hath given . . us all things that pertain
to life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that
4 hath called us *by* glory and virtue, *Through which he*
hath given . . us *precious and exceeding great* promises;
that by these, *having escaped the corruption which is in*
the world through desire, ye may become partakers of the
5 *Divine nature: For this very reason*, giving all diligence,
add to your faith *courage*, and to *courage* knowledge,
6 And to knowledge temperance, and to temperance
7 patience, and to patience godliness, And to godliness
8 brotherly kindness, and to brotherly kindness *love.* For
these, being in you and *abounding*, . . make you . .
neither *slothful* nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our
9 Lord Jesus Christ. But he that *wanteth* these is blind,
not able to see afar off, *having* forgotten *the purification*
10 *from* his *former* sins. Wherefore, brethren, *be the more*
diligent to make your calling and election *firm;* for if ye
11 do these things ye shall never fall. For so an entrance
shall be ministered *to* you abundantly into the everlasting
12 kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Where-
fore I will not *neglect always to remind* you of these things,
though ye know them, and *are* established in the present
13 truth; Yea, I think it *right, so* long as I am in this
14 tabernacle, to stir you up by *reminding you:* Knowing
that shortly I must put off . . my tabernacle, even as
15 our Lord Jesus Christ showed me. *But* I will endeavour
that ye may be able after my decease to have these
things always in remembrance.
16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables,
while we made known to you the power and coming of
our Lord Jesus Christ; but were eye witnesses of his
17 majesty; For he received *honour and glory from God the*
Father, when there came such a voice to him from the
excellent glory; This is my beloved Son, in whom I
18 *delight.* And *we being with him in the holy mountain,*

19 *heard this voice coming from heaven. And* we have *the* word of prophecy *more confirmed, to which* ye do well *that ye take heed,* as to a lamp that *shone* in a dark place, *till* the day *should* dawn, and the *morning* star arise in
20 your hearts: Knowing this *before,* that no *Scripture*
21 prophecy is of private interpretation. For prophecy came not *of old* by the will of man, but *the* holy men of God spake, *being moved* by the Holy Ghost.

2 But there were false prophets also among the people, . . as there *will likewise* be false teachers among you, who *will privately* bring in *destructive* heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many *will* follow their
2 pernicious ways, by *means* of whom the way of truth
3 will be evil spoken of. And through covetousness *will* they with feigned *speeches* make merchandise of you, whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and
4 their *destruction* slumbereth not. For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but *having* cast them down to hell, delivered them into chains of darkness, to be
5 reserved unto judgment: And spared not the old world, (but he *preserved* Noah, the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness,) bringing . . *a* flood on the world of the
6 ungodly: And *condemned* the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah *to destruction, turning* them into ashes, *setting* them *as* an *example to them* that should *afterward* live
7 ungodly: And delivered *righteous* Lot, *grieved* with the
8 filthy *behaviour* of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, *by* seeing and hearing, *tormented* his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful
9 deeds:) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of *temptation,* and to reserve the *unrighteous to* the day
10 of judgment to be punished. But chiefly them that walk after the flesh, in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. *Daring, . . self-willed;* they are
11 not afraid to *rail at* dignities: Whereas angels, *who* are greater in *strength* and *power,* bring not *a* railing accusa-
12 tion against them before the Lord. But these *men,* as natural brute beasts *born* to be taken and destroyed, *speaking* evil of the things . . they understand not, shall
13 perish in their own corruption, *Receiving* the reward of unrighteousness. They . . count it pleasure to riot in the day time; spots and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings, while they feast with
14 you, Having eyes full of adultery, and that . . cease not from sin; *ensnaring* unstable souls, *having* a heart
15 exercised with *covetousness, accursed* children: *Who* have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following

the way of Balaam, the son of Bosor, who loved the
16 *reward* of unrighteousness. But *he had a rebuke* for his
iniquity: the dumb *beast*, speaking with man's voice,
17 forbade the madness of the prophet. These are *fountains* without water, clouds . . *driven by* a tempest, to
whom the *blackness* of darkness is reserved for ever.
18 For *by speaking* . . swelling words of vanity, they
ensnare in the *desires* of the flesh, *in* . . wantonness,
those that were *entirely* escaped from them *that* live in
19 error. While they promise them liberty, . . themselves
are the slaves of corruption; for *by* whom a man is over-
20 come, *by him he is also* brought into *slavery*. For if after
they have escaped the pollutions of the world, through
the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ,
they are again entangled therein and overcome, *their last*
21 *state* is worse than the *first*. For it had been better for
them not to have known the way of righteousness, than
having known it, to turn from the holy commandment
22 delivered *to* them. But it *has befallen* . . them according *to* the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own
vomit, . . and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

3 This second epistle, beloved, I now write to you, in
both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remem-
2 brance, That ye may be mindful of the words which were
spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the *commandments* of us, the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:
3 Knowing this first, that there *will* come *scoffers in the*
4 *last days*, walking after their own *desires*, And saying,
Where is the promise of his coming? For *ever* since the
fathers fell asleep all things continue as they were from
5 the beginning of the creation. For this they *are willingly*
ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were
of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in
6 the water, *Through which* the world that then was, being
7 overflowed with water, perished. But the heavens and
the earth *that* are now, *are by his word treasured up*,
reserved unto fire, *at* the day of judgment and *destruction*
8 of ungodly men. But, beloved, be not *ye* ignorant of
this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thou-
9 sand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord
is not *slow* concerning his promise (*though* some men
count *it slowness*) but is long-suffering *for your sake*, not
willing that any should perish, but that all should come
10 to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come as a
thief, . . in . . which the heavens shall pass away with
a great noise, . . the elements shall melt with fervent
heat, *and the earth*, and the works that are therein, shall

11 be burned up. Seeing then . . all these things *are* dis-
solved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all
12 holy conversation and godliness, Looking for and *hasten-*
ing on the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens
being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall
13 melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless, we *look for new*
heavens and a new earth, according to his promise, wherein
14 dwelleth righteousness. Wherefore, beloved, seeing . .
ye look for these things, *labour to* be found of him in
15 peace, without spot and blameless. And account . . the
long-suffering of *the* Lord . . salvation, . . as our be-
loved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given
16 . . him, hath written *to* you: As also in all his epistles,
speaking *therein* of these things, in which are some things
hard to be understood, which *the* . . unlearned and un-
stable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, to
their own destruction.
17 Ye, therefore, beloved, *knowing* these things before,
beware, lest ye also, being led away by the error of the
18 wicked, fall from your own steadfastness: But grow in
grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour
Jesus Christ. To him be *the* glory both now and *to the*
day of eternity! Amen.

The First Epistle of ST. JOHN

THE great similitude, or rather sameness both of spirit and expression, which runs through St. John's gospel, and all his epistles, is a clear evidence of their being written by the same person. In this epistle he speaks not to any particular church, but to all the Christians of that age, and in them to the whole Christian church in all succeeding ages.

Some have apprehended, that it is not easy to discern the scope and method of this epistle. But if we examine it with simplicity, these may readily be discovered. St. John in this letter, or rather tract (for he was present with part of those to whom he wrote) has this apparent aim, to confirm the happy and holy communion of the faithful with God and Christ, by describing the marks of that blessed state.

I. ST. JOHN

CHAPTER I

1 That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have *beheld*, and our hands have handled of the Word of life:
2 (For the life was manifested, and we *saw* it, and *testify* and *declare to* you *the* eternal life which was with the
3 Father, and was manifested *to* us:) That which we have seen and heard declare we *to* you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the
4 Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ: And these things write we *to* you, that your joy may be full.
5 *And this* is the message which we have heard of him, and declare *to* you, that God is light, and in him is no
6 darkness at all. If we say . . we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the
7 truth. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of
8 Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. If we

say . . we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the
9 truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful
and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from
10 all unrighteousness. If we say we have not sinned, we
make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

2 My *beloved* children, *I write these things to* you, that
ye *may not* sin. But if any *one* sin, we have an Advocate
2 with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous, And he is
the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but
3 also for the sins of the whole world. And hereby we . .
know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.
4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his com-
5 mandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. *But*
whoso keepeth his word, *verily in him* the love of God *is*
6 perfected: hereby we know that we are in him. He
that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to
7 walk, even as he walked. *Beloved*, I write *not a* new
commandment *to* you, but *the* old commandment, which
ye *have* had from the beginning; the old commandment is
8 the word which ye have heard from the beginning. Again,
I *do write a new commandment to* you, which is true in
him, and in you: *for* the darkness is passed away, and
9 the true light now shineth. He that saith he is in the
light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness . . until
10 now. He that loveth his brother, abideth in the light,
11 and there is *no* occasion of stumbling in him: But he
that hateth his brother is in darkness, and walketh in
darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because
12 . . darkness hath blinded his eyes. I *have written* to
you, *beloved* children, because your sins are forgiven
13 you for his *name* sake. I write *to* you, fathers, because
ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write
to you, young men, because ye have overcome the
wicked one. I write *to* you, little children, because ye
14 have known the Father. I have written *to* you, fathers,
because ye have known him that is from the beginning.
I have written *to* you, young men, because ye are
strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye
15 have overcome the wicked one. Love not the world,
neither the things that are in the world: if any *one*
16 love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For
all that is in the world, the *desire* of the flesh, and the
desire of the *eye*, and the pride of life, is not of the
17 Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth
away, and the *desire* thereof; but he that doth the will
18 of God abideth for ever. Little children, it is the last
time: and as ye have heard that antichrist *cometh*, *so*
even now *there are* many antichrists, whereby we know

19 that it is the last time. They went out from us, but
they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they
would . . have continued with us: but they went out,
that they might be made manifest that they were not
20 all of us. But ye have an *anointing* from the Holy One,
21 and . . know all things. I have not written *to* you,
because ye know not the truth; but because ye know
22 it, and that no lie is of the truth. Who is *that* liar,
but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is
23 antichrist who denieth the Father and the Son. Whoso-
ever denieth the Son, *he* hath not the Father: . . he
that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.
24 *Therefore let that* abide in you which ye . . heard from
the beginning: if that which ye . . heard from the
beginning *abide* in you, ye also shall *abide* in the Son,
25 and in the Father. And this is the promise *which* he
26 hath promised us, . . eternal life. These things have
27 I written *to* you concerning them that seduce you. But
the anointing which ye have received of him abideth
in you and ye need not that any . . *should* teach you,
save as the same anointing teacheth you of all things,
and is *true*, and is no lie; and . . as it *has* taught you,
ye shall abide in him.
28 And now, *beloved* children, abide in him, that when
he shall appear, *we* may have confidence, and not be
29 ashamed before him at his coming. *Since* ye know that
he is righteous, ye know that every one *who practiseth*
righteousness is born of him.

3 Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed
upon us, that we should be called the *children* of God:
therefore the world knoweth us not, because it *knoweth*
2 *not him*. Beloved, now are we the *children* of God, and
it doth not yet appear what we shall be; but we know,
. . when he shall appear, we shall be like him, for we
3 shall see him as he is. And every *one* that hath this
4 hope in him purifieth himself even as he is pure. Who-
soever committeth sin transgresseth also the law; for
5 sin is the transgression of the law. And *ye* know that
he was manifested to take away our *sin*, and in him is
6 no sin. Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not; who-
7 soever sinneth, *seeth* him not, neither *knoweth* him. *Be-
loved* children, let no *one* deceive you. He that *practiseth*
8 righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. He
that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth
from the beginning: *to this end* the Son of God was
9 manifested, *to* destroy the works of the devil. Whoso-
ever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed
abideth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of

10 God. *Hereby* the children of God are *manifested* and
the children of the devil: whosoever *practiseth* not
righteousness is not of God; neither he that loveth not
11 his brother. For this is the message *which* ye *have*
heard from the beginning, that we . . love one another.
12 Not as Cain, who was of *the* wicked one, and slew his
brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his
own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.
13 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you. We
know that we *are* passed from death to life, because we
love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother abideth
15 in death. Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer,
and ye know no murderer hath eternal life abiding in
16 him. *Hereby we know* the love of God, because he laid
down his life for us; and we ought to lay down our
17 lives for the brethren. But whoso hath this world's
good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up
his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the
18 love of God in him? My *beloved* children, let us love
not in word, neither in tongue, but in deed, and in truth.
19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall
20 assure our hearts before him. For if our heart condemn
us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all
21 things. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then
22 have we confidence toward God. And whatsoever we
ask, we receive of him, because we keep his command-
ments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.
23 And this is his commandment, that we should believe
on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one
24 another, as he hath given us commandment. And he
that keepeth his commandments, *abideth* in Him, and
He in him; and hereby we know that he abideth in us,
by the Spirit which he hath given us.

4 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits,
whether they are of God, because many false prophets
2 are gone out into the world. Hereby *ye know* the Spirit
of God: every spirit *which* confesseth . . Jesus Christ,
3 *who* is come in the flesh, is of God. And every spirit
which confesseth not . . Jesus Christ, *who* is come in
the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of anti-
christ, whereof ye have heard that it *cometh:* and . .
4 now already is it in the world. Ye are of God, *beloved*
children, and have overcome them; because greater is
5 he that is in you, than he that is in the world. They
are of the world; therefore speak they of the world, and
6 the world heareth them. We are of God: he that
knoweth God heareth us: he that is not of God, heareth
not us; hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the

7 spirit of error. Beloved, let us love one another; for
love is of God, and every one that loveth is born of God,
8 and knoweth God. He that loveth not, knoweth not
9 God; for God is love. *Hereby* was manifested the love
of God *toward* us, because . . God sent his only begotten
Son into the world, that we might live through him.
10 Herein is love; not that we loved God, but that he loved
us, and sent his Son, . . *a* propitiation for our sins.
11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one
12 another. No man hath seen God at any time. If we
love one another, God *abideth* in us, and his love is
13 perfected in us. Hereby *we know* that we *abide* in him,
14 and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit. And
we have seen and . . testify, that the Father sent the
15 Son to be the Saviour of the world. Whosoever shall
confess, that Jesus is the Son of God, God *abideth* in
16 him, and he in God. And we *know* and *believe* the love
that God hath to us. God is love, and he that *abideth*
17 in love, *abideth* in God, and God in him. *Hereby* is our
love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day
of judgment, because as he is, so are we in this world.
18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out
fear, because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not
19 made perfect in love. We love him, because he first
20 loved us. If *any* man say, I love God, and hateth his
brother, he is a liar; for he that loveth not his brother,
whom he hath seen, how can he love God, whom he
21 hath not seen? And this commandment have we from
him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

5 Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born
of God, and every one *who* loveth him that begat, loveth
2 him also that is begotten of him. *Hereby* we know that
we love the children of God, when we love God, and
3 keep his commandments: For this is the love of God,
that we keep his commandments; and his command-
4 ments are not grievous. For whatsoever is born of God
overcometh the world; and this is the victory that over-
5 cometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that
overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus
6 is the Son of God? This is he that came by water and
blood; even Jesus Christ; not by the water only, but
by the water and the blood; and it is the Spirit *who*
8 *testifieth;* because the Spirit is truth. *For there are three*
that testify on earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the
7 *blood, and these three agree in one. And there are three*
that testify in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy
9 *Ghost, and these three are one.* If we receive the
testimony of men, the *testimony* of God is greater; *and*

this is the *testimony* of God, which he hath testified of his
10 Son. He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the
testimony in himself. He that believeth not God, hath
made him a liar, because he believeth not the *testimony*
11 which *he hath testified* of his Son. And this is the
testimony, that God hath given . . us eternal life, and
12 this life is in his Son. He that hath the Son hath life;
and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.
13 These things have I written *to* you *who* believe on the
name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye
who believe on the name of the Son of God have eternal life.
14 And this is the confidence *which* we have in him, that if
we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.
15 And if we know that he *heareth* us, whatsoever we ask,
we know that we have the petitions *which* we *have asked*
16 of him. If any *one* see his brother sin a sin which is
not unto death, *let him* ask, and he *will* give him life
for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto
17 death. I do not say that he shall pray for *that.* All
unrighteousness is sin: *but* there is a sin not unto death.
18 We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not;
but he that is *born* of God keepeth himself, and *the*
19 wicked one toucheth him not. . . We know that we are
of God, and the whole world lieth in *the wicked one.*
20 *But* we know that the Son of God is come; and *he* hath
given us an understanding that we may know *the true*
one; and we are in the *true one,* even in his Son Jesus
21 Christ; this is the true God, and eternal life. *Beloved*
children, keep yourselves from idols . . .

The Second Epistle of ST. JOHN

1 The elder unto the elect *Kuria* and her children,
whom I love in the truth, and not I only, but *likewise*
2 all . . *who know* the truth, For the truth's sake which
3 *abideth* in us, and shall be with us for ever. Grace be
with you, mercy and peace from God the Father, and
from . . Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth,
and love.
4 I rejoiced greatly that I found of thy children walking
in *the* truth, as we . . received . . commandment
5 from the Father. And now I beseech thee, *Kuria,*
(not as . . *writing* a new commandment *to* thee, but
that which we had from the beginning,) that we *may*
6 love one another. And this is love, that we walk after
his commandments. This is the commandment . . as
ye have heard from the beginning, *that* ye may walk
7 in it. For many *seducers* are entered into the world,
who confess not . . Jesus Christ *that came* in the flesh.
8 This is *the seducer* and *the* antichrist. Look to your-
selves, that we lose not *the* things we have wrought,
9 but . . receive a full reward. Whosoever transgresseth
and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not
God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath
10 both the Father and the Son. If . . *any come to* you,
and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your
11 house, neither bid him God speed. For he that biddeth
him God speed, is a partaker of his evil deeds.
12 Having many things to write *to* you, I *was* not *minded*
to write with paper and ink: but I trust to come *to* you,
13 and speak face to face, that our joy may be full. The
children of thy elect sister *salute* thee. , ,

The Third Epistle of ST. JOHN

1 The elder unto the . . beloved Gaius, whom I *truly*
2 love . . . Beloved, I . . *pray that in every respect* thou
mayest prosper and be in health, . . as thy soul
prospereth.
3 For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came, and
testified of the truth that is in thee, . . as thou walkest
4 in the truth. I have no greater joy than . . *this*, to
5 hear that my children walk in the truth. Beloved,
thou dost faithfully whatsoever thou dost to the breth-
6 ren, and to strangers, *who have testified of thy love* before
the Church; Whom if thou *send* forward on their jour-
7 ney after a godly sort, thou shalt do well. *For they*
went forth for his sake, taking nothing of the Gentiles.
8 We *ought, therefore,* to receive such, that we *may* be
9 *fellow helpers* to the truth. I wrote *to* the Church; but
Diotrephes, who loveth to have the pre-eminence among
10 them, receiveth us not. Wherefore, if I come, I will
remember his *wicked* deeds which he doth, prating
against us with malicious words: and not content there-
with, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and
forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of
11 the Church. Beloved, follow not that which is evil,
but that which is good. He that *is a doer of* good, is
of God; . . he that is *a doer of* evil, hath not seen God.
12 Demetrius hath a good *testimony* from all men, and
from the truth itself: yea, . . we also bear *testimony*,
and ye know that our *testimony* is true.
13 I had many things to write; but I will not *write to*
14 *thee with ink and pen.* But I trust . . *to* see thee
shortly, and we shall speak face to face. Peace be to
thee. Our friends salute thee. *Salute* the friends by
name.

The General Epistle of ST. JUDE

1 Jude, *a* servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James,
to them that are *beloved of* God the Father, and pre-
2 served *through* Jesus Christ, and called, Mercy unto you,
and peace, and love be multiplied.
3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write *to* you of
the common salvation, it was needful for me to write *to*
you, and exhort you . . *to contend earnestly* for the faith
4 which was once delivered *to* the saints. For there are
certain men crept in unawares, who were . . of old
described before, *with regard* to this condemnation,
ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into las-
civiousness, and denying *our* only *Master* and . . Lord,
5 Jesus Christ. I *am* therefore willing to *remind* you, who
once knew this, . . that the Lord, having saved the
people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed
6 them that believed not. And the angels, *who* kept not
their first *dignity*, but left their own habitation, he hath
reserved in everlasting chains under darkness *to* the
7 judgment of the great day. Even as Sodom and
Gomorrah and the cities about them, . . *which, in the
same manner with these gave* themselves over to fornica-
tion, and *went* after strange flesh, are set forth for an
8 example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. *In like
manner* these . . dreamers *also* defile the flesh, despise
9 *authority*, . . *rail at* dignities. Yet Michael the arch-
angel, when, contending with the devil, he disputed
concerning the body of Moses, durst not bring against
him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.
10 But these . . *rail at all* things which they know not:
and all the things which they know naturally, as *the* brute
11 beasts, in *these* they are *defiled* . . . *Wo* to them; for
they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily
after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in
the gainsaying of *Korah*.
12 These are spots in your feasts of *love, while they
banquet* with you, feeding themselves without fear:
clouds . . without water, *driven* about of winds; trees
without . . *leaves*, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up
13 by the roots; Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their
own shame; wandering stars, *for* whom is reserved the
14 blackness of darkness for ever. And *of these also, Enoch*,
the seventh from Adam, prophesied, . . saying, Behold

15 the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his *holy ones*, To
execute judgment upon all, and to *convict* all . . *the*
ungodly of all their ungodly deeds, which they have
impiously committed, and of all *the grievous things* which
ungodly sinners have spoken against him.
16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their
own *desires*, and their mouth *speaking* great swelling
things, having men's persons in admiration *for the sake*
17 *of gain*. But *ye*, beloved, remember . . the words which
were spoken before *by* the apostles of our Lord Jesus
18 Christ. *For* . . they told you, *In the last time there will*
be mockers, . . *walking* after their own ungodly *desires*.
19 These *are* they who separate themselves, sensual, *not*
20 *having* the Spirit. But ye, beloved, building . . your-
selves *up* in your most holy faith, praying *through* the
21 Holy *Spirit*, Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking
for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.
22 And . . some, *that are wavering*, *convince;* Some save,
snatching them out of the fire; *on* others *have compassion*
with fear, hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.
24 Now *to* Him *who is* able to keep *them* from falling, and
to present you faultless *in* the presence of his glory with
25 exceeding joy, To the only . . God, our Saviour, be
glory, and majesty, *might*, and *authority*, both now, and
to all ages. Amen.

The REVELATION of JESUS CHRIST

CHAPTER I

1 The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto
him to show . . his servants *the* things which must
shortly come to pass, and he sent and signified *them* by
2 his angel *to* his servant John, Who *hath testified* the Word
of God and . . the testimony of Jesus Christ, *whatsoever*
3 things he saw. *Happy* is he that readeth, and they
that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep *the*
things which are written therein: for the time is *near.*
4 John to the seven Churches which are in Asia: Grace
be unto you, and peace, from him *who* is, and *who* was,
and *who cometh,* and from the seven Spirits *that* are
5 before his throne, And from Jesus Christ, . . the
faithful witness, . . the first begotten *from* the dead,
and the prince of the kings of the earth: *To* him that
loveth us, and *hath* washed us from our sins *with* his
6 own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto
his God and . . Father, to him be *the* glory and *the*
might for ever. . .
7 Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall
see him, and they *who have* pierced him: and all the
tribes of the earth shall wail because of him. . . *Yea.*
8 Amen. I am *the* Alpha and *the* Omega, . . saith the
Lord God, *who* is, and *who* was, and *who cometh,* the
Almighty.
9 I John, . . your brother and companion in *the afflic-*
tion, and in the kingdom, and patience of Jesus . . , was
in the *island* . . Patmos, for the word of God, and for
10 the testimony of Jesus . . . I was in the Spirit on the
Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice as of a
11 trumpet, Saying . . , What thou seest write in a book,
and send . . to the seven Churches . . , *to* Ephesus,
and *to* Smyrna, and *to* Pergamos, and *to* Thyatira, and
12 *to* Sardis, and *to* Philadelphia, and *to* Laodicea. And I
turned to see the voice that spake with me, and being
13 turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks, And in the
midst of the candlesticks one like *a* Son of man, clothed
with a garment down to the foot, and girt about *at the*
14 *breast* with a golden girdle. His head and . . *hair* were
. . white as white wool, as snow, and his eyes . . as a
15 flame of fire, And his feet like . . fine brass, as if they

burned in a furnace, and his voice as the *voice* of many
16 waters. And he had in his right hand seven stars, and
out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword; and
his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.
17 And when I saw him I fell at his feet *as* dead: and he
laid his right hand upon me, saying . . , Fear not, I
18 am the First and the Last, *And he* that liveth and was
dead, and behold I am alive for evermore, . . and have
19 the keys of *death* and of *hades*. Write the things which
thou hast seen, and . . which are, and . . which shall
20 be hereafter: The mystery of the seven stars which
thou sawest in my right hand, and of the seven golden
candlesticks. The seven stars are . . angels of the
seven Churches; and the seven candlesticks . . are . .
seven Churches.

2 *To* the angel of the Church *at* Ephesus write, These
things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right
hand, *that* walketh in the midst of the seven golden
2 candlesticks. I know thy works, and thy labour, and
thy patience, *that* thou canst not bear . . *evil men;* and
thou hast tried *those who* say they are apostles, and are
3 not, and hast found them liars: *And hast patience, and
hast borne* for my name's sake, and hast not fainted.
4 *But* I have . . against thee, *that* thou hast left thy first
5 love. Remember therefore from whence thou art
fallen, and repent, and do the first works: *if not,* I . .
come to thee, . . and will remove thy candlestick out
6 of *its* place, *unless* thou repent. But *thou hast this,*
that thou hatest the *works* of the Nicolaitans, which I
7 also hate. He that hath an ear let him hear what the
Spirit saith *to* the Churches. To him that overcometh
will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the . .
paradise of *my* God.
8 And *to* the angel of the Church at Smyrna write,
These things saith the First and the Last, *who* was dead
9 and is alive; I know thy works, and *thy affliction* and
poverty, (but thou art rich) and . . the *reviling* of
those who say they are Jews, and are not, but . . *a*
10 synagogue of Satan. Fear none of those things which
thou *art about to* suffer; behold the devil *is about to*
cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and
ye shall have *affliction* ten days: Be thou faithful unto
11 death, and I will give thee *the* crown of life. He that
hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith *to* the
Churches: He that overcometh shall not be hurt by
the second death.
12 And to the angel of the Church *at* Pergamos write,
These things saith he *who* hath the sharp *two-edged*

13 *sword.* I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, . .
where *the throne of Satan* is; and thou holdest fast my
name, and hast not denied my faith, . . in *the* days
wherein Antipas was my faithful *witness,* who was slain
14 among you where Satan dwelleth. But I have a few
things against thee, *that* thou hast there them that hold
the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a
stumbling-block before the *sons* of Israel, to eat things
15 sacrificed *to* idols, and to commit fornication. *In like*
manner thou also hast them that hold the doctrine of the
16 Nicolaitans, which . . I hate. Repent *therefore; if*
not, I . . come *to* thee . . , and will fight against them
17 with the sword of my mouth. He that hath an ear,
let him hear what the Spirit saith *to* the Churches. To
him that overcometh will I give . . of the hidden
manna, and will give him a white stone, and *on* the
stone a new name written, which *none* knoweth, *but* he
that receiveth it.
18 And *to* the angel of the Church *at* Thyatira write,
These things saith the Son of God, who hath . . eyes
19 *as* a flame of fire, and his feet . . like fine brass. I
know *thy love and faith, and thy service and patience, and*
20 *thy last works* more than the first. *But* I have . .
against thee, *that* thou suffereth that woman Jezebel,
who calleth herself a prophetess, *and teacheth* and
seduceth my servants to commit fornication, and to eat
21 things sacrificed *to* idols: And I gave her *time* to repent
22 of her fornication; *but* she *will* not *repent.* Behold, I
will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery
with her, into great *affliction, unless* they repent of *her*
23 *works.* And I will kill her children with death; and
all the Churches shall know that I am he *who* searcheth
the reins and hearts; and I will give *you, every one,*
24 according to your works. But *I say to you,* . . the rest
that are at Thyatira, As many as *do not hold* this doctrine,
. . *who* have not known the depths of Satan, as they
25 speak, I will *lay upon* you *no* other burden. But *what*
26 ye have . . , hold fast till I come. And he that over-
cometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him
27 will I give power over the nations, (And he shall rule
them with a rod of iron; *they shall be dashed in pieces*
like a potter's vessel) . . as I *also have* received *from* my
28 Father. And I will give him the morning star. He
that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith *to*
the Churches.

3 And *to* the angel of the Church *at* Sardis write, These
things saith he that hath the seven spirits of God, and
the seven stars, I know thy works, that thou hast a

2 name that thou livest, *but* art dead. Be watchful, and
strengthen the things which remain, *which* are ready to
die; for I have not found thy works *complete* before *my*
3 God. Remember therefore how thou hast received and
heard, and hold fast, and repent. If . . thou . . watch
not I will come as a thief, and thou shalt not know *at*
4 what hour I will come upon thee. *Yet* thou hast a few
names in Sardis, who have not defiled their garments;
and they shall walk with me in white: . . they are
5 worthy. He that overcometh, *he* shall be clothed in
white raiment; and I will not blot his name out of the
book of life, *and* I will confess his name, before my
6 Father and before his angels. He that hath an ear,
let him hear what the Spirit saith *to* the Churches.
7 And to the angel of the Church *at* Philadelphia write,
These things saith *the Holy One, the True One,* he that
hath the key of David, he that openeth, and *none*
8 shutteth, and shutteth, and *none* openeth: I know thy
works, (behold, I have *given* before thee an opened door,
. . *none* can shut it) *that* thou hast a little strength, and
hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.
9 Behold, I *bring* them of the synagogue of Satan, *who* say
they are Jews, and are not, but . . lie; behold, I will
make them . . come and *bow down* before thy feet, and
10 . . know that I have loved thee: Because thou hast
kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from
the hour of temptation, which shall come upon *the whole*
11 world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. I come
quickly. Hold . . fast what thou hast, that *none* take
12 thy crown. He that overcometh, *I will make him* a
pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go *out no
more:* and I will write upon him the name of my God
and the name of the city of my God, . . *the* New
Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my
13 God, and . . my new name. He that hath an ear, let
him hear what the Spirit saith *to* the Churches.
14 And to the angel of the Church *at Laodicea* write,
These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true
15 witness, the beginning of the creation of God. I know
thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot; *O that*
16 thou wert cold or hot! So . . because thou art luke-
warm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of
17 my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and *have
enriched myself,* and have need of nothing, and knowest
not that thou art wretched, and *pitiable,* and poor, and
18 blind, and naked, I counsel thee to buy of me gold
purified in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white
raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and . . the shame
of thy nakedness *may* not appear: and *eye salve to anoint*

19 *thine eyes*, that thou mayest see. *Whomsoever* I love, I
20 rebuke and chasten: be zealous and repent. Behold,
I stand at the door and knock: if any man hear my
voice and open the door, I will come in to him, and . .
21 sup with him, and he with me. *He* that overcometh, I
will *give him* to sit with me on my throne, as I also have
overcome, and . . sat down with my Father *on* his
22 throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the
Spirit saith *to* the Churches.

4 After *these things I saw*, and behold, a door . . opened
in heaven, and the first voice which I had heard, . . as
. . of a trumpet talking with me, . . said, Come up
hither, and I will show thee things which must be here-
2 after. And immediately I was in the Spirit, and behold a
throne was set in heaven, and one *sitting* on the throne.
3 And he that sat was *in appearance* like a jasper and a sar-
dine stone; and *a rainbow was* round about the throne, in
4 *appearance* like . . an emerald. And round about the
throne *are* four and twenty *thrones*, and *on* the *thrones* . .
four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment,
5 and . . *upon* their heads crowns of gold. And out of
the throne *go forth* lightnings, and *voices, and thunders*,
and . . seven lamps of fire *burn* before the throne, which
6 are the seven spirits of God. And before the throne *is* a
sea *as* of glass, like . . crystal; and in the midst of the
throne and round about the throne . . four *living crea-*
7 *tures*, full of eyes before and behind. And the first
living creature is like a lion, and the second *living creature*
is like a calf, and the third *living creature hath* a face as a
8 man, and the fourth *is* like a flying eagle. And the four
living creatures hath each of them six wings; *round about*
. . and *within they are* full of eyes: and they rest not
day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy *is* the Lord God,
9 *the* Almighty, *who* was, and *who* is, and *who cometh*. And
when *the living creatures* give glory, and honour, and
thanks to him that *sitteth upon* the throne, *that* liveth
10 for ever and ever, The four and twenty elders fall down
before him that *sitteth upon* the throne, and worship
him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns
11 before the throne, saying, *Worthy art thou*, O Lord *our*
God, to receive *the* glory, and *the* honour, and *the* power:
for thou hast created all things, and *through* thy *will*
they *were*, and *are* created.

5 And I saw in the right hand of him that sat *upon* the
throne a book written within and *without*, sealed with
2 seven seals. And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a
loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose

3 the seals thereof? And *none* in heaven, *or* in earth,
neither under the earth, was able to open the book
4 neither to look thereon. And I wept much *that* none
was found worthy to open . . the book, neither to look
5 thereon. And one of the elders saith *to* me, Weep not;
behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David,
hath prevailed to open the book and . . the . . seals
6 thereof. And I beheld, . . in the midst of the throne,
and of the four *living creatures*, and in the midst of the
elders, *a Lamb standing* as *if he had been* slain, having
seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits
7 of God, sent forth into all the earth. And he came and
took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon
8 the throne. And when he *took* the book, the four *living*
creatures and *the* four and twenty elders fell down before
the Lamb, having every one . . *a harp*, and golden phials
full of *incense*, which are the prayers of *the* saints.
9 And they *sing* a new song, saying, *Worthy art thou* to
take the book, and to open the seals thereof; for thou
wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood
out of every *tribe*, and tongue, and people, and nation,
10 And hast made *them* unto our God kings and priests, and
11 *they* shall reign *over* the earth. And I *saw* and . . heard
a voice of many angels, round about the throne, and the
living creatures and the elders; and the number of them
was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of
12 thousands, Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb
that was slain to receive *the* power, and riches, and
wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and
13 blessing. And every creature which is in *the* heaven,
and on the earth, and under the earth, and . . *on* the
sea, and all that are in them, *I heard them all* saying, *To*
him that sitteth on the throne, and to the Lamb, is the
blessing, and the honour, and the glory, and the strength,
14 for ever and ever. And the four *living creatures* said,
Amen: and the . . elders fell down and worshipped . . .

6 And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the *seven*
seals, and I heard *one of the four living creatures saying*
2 *as the voice of thunder*, Come and see. And I saw, and
behold a white horse, and he that sat on him had a
bow, and a crown was given . . him, and he went forth
conquering and to conquer.
3 And when he . . opened the second seal, I heard the
4 second *living creature saying*, Come . . . And there went
forth another horse that was red; *and to him that sat*
thereon it was given . . to take peace from the earth, . .
that they should kill one another; and there was given
. . him a great sword.

5 And when he . . opened the third seal, I heard the
third *living creature* say, Come . . . And I *saw*, and *behold*
a black horse, and he that sat on him had a pair of
6 *scales* in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of
the four *living creatures* saying, A measure of wheat for a
penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and
. . hurt not the oil and the wine.
7 And when he . . opened the fourth seal, I heard the
8 voice of the fourth *living creature saying*, Come . . . And
I *saw*, and behold a pale horse, and *he that sat on him*,
his name is Death, (and *Hades followeth even* with him)
and power was given . . *him* over the fourth part of the
earth, to kill with the *scimetar*, and with *famine*, and
with death, and *by* the *wild* beasts of the earth.
9 And when he . . opened the fifth seal, I saw under
the altar the souls of them that *had been* slain for the
word of God, and for the testimony which they held:
10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O
Lord, *thou* Holy *One* and true, dost thou not judge and
avenge our blood upon them that dwell *upon* the earth?
11 And *there was given to them, to every one, a white robe:*
and it was said *to* them, that they should rest yet for a
time, till their fellow servants also and their brethren
should be fulfilled who should be killed even as they were.
12 And I *saw* when he . . opened the sixth seal, and . .
there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black
as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;
13 And the stars of heaven fell *to* the earth, . . as a fig tree
casteth *its* untimely figs, when *it* is shaken *by* a mighty
14 wind: And the *heavens* departed as a *book that* is rolled
together, and every mountain and island were moved
15 out of their places. And the kings of the earth, and the
great men, and the *chief captains, and the rich* and the
mighty . . , and every *slave*, and every free man, hid
themselves in the *caves*, and in the rocks of the moun-
16 tains: And said to the mountains and *to the* rocks, Fall
on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on
17 the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb; For the
great day of his wrath is come; and who *is* able to stand?

7 And after these things I saw four angels standing on
the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds . . ,
that the wind should not blow upon the earth, nor on
2 the sea, nor on any tree. And I saw another angel
ascending from the *rising of the sun*, having the seal of
the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the
four angels to whom it was given to hurt the earth and
3 the sea, Saying, Hurt *ye* not the earth, neither the sea,
neither the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our

4 God *on* their foreheads. And I heard the number of
them *that* were sealed; *a hundred forty-four thousand*
were sealed out of all the tribes of the children of Israel.
5 Of the tribe of Judah were sealed twelve thousand; of
the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand; of the
6 tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand; Of the tribe
of Asher were sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of
Naphtali were sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of
7 Manasseh were sealed twelve thousand; Of the tribe of
Simeon were sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of Levi
were sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of Issachar
8 were sealed twelve thousand; Of the tribe of Zebulon
were sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of Joseph were
sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of Benjamin were
sealed twelve thousand.
9 After *these things* I *saw*, and *behold* a great multitude,
which no man could number, of all nations, and *tribes*,
and people, and tongues, *standing* before the throne, and
before the Lamb, clothed with white robes and palms in
10 their hands. And *they cry* with a loud voice, saying,
Salvation to our God *who* sitteth *on* the throne, and *to*
11 the Lamb. And all the angels stood round about the
throne, and . . the elders, and the four *living creatures;*
and *they* fell before the throne on their faces, and wor-
12 shipped God, Saying, Amen: *the* blessing, and *the* glory,
and *the* wisdom, and *the* thanksgiving, and *the* honour,
and *the* power, and *the strength*, be *to* our God for ever
13 and ever. . . And one of the elders answered, saying *to*
me, *Who* are these *that* are *clothed* in white robes? and
14 whence *are* they *come?* And I said to him, *My lord*,
thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they *who*
come out of great *affliction*, and they have washed their
robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.
15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve
him day and night in his temple, and he that sitteth
16 *upon* the throne shall *have his tent over* them: They shall
hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall
17 the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb
who is in the midst of the throne *will* feed them, and *will*
lead them *to* living fountains of *water:* and God will wipe
away all tears from their eyes.

8 And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was
silence in heaven about . . half an hour. And I saw
2 the seven angels *who* stood before God, and *seven trumpets*
3 *were given them.* And another angel came and stood at
the altar, having a golden censer; and *much incense was*
given . . him, that he *might place* it with the prayers of
all the saints upon the golden altar which is before the

4 throne. And the smoke of the incense . . *ascended* . .
before God out of the angel's hand with the prayers of the
5 *saints*. And the angel took the censer and filled it with
the fire of the altar, and *threw* it *upon* the earth, and
there were *thunderings, and lightnings, and voices,* and
an earthquake.
6 And the seven angels, *who* had the seven trumpets,
7 prepared themselves to sound. *And* the first . .
sounded, and there *was* hail, and fire mingled with
blood, and they were cast upon the earth, *and the third*
part of the earth was burnt up, and the third part of the
trees was burnt up, and all the green grass was burnt up.
8 And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great
mountain, burning with fire, was cast into the sea; and
9 the third part of the sea became blood. And the third
part of the creatures *that* were in the sea, *which* had life,
died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.
10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell *from heaven*
a great star, burning as . . a *torch,* and it fell *on* the
third part of the river, and *on* the fountains of waters.
11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood, and
the third part of the waters became wormwood, and
many men died of the waters, because they were made
12 bitter. And the fourth angel sounded, and the third
part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the
moon, and the third part of the stars, so *that* the third
part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for
the third part *thereof,* and the night likewise.
13 And I *saw* and heard an angel flying *in* the midst of
heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo to the
inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the other voices of
the *trumpets* of the three angels, who are yet to sound.

9 And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star *falling*
from heaven to the earth, and to him was given the key
2 of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless
pit, and there *ascended* a smoke out of the pit, as the
smoke of a great furnace, and the sun and the air were
3 darkened by . . the smoke of the pit. And *out of the*
smoke there came forth locusts upon the earth, and *power*
was given . . them, as the scorpions of the earth have
4 power: And it was commanded them, *not to* hurt the grass
of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but
only *the* men *who* have not the seal of God *on* their fore-
5 heads. And *it was given . . them,* not *to* kill them, but
that they should be tormented five months; and the
torment of them *is* as the torment of a scorpion, when he
6 *stingeth* a man. And in those days the *men shall* seek
death, *but* . . not find it; and shall desire to die, *but*

7 death *will* flee from them. And the *appearances* of the
locusts *are* like . . horses *made ready for* battle, and on
their heads *are* as it were crowns like gold, and their
8 faces *are* as the faces of men. And they had hair as
the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of
9 lions. And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates
of iron, and the *noise* of their wings was as the *noise* of
10 chariots of many horses running to battle. And they
have tails like . . scorpions, and . . *stings were* in their
11 tails; their power *is* to hurt men five months. And
they *have over them a king*, . . the angel of the bottom-
less pit; *his* name in the Hebrew . . is Abaddon, but
12 in the Greek . . *he* hath *the* name Apollyon. One wo
is past; *behold there come yet* two woes *after these things.*
13 And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice
from the four *corners* of the golden altar which is before
14 God, Saying to the sixth angel, *who* had the trumpet,
Loose the four angels *who* are bound in the great river
15 Euphrates. And the four angels were loosed, *who* were
prepared for *the* hour, and . . day, and . . month, and
16 . . year, . . to *kill* the third part of men. And the
number of the army of . . horsemen *was* two hundred
17 *millions;* I heard *their number.* And thus I saw the
horses in the vision and them that sat on them, having
breastplates of fire, and *hyacinth,* and brimstone: and
the heads of the horses *are* as the heads of lions, and out
of their mouths *goeth* fire, and smoke, and brimstone.
18 By these three *plagues were* the third part of men killed,
by the fire, and . . the smoke, and . . the brimstone,
19 which *went* out of their mouths. For *the* power *of the*
horses is in their mouths and in their tails: for their tails
are like serpents . . *having* heads, and with them they
20 do hurt. And the rest of the men, *who* were not killed
by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their
hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of
gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and . . wood,
21 which can neither see, nor hear, nor walk: Neither
repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries,
nor of their fornications, nor of their thefts.

10 And I saw another mighty angel *coming* down from
heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow . . upon
his head, and his face . . as . . the sun, and his feet as
2 pillars of fire. And he had in his hand a little book
opened; and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his
3 left . . *upon* the earth. And *he* cried with a loud voice,
as . . a lion roareth; and *while* he . . cried seven thunders
4 uttered their voices. And when the seven thunders had
uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard

a voice from heaven, saying . . , Seal up *the* things which
the seven thunders *have* uttered, and write them not.
5 And the angel *whom* I saw *standing* upon the sea and
upon the earth, lifted up his *right* hand *toward* heaven,
6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who
created *the* heaven, and the things that *are therein;* and
the earth, and the things that *are therein;* and the sea,
and the things *that* are therein, . . There *shall* be *no*
7 *more a time.* But in the days of the voice of the seventh
angel, *while* he shall . . sound, the mystery of God *shall*
be *fulfilled,* as he hath declared to his servants the
prophets.
8 And the voice which I heard from heaven spake *with*
me again, and said, Go, . . take the . . book which is
open in the hand of the angel, *who* standeth *on* the sea
9 and *on* the earth. And I went *to* the angel, . . *saying to*
him, Give me the . . book. And he *saith to* me, Take
. . and eat it up, and it *will* make thy belly bitter,
10 but it *will* be *sweet as honey in thy mouth.* And I took
the . . book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up, and
it was in my mouth sweet as honey, *but when* I had eaten
11 it my belly was bitter. And he *saith to* me, Thou must
prophesy again *concerning the people,* and nations, and
tongues, and *many* kings.

11 And there was given me a reed, like . . a *measuring*
rod; and *he* . . *said, Arise,* and measure the temple
of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.
2 But the court which is without the temple *cast* out, and
measure it not: for it is given *to* the Gentiles; and they
3 shall tread the holy city *forty-two* months. And I will
give . . *to* my two witnesses *to* prophesy *twelve hundred*
4 *and sixty* days, clothed in sackcloth. These are the
two olive trees and the two candlesticks, standing before
5 the *Lord* of the earth. And if any *one would* hurt them,
fire proceedeth out of their *mouths,* and devoureth their
enemies; and if any . . *would kill* them, he must *thus*
6 be killed. These have power to shut heaven, that it
rain not in the days of their *prophesying,* and have power
over the waters, to turn them *into* blood, and to smite
7 the earth with all plagues as often as they will. And
when they shall have finished their testimony, the *wild*
beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall
make war *with* them, and *conquer* them, and kill them.
8 And their dead bodies shall *be* in the street of the great
city, which *is called spiritually* Sodom and Egypt, where
9 also *their* Lord was crucified. And *some* of the *people,*
and *tribes,* and tongues, and nations, *beheld* their dead
bodies three days and a half, and *they* shall not suffer

10 their dead bodies to be put in *a grave.* And they that
dwell upon the earth . . rejoice over them, and *they*
shall make merry and send gifts to one another; because
these two prophets tormented them that dwelt *upon*
11 the earth. And after *the* three days and *a* half, the
Spirit of life from God *came* into them, and they stood
upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them *that* saw
12 them. And *I* heard a great voice *saying from heaven to*
them, Come up hither. And they *went* up to heaven in
a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.
13 And *in that* hour there was a great earthquake, and
the tenth part of the city fell, and there *were slain in*
the earthquake seven thousand men, and the *rest* were
14 *terrified,* and gave glory to the God of heaven. The
second wo is past: . . behold, the third wo cometh
quickly.
15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great
voices in heaven, saying, The *kingdom* of *the* world *is*
become the *kingdom* of our Lord and of his Christ, and
16 he shall reign for ever and ever. And the four and
twenty elders, *who* sat before God on their *thrones,*
17 fell on their faces and worshipped God, Saying, We give
thee thanks, O Lord God, *the* Almighty, *who is,* and *who*
was, . . because thou hast taken . . thy great power,
and hast reigned.
18 And the nations were *wroth;* and thy wrath is come,
and the time of the dead, that they . . be judged, and
to give *a* reward *to* thy servants the prophets, and . .
the saints, *and* to them that fear thy name, small and
great, and *to* destroy them *that destroyed* the earth.
19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and
the ark of the covenant was seen in the temple, and there
were lightnings and voices, and *thunders,* and an earth-
quake, and great hail.

12 And *a great sign was seen* in heaven, a woman
clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet,
2 and *on* her head a crown of twelve stars. And *being*
with child, she crieth, travailing in birth, and pained to
3 be delivered. And *another sign was seen* in heaven; and
behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten
4 horns, and seven *diadems on* his head. And his tail
draweth the third part of the stars of heaven, and *casteth*
them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the
woman *who* was ready to be delivered, *that when she*
5 *had brought forth, he might devour the child.* And she
brought forth a man child, who was to rule all *the*
nations with a rod of iron; and her child was caught up
6 *to* God and to his throne. And the woman fled into the

wilderness, where she hath a place prepared *by* God,
that they *may* feed her there *twelve hundred* and *sixty*
days.
7 And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels
warred with the dragon, and the dragon *warred* and his
8 angels: *But he* prevailed not, neither was *his* place
9 found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was
cast out, *the ancient* serpent *who is* called the devil and
Satan, *who* deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out
unto the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.
10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is
come *the* salvation, and *the might*, and the kingdom of
our God, and the power of his Christ, for the accuser of
our brethren is cast *out*, *who* accused them before our
11 God day and night. And they *have overcome* him by
the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their
testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the
12 death. Therefore rejoice ye heavens, and ye that dwell
in them: Wo to the . . earth and . . the sea; for the
devil is come down *to* you having great wrath; because
he knoweth . . he hath but a *little* time.
13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast *to* the earth,
he persecuted the woman *that had* brought forth the
14 *male* child. And *there were given to the woman the* two
wings of *the* great eagle, that she might fly into the
wilderness *to* her place, where she is *fed* for a time, and
times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.
15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth *after the woman*,
water, *as a river*, that he might cause her to be carried
16 away *by* the *stream*. *But* the earth helped the woman,
and . . opened her mouth, and swallowed up the *river*
17 which the dragon *had* cast out of his mouth. And the
dragon was wroth with the woman and went *forth* to
make war with the *rest* of her seed, *who* keep the com-
mandments of GOD, and *retain* the testimony of
Jesus . . .

13 And I stood *on* the sand of the sea, and saw a
wild beast *coming* up out of the sea, having seven
heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten *diadems*,
2 and upon his heads *a* name of blasphemy. And the
wild beast which I saw was like . . a leopard, and his
feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the
mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power,
3 and his *throne*, and great authority. And I saw one
of his heads as it were wounded to death, and his deadly
wound was healed; and *the whole earth* wondered after
4 the *wild* beast, And . . worshipped the dragon, *because*
he gave *the authority to* the *wild* beast; and . . wor-

shipped the *wild* beast, saying, Who is like . . the *wild*
5 beast; *and* who *can* . . war with him? And there was
given him a mouth speaking great things and *blasphemy;*
and *authority* was given . . him . . forty and two
6 months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against
God, to blaspheme his name and his tabernacle, *even*
7 them that dwell in heaven. And it was given . . him
to make war with the saints, and to overcome them,
and *authority* was given him over *every tribe,* and *people,*
8 *and tongue,* and *nation.* And all that dwell upon the
earth *will* worship him, whose *name is* not written in
the book of life of the Lamb, *who was* slain from the
9 foundation of the world. If any man have an ear, let
10 him hear. *If any* leadeth into captivity, *he goeth* into
captivity; *if any man kill* with the sword, *he* must be
killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the
faithfulness of the saints.
11 And I *saw* another *wild* beast coming up out of the
earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, *but* he spake
12 *like* a dragon: And he exerciseth all the *authority* of the
first *wild* beast before him; and *he* causeth the earth,
and them *that* dwell therein, to worship the first *wild*
13 beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doth
great wonders, so that he *even* maketh fire *to* come down
14 *out of* heaven *to* the earth in the sight of men. And *he*
deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the . .
wonders which *it is given him* to do *before* the *wild* beast:
saying to them that dwell on the earth, *to* make an image
to the *wild* beast which had the wound by *the* sword,
15 and *yet lived.* And *it was given him* to give *breath to* the
image of the *wild* beast: *so* that the image of the *wild*
beast should . . speak: and *he will* cause that as many
as *will* not worship the image of the wild beast *shall* be
16 killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, both
rich and poor, *both* free and *slaves,* to receive a mark *on*
17 the right hand or *on the forehead;* . . That no man
might buy or sell but he that had the mark, the name of
18 the *wild* beast, or the number of his name. Here is *the*
wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the
number of the *wild* beast: for it is the number of a man:
and his number is six hundred *sixty*-six.

14 And I looked, and *behold the* Lamb *standing* on . .
Mount Sion, and with him *a* hundred forty . . -four
thousand, having *his name and the name of his Father*
2 written *on* their foreheads. And I heard a *sound out of*
heaven, as *a sound* of many waters, and as a *sound* of a
great thunder; *and the sound which I heard was as* of
3 harpers harping *on* their harps. And they *sing* . . a

new song before the throne, and before the four *living creatures,* and the elders: and *none* could learn *the* song but the hundred . . forty . . -four thousand, *who* were
4 redeemed from the earth. These are they *who had* not *been* defiled with women; for they are virgins: these are they *who* follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men: . . first fruits
5 *to* God and . . the Lamb. And in their mouth there was found no guile: . . they are without fault . . .
6 And I saw another angel *flying* in the midst of heaven, having *an* everlasting Gospel to preach *to* them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and *tribe,* and
7 tongue, and people. Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made *the* heaven, and *the* earth, and the sea, and . . fountains of *water.*
8 And *another angel . . followed,* saying, Babylon *the great . . is fallen, is fallen; . .* she that *hath* made all nations drink of the wine . . of her fornication.
9 And *a* third angel followed them; saying with a loud voice, If any *one* worship the *wild* beast and his image,
10 and receive his mark *on* his forehead or *on* his hand, *He* shall *also* drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured . . *unmixed* into the cup of his indignation, and . . shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the . . angels, and in the presence of the
11 Lamb. And the smoke of their torment ascendeth . . for ever and ever, and they have no rest day or night, who worshipped the *wild* beast and his image, and who-
12 soever receiveth the mark of his name. Here is the patience of the saints, . . *who* keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.
13 And I heard a voice *out of* heaven, saying . . , Write: *From henceforth happy are the dead who die in the Lord:* Yea, (saith the Spirit) that they may rest from their labours. . . Their works . . follow them.
14 And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and *on* the cloud one *sitting* like . . *a* son of man, having *a golden*
15 *crown on his head,* and *a sharp sickle in his hand.* And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle and reap; for the time . . *to reap is come:* for
16 the harvest of the earth is ripe. And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle *upon* the earth, and the earth was reaped.
17 And another angel came out of the temple which is
18 in heaven; *and* he also *had* a sharp sickle. And another angel came out from the altar, *who* had power over fire, and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp

sickle, saying, Thrust in thy . . sickle, and *lop off* the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully
19 ripe. And the angel thrust in his sickle *upon* the earth, and *lopped off* the vine of the earth, and cast it into the
20 great wine press of the wrath of God. And the wine press was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the wine press, even *to* the *horses'* bridles, . . *one* thousand six hundred furlongs.

15 And I saw another sign in heaven great and *wonderful,* seven angels having the seven last plagues: for
2 *by* them *the wrath of God is fulfilled.* And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire, and them that *gained* the victory over the *wild* beast, and over his image, . . and over the number of his name, *standing*
3 *at* the sea of glass, *and* having the harps of God. And they sing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and *wonderful* are thy works, Lord God Almighty; *righteous* and true are
4 thy ways, *O* King of *the nations!* Who *would* not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? For thou only art *gracious:* for all *the* nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest.
5 And after *these things* I looked, and . . the temple of
6 the tabernacle of the testimony *was open in heaven:* And the seven angels *that had the seven plagues came out of the temple* clothed in pure . . , white linen, and having
7 their breasts *girt* with golden girdles. And one of the four *living creatures* gave . . the seven angels seven golden phials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for
8 ever . . . And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power: and *none could go* into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

16 And I heard a *loud* voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go . . pour out the *seven* phials
2 of the wrath of God upon the earth. And the first went and poured out his phial upon the earth, and there *came* a . . grievous *ulcer* on the men *that* had the mark of the *wild* beast, and . . that worshipped his image.
3 And the second poured out his phial upon the sea, and it became *blood,* as the blood of a dead man, and every
4 living soul *in the sea died.* And the third . . poured out his phial on the rivers and fountains of *water,* and
5 they became blood. And I heard the angel of the waters *saying, Righteous art thou who art, and who wast,*

6 *the Gracious One;* because thou hast judged thus. For
they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and
thou hast given them blood to drink. . . They are
7 worthy. And I heard another *from* the altar, *saying,*
Yea, Lord God Almighty; true and righteous are thy
8 judgments. And the fourth . . poured out his phial
upon the sun; and *it* was given . . him to scorch *the*
9 men with fire. And *the* men were scorched *exceedingly,*
and blasphemed the name of God, *who had* power over
these plagues: *but* they repented not to give him glory.
10 And the fifth . . poured out his phial upon the *throne*
of the *wild* beast: and his kingdom was *darkened.* And
11 they gnawed their tongues for pain, and blasphemed the
God of heaven, because of their pains, and *because of*
12 *their ulcers,* and repented not of their *works.* And the
sixth . . poured out his phial upon the great river
Euphrates, and the water *of it* was dried up, that the
13 way of the kings *from* the east might be prepared. And
I saw *out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth*
of the wild beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet,
14 *three unclean spirits like frogs, go forth,* . . (They are
spirits of devils, working miracles) . . *to* the kings . .
of the whole world, to gather them *unto* the battle of
15 *the* great day of GOD, *the* Almighty. (Behold, I come as
a thief. *Happy* is he that watcheth and keepeth his
garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.)
16 And *they* gathered them together *to the* place *which is*
17 called in the Hebrew . . Armageddon. And the
seventh poured out his phial *upon* the air, and there
went forth a *loud* voice out of the temple . . from the
18 throne, saying, It is done. And there *were lightnings,*
and voices, and thunders, and . . a great earthquake;
such as *had not been* since men were upon the earth,
19 *such* an earthquake . . so great. And the great city
was *split* into three parts, and the cities of the nations
fell, and *Babylon the Great was remembered* before GOD,
to give . . her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of
20 his wrath. And every island fled away, and the moun-
21 tains were not found. And *a great hail, every hailstone*
about the weight of a talent, falleth out of heaven upon the
men, and *the* men blasphemed GOD, because of the
plague of the hail; for the plague thereof *is* exceeding
great.

17 And there came one of the seven angels *who* had
the seven phials, and talked with me, saying . . ,
Come hither, I will show . . thee the judgment of the
2 great whore, that sitteth upon many waters: With
whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication,

and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk
3 with the wine of her fornication. *And* he carried me
away in the Spirit, into *a* wilderness, and I saw a woman
sitting upon a scarlet . . *wild* beast, full of names of
4 blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And
the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet . . , and
adorned with gold, and precious stones, and pearls,
having *in her hand a golden cup,* full of *abomination* and
5 filthiness of her fornication: And *on* her forehead, . .
a name written, Mystery; Babylon the great, the
6 mother of harlots, and abominations of the earth. And
I saw the woman *drunk* with the blood of the saints,
and with the blood of the *witnesses* of Jesus. And when
I saw . . , I wondered *exceedingly.*
7 And the angel said *to* me, Wherefore didst thou
wonder? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman,
and of the *wild* beast that *carrieth* her, which hath the
8 seven heads and *the* ten horns. The *wild* beast *which*
thou sawest was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the
bottomless pit, and go into perdition; and they that
dwell on the earth, (*whose names are not written in the
book of life from the foundation of the world*) *shall wonder*
when they behold the *wild* beast, that *he* was, and is
9 not, and yet *will be.* . . Here is the mind *that* hath
wisdom. The seven heads are seven *hills,* on which
10 the woman sitteth, And *they* are seven kings; five are
fallen: . . one is, . . the other is not yet come; . . when
11 he cometh, he must continue a short space. And the
wild beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth,
12 and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. And the
ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, *who* have
not received the kingdom . . , but receive *authority* as
13 kings one hour with the *wild* beast. These have one
mind, and . . give their power and *authority to* the *wild*
14 beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the
Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and
King of kings; and they that are with him are called,
and chosen, and faithful.
15 And he saith *to* me, The waters which thou sawest
where the whore sitteth, are *people,* and multitudes, and
16 nations, and tongues, And the ten horns which thou
sawest, *and* the *wild* beast, these shall hate the whore,
and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat
17 her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put *it
into* their hearts, to *execute* his *sentence,* and to agree,
and *to* give their kingdom *to* the *wild* beast, *till* the words
18 of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman *whom* thou
sawest is *the* great city, which reigned over the kings
of the earth.

18 And after these things I saw another angel *coming* down *out of* heaven, having great power, and the earth
2 was *enlightened* with his glory. And he cried mightily with a *loud* voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become *a* habitation of devils, and *a* hold of every *unclean* spirit, and a cage of every unclean and
3 hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine . . of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich, through the abundance of her delicacies.
4 And I heard another voice *out of* heaven saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her
5 sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached *even to* heaven, and God hath remem-
6 bered her iniquities. Reward her even as she *hath rewarded*, . . and *give* . . her double according to her works: in the cup which she . . *mingled*, *mingle* to her
7 double. *As* much *as* she hath glorified herself and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: *because* she *hath said* in her heart, I sit *as* a queen, and
8 am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and *sorrow*, and famine; and she shall be . . burnt with fire; for strong
9 is the Lord God who judgeth her. And the kings of the earth, who *had* committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall *weep* . . and *mourn over* her,
10 when they see the smoke of her burning, Standing afar off for fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas! *Thou* great city Babylon, *thou strong* city! . . In one hour is thy
11 judgment come. And the merchants of the earth . . weep and mourn over her; for *none* buyeth their mer-
12 chandise any more: . . Merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious *stone*, and . . *pearl*, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all *sorts of* thyine wood, and all *sorts of* vessels of ivory, and all *sorts of* vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble;
13 And cinnamon, *and amomum*, and odours, and ointment, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep; and *merchandise of* horses,
14 and *of* chariots, and *of bodies* and souls of men. And the fruits *which* thy soul *desireth* are departed from thee, and all things *that* were dainty and *splendid* are *perished*
15 from thee, and thou shalt find them no more . . . The merchants of these things, *who became* rich by her, shall stand afar off, for . . fear of her torment, weeping and
16 *mourning*, . . Saying, Alas, alas! *The* great city that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and
17 *adorned* with gold, and precious *stone*, and *pearl:* in one hour so great riches *are become desolate.* And every ship-

master, and all the company *belonging to* ships, and
18 sailors, and *all who* trade by sea, stood afar off, And
cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying,
19 What city was like . . *the* great city? And they cast
dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and *mourning*,
saying, Alas, alas! The great city, wherein were made
rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her
magnificence, for in one hour *she is* made desolate.
20 Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye *saints, and* apos-
tles, and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her.
21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great mill
stone, and *threw* it into the sea, saying, Thus with
violence shall *Babylon, the great city*, be thrown down,
22 and shall be found no more at all. And the voice of
harpers, and musicians, and . . pipers, and trumpeters,
shall be heard no more at all in thee, and no *artificer* of
any kind . . shall be found any more in thee, and the
sound of a mill stone shall be heard no more at all in
23 thee. And the light of a candle shall shine no more at
all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and . . the
bride shall be heard no more . . in thee: for thy mer-
chants were the great men of the earth: for by thy
24 sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was
found the blood of prophets, and . . saints, and of all
that *had been* slain upon the earth.

19 . . After these things I heard a *loud* voice of *a great multitude* in heaven, saying, Hallelujah! *The* salvation, and *the* glory, . . and *the* power *to* . . our God.
2 For true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath
judged the great whore, *who corrupted* the earth with her
fornications, and hath avenged the blood of his servants
3 at her hand. (And again they said, Hallelujah) and
4 her smoke *ascended* for ever and ever. And the four
and twenty elders, and the four *living creatures*, fell
down, and worshipped God that sat on the throne,
5 saying, Amen, Hallelujah. And a voice came *forth from*
the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants,
6 and ye that fear him, . . small and great. And I heard,
as it were, a voice of a great multitude, and as *a* voice of
many waters, and as *a* voice of mighty *thunders*, saying,
Hallelujah: for the Lord God, *the Almighty*, reigneth.
7 Let us be glad, and rejoice, and give *the glory* to him;
for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath
8 made herself ready. And *it was given to her to* be arrayed
in fine linen, *white and clean:* . . the fine linen is the
righteousness of *the* saints.
9 And he saith *to* me, Write: *Happy* are they *who* are
invited to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he

10 saith *to* me, These are the true sayings of God. And I
fell *before* his feet to worship him; but he *saith to* me,
See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant, and of thy
brethren that *keep* the testimony of Jesus. Worship
God. . . The testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy.
11 And I saw the heaven opened, and behold a white
horse, and he that *sitteth on* him, . . called Faithful and
True: and in righteousness he *judgeth* and *maketh* war.
12 His eyes *are* . . a flame of fire, and *upon* his head *are*
many *diadems;* and he *hath* a name written, *which none*
13 *knoweth* but . . himself. And he *is* clothed in a vesture
dipt in blood, and his name is called, The Word of God.
14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him *on*
15 white horses, clothed in . . *clean fine linen.* And out of
his mouth goeth *forth* a sharp *two-edged* sword, that with
it he *might* smite the nations. And he shall rule them
with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the wine press of the
16 fierceness *of the* wrath of *God, the Almighty.* And he
hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written,
17 King of kings, and Lord of lords. And I saw an angel
standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice,
saying to all the *birds* that fly in the midst of heaven,
Come, and gather yourselves together *to* the *great supper*
18 *of* God: That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the
flesh of *chief* captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and
the flesh of horses, and of *those* that sit on them, and the
flesh of all men, both *freemen* and *slaves,* both small and
19 great. And I saw the *wild* beast, and the kings of the
earth and their armies gathered together, to make war
20 *with* him that sat on the horse and *with* his army. And
the *wild* beast was taken, and with him the false prophet,
who had wrought *the* miracles before him, with which he
had deceived them *who* had . . the mark of the *wild*
beast, and them *who had* worshipped his image. These
two were cast alive into *the* lake of fire burning with
21 brimstone. And the *rest* were slain *by* the sword of
him that sat upon the horse, which . . *went forth* out of
his mouth, and all the *birds* were *satisfied* with their flesh.

20 And I saw an angel *descending out of* heaven, having
the key of the bottomless pit, and a great chain in
2 his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, *the* old serpent,
who is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand
3 years. And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut
him up, and set a seal upon him, that he *might* deceive
the nations no more, till the thousand years should be
fulfilled. . . After *this* he must be loosed *for* a *small time.*
4 And I saw thrones, and they *that* sat on them, and
judgment was given *to* them: and I saw the souls of

them *who had been* beheaded for the *testimony* of Jesus, and for the word of God, and *those who* had not worshipped the *wild* beast *nor* his image, neither had received *the* mark *on* their *forehead* or *on* their *hand;* and they
5 lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. . . The rest of the dead lived not again *till* the thousand years
6 were *ended.* This is the first resurrection. *Happy* and holy is he that hath *a* part in the first resurrection: *over these* the second death hath no power; but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.
7 And when the thousand years are *fulfilled,* Satan shall
8 be loosed out of his prison. And shall go *forth* to deceive the nations, which are in the four *corners* of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle,
9 *whose number* is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and *surrounded* the camp of the saints, and the beloved city: and fire came
10 down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where *both* the *wild* beast and the false prophet are: and *they* shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.
11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat *thereon,* from whose face the earth and the heaven fled
12 away; and there was *no place found* for them. And I saw the dead, *great* and *small, standing* before *the throne;* and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of *the* things *that* were written in the books,
13 according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead *that* were *therein:* and death and *hades gave* up the dead *that* were in them, and they were judged every *one*
14 according to their works. And death and *hades* were
15 cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

21 And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away:
2 and there was no more sea. And I . . saw the holy city, *the* new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.
3 And I heard a *loud* voice out of heaven saying, Behold the tabernacle of God . . with men, and he will *pitch his tent* with them; and they shall be his people, and
4 God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And *he* shall wipe away all tears from their eyes, and *death shall be no more,* neither *shall* sorrow, or crying, . . *or*

pain be any more; *because* the former things are *gone*
5 away. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold,
I make all things new. And he *saith* to me, Write: . .
6 these *sayings* are *faithful* and *true.* And he said . . to
me, It is done. I am *the* Alpha and *the* Omega, the
beginning and the end. I will give *to* him that *thirsteth*
7 of the fountain of the water of life freely. He that
overcometh shall inherit *these* things; and I will be *to*
8 *him a* God, and he shall be *to me a* son. But the fearful,
and unbelieving, and . . abominable, and murderers,
and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all
liars, *their part is* in the lake *that* burneth with fire and
brimstone, which is the second death.
9 And there came . . one of the seven angels *that* had
the seven phials full of the seven last plagues, and talked
with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the bride,
10 the Lamb's wife. And he carried me away in the Spirit
to a great and high mountain, and showed me . . *the*
holy city Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,
11 Having the glory of God: . . her *window* was like . .
the most precious stone, . . like a jasper stone, clear as
12 crystal, . . *Having* a wall great and high, *having* twelve
gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and *the* names
written thereon, which are the names of the twelve
13 tribes of the children of Israel: On the east three gates,
and on the north three gates, *and* on the south three
14 gates, and on the west three gates. And the wall of the
city had twelve foundations, and *upon* them the names
15 of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. And he that talked
with me had *a measure,* a golden reed to measure the
16 city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. And
the city lieth four-square, and the length is as large as
the breadth. And he measured the city with the reed
twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth,
17 and the height of it, are equal. And he measured the
wall thereof, *a* hundred and forty . . -four *reeds,* . . the
18 measure of a man, that is, of *an* angel. And the building
of the wall *thereof* was . . jasper, and the city was *of*
19 pure gold, like . . clear glass. And the foundations of
the wall of the city were *adorned* with all manner of
precious stones. The first foundation was *a* jasper,
the second *a* sapphire, the third a chalcedony, the fourth
20 an emerald, The fifth *a* sardonyx, the sixth *a* sardius,
the seventh *a* chrysolite, the eighth *a* beryl, the ninth a
topaz, the tenth a chrysophrase, the eleventh a jacinth,
21 the twelfth an amethyst. And the twelve gates *were*
twelve pearls, *each of the gates* was of one pearl: and the
street of the city was pure gold, . . transparent *as*
22 glass. And I saw no temple therein: for the LORD GOD

23 Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. And the
city *hath* no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to
shine on it; for the glory of God *hath enlightened* it, and
24 the Lamb is the *lamp* thereof. And the nations . . shall
walk *by* the light *thereof*, and the kings of the earth . .
25 bring their glory . . into it. And the gates of it shall
not be shut . . by day: *and* there shall be no night
26 there. And they shall bring the glory and *the* honour
27 of the nations into it. *But* there shall in no wise enter
into it any thing *common, or that* worketh abomination,
or maketh a lie, but they *who* are written in the Lamb's
book of life.

22 And he showed me a . . river of *the* water of life,
clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God
2 and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and
on either side of the river, *is* . . the tree of life, *bearing*
twelve *sorts* of fruits, . . *yielding its* fruit every month:
and the leaves of the tree *are* for the healing of the
3 nations. And there shall be no more curse: but the
throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it: and his
4 servants shall *worship* him, And shall see his face, and
5 his name shall be *on* their foreheads. And there
shall be no night there, *neither is there need of a lamp, or
of the* light of the sun; for the Lord God *will enlighten*
them, and they shall reign for ever . . .
6 And he said to me, These sayings are faithful and true:
. . the Lord, *the* God of the *spirits of the* prophets, *hath*
sent his angel to show . . his servants the things which
7 must *be done shortly*. Behold I come quickly: *happy* is
he that keepeth the *words* of the prophecy of this book.
8 And *it was* I John *who heard and saw these things;* and
when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship *at*
9 the feet of the angel *who* showed me these things. *But*
he saith *to* me, See thou do it not; . . I am thy fellow
servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them
10 *who* keep the sayings of this book: worship God. And
he saith *to* me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of
11 this book: . . the time is *nigh*. He that is *unrighteous,*
let him be *unrighteous* still; and he *that* is filthy, let
him be filthy still; and he that is righteous, let him be
righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy
12 still. . . Behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with
me, to *render to* every *one* . . as his work shall be.
13 I am *the* Alpha and *the* Omega, the *first and the last, the
beginning and the end.*
14 *Happy* are they that do his commandments, that they
may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in *by*
15 the gates into the city. . . Without are dogs, and

sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and *every one that* loveth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus have sent *my* angel to testify *to* you, *to the Churches, these things.* I am the root and . . offspring
17 of David, . . the bright, *the* morning star. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that *thirsteth* come; . . *let him that willeth* take the water of life freely.
18 . . I testify *to* every *one* that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man . . add *to them,* GOD shall add *to* him the plagues that are written in
19 this book. And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, GOD shall take away his part . . of the *tree* of life, and . . the holy city, . . which are written in this book.
20 He *that* testifieth these things saith, *Yea,* I come quickly, Amen: . . Come, Lord Jesus.
21 The grace of *the* Lord Jesus . . be with . . all. . .